

異世界転生

君との
再会
まで

アニッキーブラッザー

長いこと

長いこと 2



Isekai Tensei – Kimi to no Saikai made
Nagai koto Nagai koto
vol.2

by Anikki Brother

[Novel Updates](#)

Translation Group: [Idle Translations](#)

Epub: [Trollo WN/LN EPUB](#)



Farga Elfarshia
フォルナの兄で、
人類最高峰の武人。
一見冷淡ながら根は熱い。

Esamu Kondou
世界最強と言われる
「四獅天巫人」の一人。
性格はどこまでも豪快。

Kamino Mina
リューマの同級生で、
彼がクラスに溶け込む
きっかけとなった。

Forna Elfarshia
ウェルトの幼なじみの王女。
勝ち気な性格だが、
思慮深い一面も。

Varnand Gabbana
巫人部隊「シンセン組」の
参謀を務める。
シャイで口ベタな好々爺。

Musashi Gabbana
おっちょこちょいな巫人剣士。
バルナンドの孫娘でもある。

Velt Jeeha
不良・朝倉リューマが転生した、
本編の主人公。ひねくれた性格
だが、周囲からは愛されている。

Ura Vesparda
リューマの同級生蛟鳥の娘で、
魔族のソントレお姫様。

主な登場人物

Prologue

I saw a nostalgic dream.

The moment I cut through the goal tape after receiving the baton and running faster than anyone, for the first time in my life, I received congratulatory cheers.

“You did it, Asakura!”

When I turned around from the goal, a classmate had run up to me. The person that had rushed at me first, was another member of the relay, Samejima.

“You really did it! Look, it’s a turnabout! It’s our overall victory! Our class won!” (Samejima)

Samejima is from the karate club, and everytime I come to school, they class requests him to hold me down if I act violently. The person himself has an honest personality, and often looked at my delinquent self with sharp eyes. However, today, in this moment, I was confused by seeing Samejima’s smiling face for the first time, and by the time I realized it, I had naturally taken out my hand, high fiving him.

“Oi oi, that’s seriously so cool, Asakura-kun!”

“That was splendid.”

Seeing my exchange with Samejima, the remaining two members of the relay were unable to hold in their excitement, and ran up to me.

“Well, I wondered what would happen at the start, and the girls in my fanclub might’ve cried if we lost. But you won, you’re amazing, Asakura-kun.”

Short, brown dyed hair and earrings. I’m pretty sure he’s Kagami from the basketball, that I recognized as a playboy.

“Yes, you splendidly did it, yes, it was splendid. It really was splendid.”

I’m pretty sure this guy was Miya something, who I could never tell what he

was talking about, is a poor talker, and is always hesitant.

I was surprised that someone like him was chosen for the relay, but probably because he's excited right now, his eyes are shining.

"Ah~, shut up. So annoying. You guys are being too noisy."

To be honest, I couldn't help but be embarrassed.

It's because it was my first time for someone to be happy over what I did, like this.

That's why my face naturally became hot.

Like, why am I doing something like this here.

Everything is that woman's fault.

That woman that suddenly made me a substitute member, since one of the regular relay members were injured.

"Uhohooooi! You did it, baby! Ah-Sah-Kuh-Ra-kun, that was great!"

Even though she's a woman, does she have no self-control? That stupid woman, in her male school uniform for cheerleading, danced weirdly on the stage while shouting her joy.

She is Kamino Mina.

Then, that stupid woman immediately jumped off the stage and ran up to me. In front of her, there was one schoolgirl with flashy eyes, blond hair in rolls, flashy fake fingernails and false eyelashes.

A gyaru-like gyaru no matter how you look at her.

"Bii-chan, I'm glad!" (Kamino)

"Uuu, uuuu, ueeeeeeeeen."

With a full smile, Kamino embraced that gyaru, and that gyaru cried without caring about public gaze.

You're makeup's going to fall you know? Is what I thought, but that woman cried as if she was a young child.

"Uu, I'm glad, I really am glad. Even though everyone worked so hard, if we didn't get overall victory because, higu, I, I fell over in the centipede race, really."

In the class girl centipede competition, she tripped and fell, making the class

get the lowest rank.

Even though she's a flashy gyaru and kept looking down, blaming herself, her tears didn't stop from the relief of being released from sadness.

If I remember correctly, she was Biyama, right? Or was she Bitchyama? Well, I'm not interested though.

"Asakura!" (Biyama)

"Uo." (Asakura)

"Um, really, seriously, I'm seriously thankful! Really, if you didn't do that, I, I."
(Biyama)

Before I realized it, Biyama had come right in front of me.

Calm down. Why are you swinging from joy and sorrow over something like an athletics festival.

Rather, if you're a gyaru, you don't have to get so serious about an event like this.

"Is that some kind of tribal makeup from somewhere?" (Asakura)

"Eh?" (Biyama)

"Your face is becoming something crazy." (Asakura)

Because of your makeup, your tears became black and your face is getting awful.

"Ah, no, no way, wai, ahhh geez, stop looking at me!" (Biyama)

Good grief, so stupid. Every single one of them are being so noisy.
In the first place, what's so good about winning an event like this.

"Hah haa, well~, Asakura-kun, you really are a shy, shy boy!" (Kamino)

Kamino comes and jumps onto my back from behind me.
You're way too close! Stop getting so friendly to me!

"Y, you, stop following me around! So annoying!" (Asakura)

"Hah haa, that's right! I am annoying! Annoying, and very lame!" (Kamino)

"Oi, I'll send you flying!" (Asakura)

"Geez, I'll forgive you just for today! Asakura-kun, you shouldn't be so super super furious, but *pureezu smile, since it's such a special occasion!*" (Kamino) (TI Note: Trying to say please in English.)

What's up with her?

Why does she keep playing around with me!

Like, I'm being laughed at! The people in my class are laughing at a delinquent like me!

Don't fuck with me!

"Hey, Mina. He looks troubled. Besides, it's not good to congratulate him all by yourself." (Ayase)

"Ooh, Ayase-chan who always has a business smile, is making an amazing smile!" (Kamino)

"Tha, that's none of your business!" (Ayase)

See, look. Because you were so friendly to me, the other people from class are coming too.

"You were great, Asakura-kun. Thanks to you, we got an overall victory." (Ayase)

"Shut up, I'm not interested, octopus. I'm going home!" (Asakura)

"Wait a moment. We need to all hold the trophy together and take a photo." (Ayase)

"Are you an idiot, that's so stupid." (Asakura)

The honours student, class committee member who always looked at me like an enemy, suddenly changed her attitude.

If I remember correctly, her name was Ayase. She seemed like she would be really popular with guys, but I hate women who have to manage every single event like this, and act as the representative of the class.

Yeah, today is just a whim.

I ended up doing something like this because of that stupid woman, but from tomorrow, I'll just return to my usual daily life.

"Come on, they said we're taking a photo. We muscat take it together together." (Kamino) (TL Note: Muscat = must. Kamino just randomly made that pun.)

That's right, everything is this woman's fault.

"Kamino. Just stop it already." (Asakura)

"Oro?" (Kamino)

“It’s not that fun to keep hanging out with me. Just, leave me alone.” (Asakura)

Yeah, I want her to leave me alone. I’m not good with these kinds of things.

“Eh~, I don’t want to~.” (Kamino)

And yet, she said that without hesitating at all.

“I mean, Asakura-kun, you’re cute~, so I just end up keeping you company in the end~.” (Kamino)

“““““Haaah?”””””

What part of this brutal-eyed, boorish guy are you looking at.

The people from class unintentionally let out a surprised voice too.

“You’re a pouting baby tsundere-san after all, Asakura-kun. No matter what you say right now, you did run your hardest today.” (Kamino)

“Idi, haa? It’s not like I ran for your guys’ sake or anything, okay!” (Asakura)

I was really embarrassed.

I said that without thinking about it, but in the next moment, my surprised classmates all broke out into laughter simultaneously.

“Ahahaha, good one Tsunkura-kun!”

“Yeah yeah, although you’re trying your best to act like a delinquent, pukukukuku.”

“Your face is completely red.”

“He’s unexpectedly pure.”

“Hehe, I like you. Hey, Asakura-kun, let’s go eat ramen together!”

“Time to party!”

Why did it turn out like this? Why did everyone become so friendly to me? Why is everyone approaching me with those kinds of smiles?

“Hey, Mina. You’re making fun of him too much. Derekura-kun is getting angry. Pukkukuku, tsu, tsundere.” (Ayase)

“What are you laughing about, Ayase!” (Asakura)

I had never showed my emotions on my face that much before.

I had never had that many smiling faces pointed towards me from that many people before.

I had never felt that my personality that couldn't be honest with itself was that bothersome before.

“Ehehe, you look happy, Asakura-kun. I'm having a lot of fun.” (Kamino)

I'm not having fun though.

You keep laughing so frivolously, and it's irritating.

You're over-familiar, stupid, noisy, and yet, you're always in the centre of people.

What's up with this woman.

Why is this person coming near me so unreasonably.

Why have I been coming to school ever since then.

All of it is this woman's fault.

That's right, everything is because of that woman.

Then, I woke up.

When I saw my face in the mirror after waking up, it wasn't Asakura Ryuuma's face that was on it.

The face that was on it, was Velt Jeeha.

It had already been a long time since then, but I still remember each and every memory of my past life vividly.

“Kamino, are you doing fine right now?” (Velt)

Several years have passed since I regained my memories of Asakura Ryuuma.

By the time I realized it, I, Velt Jeeha, had become 15 years old.

Chapter 37: The time has come

Recently, I have been reading the newspaper often.

It's because the name of my childhood friend, who now lives somewhere far away in the world, fighting for the world and for humanity, often appears there.

"Ho~u. Forna Elfarshia, who broke general Gyanza's record of the youngest general, was appointed as one of the『Ten Heroes of Light』. Ho~, she's working hard~." (Velt)

A photo of Forna is decorating one page of the newspaper.

She's still 15 years old.

However, she's become quite a lot more like an adult since I last met her.

At that time, I thought of her as a precocious brat that acted grown up, but now, she has a resolute expression, shining blond hair, clean, pure white skin, and a slender, thin body.

"She's become quite a good woman. Well, I'm glad she's alive." (Velt)

I haven't met Forna ever since I was 10 years old.

It's because Forna herself hadn't returned home to her country.

According to rumours, after entering the empire's national military academy by skipping grades, she skipped even more grades, and graduated as the top student. After enlisting in humanity's great allied forces, she was very active in her first battle, and contributed greatly to victory.

She got promoted every time she got an achievement, and now, she became one of the ten people of humanity's highest military strength, which has immensely more honour than a general rank.

That is, the『Ten Heroes of Light』. The champion that was once called the boy hero is one of them, and it without a doubt has enough honour to have their names left behind in human history, being talked about for eternity.

"Kuhaha, well, she has probably forgotten me already, but I feel happy, and somewhat lonely at the same time about her efforts. Besides, how are the other guys going?" (Velt)

In these five years, although the different race conflict has been continuing as always, time has unmistakably advanced forwards.
I've become able to properly feel that, from just a newspaper.

"What the hell are you doing in a place like this!"

Ah? Who's the one interrupting me while I'm going through such complicated feelings? When I raise my face, I see men wearing filthy armour, who had reeking, rotten eyes.

There's around twenty people.

"This place is our, Kamuaseinu group's hideout!"

A large, old man who seemed like the boss of the group, tries to intimidate me.

When I realized that, I finally remembered my objective.

That's right. I came to this cave deep in this forest of monsters to find these guys.

"Ahh, so it's you guys, huh. The underdog thief group that fled from the battle." (Velt) (TL Note: He calls them 'Kamase Inu' (噛ませ犬), which basically means underdog, and it's an insult to them because it sounds like their group name.)

"The name's not underdog! We're the Kamuaseinu group! Who the hell are you!" (Kamuaseinu boss)

"I'm an employee from the ramen shop in the royal capital. Since you fleeing soldiers ran from the war and assaulted a village near the royal capital to steal crops, I was made to go round you guys up." (Velt)

"Haa? An employee? Don't fuck with me! Why is a guy like you!" (Kamuaseinu boss)

I didn't feel like listening to his whole story, nor talking to him.
I lightly pointed at the big crowd behind the group's boss, and then pointed my finger to the sky.

Then,

"! O, ooooo! What, what is this!"

"My bo, body is voluntarily, u, u!"

"I'm floating! Why is this happening! I can't, I can't move my body!"

It's not that big of a deal. I just casted levitation (floating) on everyone's armour and clothes.

"Don't talk. I'll end it quickly. Fuwa fuwa panic!" (Velt)

It ended like that.

By just moving my finger a little, a bit less than twenty men who were floating in the air fainted in an instant.

The thief group's boss is in a daze. It seems he can't even let out a voice.

"Yo, you, eh, wha, what, right now." (Kamuaseinu boss)

"It's not that much of a big deal. I just shook everyone's body back and forth at high speed. Since it's just to the extent of a cerebral concussion, they haven't died." (Velt)

"Wha, wha wha, what!" (Kamuseinu boss)

"Obviously, I'm not going to let you off with just that much. To farmers, crops are a crystallisation of their sweat and mud. Since you stole that, I need to make you all bloody, don't I." (Velt)

Since when did I start not being as scared of people that can calmly kill as I was in the past.

Since when did I start becoming curious about being able to freely manipulate everything in this world.

"No, no way, you! That twisted look in your eyes, and that reddish hair colour. And then, that ability! Are you that『Remote Control Velt』from the Elfarshia Kingdom, who is called the Remote Controller!" (Kamuaseinu boss)

So I really am called that, huh.

I became very frustrated.

"Damn it, it's not over yet! Who was the guy that gave me such a lame as nickname!" (Velt)

It's not like I'm a brat, so I don't need really cool names like the golden comet, the giant killer, or names like that.

But what's up with『Remote Control Velt』.

It's not scary at all, and what? Is it for an air-conditioner? A TV? What is it!

"Don't say that too much. I don't like that nickname at all. Rather, I'll just end

this already.” (Velt)

However, even though he knows my alias, the man slowly calms down. That expression looks like he’s hiding a trump card.

“Tch, to think you would appear in a place like this. However, you’re an idiot, because it’s going to be the end for you!” (Kamuaseinu boss)

“Ahh?” (Velt)

“In our Kamuaseinu group, we have those『100 Demon Killing Zauko Siblings』! It’s over for you!” (Kamuaseinu boss)

What, so they had more comrades, huh.
In that case, I’ll need to finish it now, or else it’ll get even more troublesome.

“Zauko siblings? Ahh, those guys from before. They’ve fainted.” (Farga)

No, I didn’t even need to worry.
Pushing through the thicket in a bush, a man that I knew well came out. A man with an unchanging sharp glint in his eye, and characteristic scarlet hair that looks like the evening sun.

“Yo, Farga, I found their hideout the fastest.” (Velt)
“Tch, I didn’t think these shits were only of this extent. I guess I didn’t need to ask you guys for help.” (Farga)

Farga Elfarshia.
The strongest Hunter in the continent, and Elfarshia Kingdom’s strongest prince.
Because he has such a famous name, the man lost his self control.

“Farga? The sca, scarlet dragon slayer Farga! Wh wh, why, why is this guy!” (Kamuaseinu boss)

And why does this guy have such a cool alias, but only I get a lame one? I feel kinda let down.
Then, even while shaking, the man in front of me looks like he’s still about to do something.

“Kuh, even the Za, Zauko, siblings, shit! Shit! Shit! However, I can’t let myself be caught in a place like this!” (Kamuaseinu boss)

What is it this time? The moment I thought that, the man loudly blew the ivory-looking small flute hanging from his neck.

What was that? Is he going to call for his comrades again? No, I don't think so.

"Kukukuku, it's already over for you assholes. In the『Blackmarket』, by paying a large sum of money, we bought a monster that's even ferocious in the demon country, a Pantherion!" (Kamuaseinu boss)

Pantherion? I've heard of it before.

If I remember correctly, it's a carnivorous monster that lives in the demon country.

I've seen it before in a picture book, but it was quite a major beast that seized game with its strong leg strength, and tore them up.

Then, after feeling the loud footsteps and shaking from deep in the forest, a pitch black, huge beast appeared in front of us while spilling drool.

"Uwaa~, scary." (Velt)

"Tch, you damn beast." (Farga)

It really looked like it was going to eat us. We would be torn up from being touched by those sharp nails, bitten by those sharp fangs, and easily broken. We reflexively put ourselves on guard, and the Pantherion flew at us in that moment.

However,

"Sit!"

"Guru-!" (Pantherion)

I suddenly heard a woman's voice.

Reacting to that voice, the Pantherion suddenly corrected its posture and sat down.

"Oh." (Velt)

"Hmm." (Farga)

"Wha, whaaaat! What, what's wrong, Pantherion! Kill these guys!" (Kamuaseinu boss)

The man felt shaken from the Pantherion's unexpected action. However, we immediately knew what happened.

“That’s bad manners.”

“Ku~nn, guruu, ku~nn.” (Pantherion)

Together with the woman’s voice we heard again, someone appeared from behind the Pantherion.

No, even if I say someone, there could only be one person.

She’s beautiful enough to make me get fascinated by her and forget about this situation with this criminal. Flowing silver hair and red pupils.

For some reason, there’s a strange gap with that, as she’s wearing a white cook’s apron.

However, the aura and elegance coming from her was so filled with majesty, enough to make the monster that’s known to be ferocious show it’s stomach, its pose of submission.

“Mu, even though Velt and Farga are already here, for me to be last.” (Ura)

“Yo, Ura. Since when were you a demon tamer?” (Velt)

“I have not become one. When I coincidentally met it in the forest and gave it a glare, it immediately fawned on me.” (Ura)

Ura Vesparda, who grew enough to be able to join the group of adult women. From her name, the man in front of us completely shrivelled, and was paralyzed from fright.

“Ura? Did you just say Uraaaa!? That Silver Masenkou (demon flash), Ura!” (Kamuaseinu boss)

Like I said, why is only my alias lame, and these guys all get cool ones?

“Why, why! The Scarlet Dragon Slayer, the Silver Masenkou and Remote Controller trio!” (Kamuaseinu boss)

Like I said, stop repeating it! Why is it remote control!

Good grief, why did it end up like this? Even now, Ura and my main jobs are ramen restaurant employees.

And yet, ever since we started helping Farga for his jobs as a Hunter, before I knew it, we were treated as a party of three, and Ura and I both got aliases in the Elfarshia Kingdom area.

It’s advantageous since it earns me extra money and piles up actual fighting experience, but it’s troublesome.

“With this, we’ve subjugated the damn Kamuaseinu group. Let’s hurry up and call Tyler, so that we can take them all away and get our reward.” (Farga)

While looking down at everyone from the group that has fainted, Farga puts a rope around each person.

“Honestly, Velt and my main job are not Hunters, but ramen restaurant employees. If you take us away at such a busy time, like lunch time, I can’t help but want to complain.” (Ura)

“It killed time, didn’t it?” (Farga)

“Though, you would’ve been able to instantly kill them all.” (Velt)

“Yeah, but the other day, that damn Tyler was complaining. He doesn’t mind me moving freely, but it’s worrying to let me move by myself. If I keep doing that, he said he’ll make someone observe me.” (Farga)

“You are a prince after all, so there’s no helping it.” (Velt)

Ever since when I was 10 years old, I haven’t met Forna and my other classmates.

Instead, by the time I realized it, I started hanging out with Farga and Ura.

As always, Farga lived a freewheeling life, coming in and out of the country, and Ura has already become like a part of the family.

However, probably because of puberty, Ura herself hasn’t clung onto me and behaved like a spoilt child like when she was a brat.

I don’t remember since when that started, but I was made to feel that time really has passed since then.

And, I have finally become 15 years old too.

“What’s wrong, Velt. Recently, even if we’re together, you’re always looking somewhere far away.” (Ura)

As expected of Ura. She has good observations. Certainly, I have been lost in thought recently.

To be honest, my current life is satisfying. I don’t have a single complaint about it.

Living in the safe Elfarshia Kingdom forever, without being involved in war, continuing the ramen restaurant, and well, I can’t really marry Forna anymore, so I’ll marry someone else, have a kid, and welcome my remaining years as an

old man. There might be happiness in that.

No, the majority of the people in the Elfarshia Kingdom probably think I'm going to live that sort of life.

Recently, there have been times when I myself actually thought that that might be nice.

But I can't do that anymore. I've become 15 years old.

"I've been thinking for a long time. Five years have passed since I chose a different path to Forna and the others. And it's like, I'm feeling that it has finally come." (Velt)

Being 15 years old in this world is a big thing. It's socially an age that has responsibility, can marry, and can even officially find employment.

"Come? What has?" (Ura)

"My objective for living. I've finally reached the age to freely live in this world. Travelling, and entering other countries. I can even make applications to travel to the demon continent or demi-human continent by myself now. I can take action alone. I'm basically able to become independent now." (Velt)

"Velt, what are you?" (Ura)

What I really want to do. Well, not even Ura and Farga who have been with me know what I want to do.

I didn't tell Forna the exact thing either.

The only person that knows, is only sensei.

And, I was confident. That the time has come.

"Ura, Farga. I'm thinking of leaving this country, and travelling this world." (Velt)

It was my first time in five years, seeing Ura's dumbfounded and hardened face.

Chapter 38: Family

Quite a lot of things have changed in these five years.

One of them, is that the restaurant became three times as large as a normal, single house.

Because it was so popular and the citizens strongly requested for it, the ramen restaurant, and our house, was made to increase in size by an order from the king.

Sensei didn't really plan on making it that big, but there was complaints from customers because they had to wait in such a long line everyday, so it was inevitably enlarged.

"Oi, Ura. Why do you look so displeased?" (Velt)

"That's obvious! It was too sudden. Why didn't you tell me beforehand!" (Ura)

"Well, I told sensei beforehand, that I would leave the house and country when I become 15." (Velt)

"Why didn't you tell me! I have preparations to make you know!" (Ura)

The whole time while we were returning home from the forest, Ura was extremely displeased.

While tutting many times, she keeps complaining.

"You say preparations, but even if you prepare your heart, you would still oppose, right?" (Velt)

"Wrong! Well, I also need to prepare my heart, but the most important thing, is for my trip-" (Ura)

The shop door opened at that moment, and a small shadow jumped at us.

"Niichan, neechan, welcome home!"

The moment that small child jumped into her chest, Ura's displeased expression changed to a smile all at once.

"Umu, I'm home, Hanabi. Were you being a good child?" (Ura)

"Yeah, guess what, Hanabi helped out daddy and mummy a lot!" (Hanabi)

“Ohh, I see I see, you’re admirable, Hanabi. Nn~, rub rub rub.” (Ura)

“Kyafuu! Niichan, you too! Rub rub me!” (Hanabi)

Even my twisted self naturally smiled.

Nowadays, she has become one of the two poster girls in the Tonkotu Rameen restaurant.

Hanabi Chassi. Four years old.

She has curly red hair, is wearing short sleeve clothes with easy to move, above the knee length trousers, with an apron for children on top, and is an energetic girl that always lively runs around the inside of the shop.

“Ah, Velt-kun, Ura-chan, welcome home. I’m glad you don’t seem to have any injuries.” (Lallana)

“Yo, you both came back, huh. We’re tidying up right now, so help out.” (Melma)

Missus and sensei who haven’t changed since the past. The child that those two made, is this Hanabi.

She’s a child that was born in the year after Forna and the others went to the empire.

Since the shop was busy, Ura, missus, sensei and I had to each take turns raising the child, and right now, Hanabi thinks Ura and I are her actual siblings.

That is somewhat pleasant to me, but to be honest, I pampered Hanabi many times more than Forna and Ura when they were brats.

Therefore,

“Hanabi, listen well!” (Ura)

“What’s wrong, neechan?” (Hanabi)

“Your older brother, Velt, is awful, because apparently, he’s trying to leave this house while leaving you behind.” (Ura)

Hey, Ura. Why are you tattling on me to the child that definitely shouldn’t hear it.

“Niichan, is that true?” (Hanabi)

“Ah, ah, well, Hanabi. Look, it’s not like niichan is going somewhere because he doesn’t like you or anything.” (Velt)

“Niichan, are you going somewhere?” (Hanabi)

Stop it. Don't look at me with such wet eyes that look like they're going to explode in a few seconds.

You're making me want to rip up all of my determination and hug you.

"Fue." (Hanabi)

"Ah, look, Hanabi!" (Velt)

"N, n, o, nooooooooooooooooooooo!" (Hanabi)

That's why I said not to do that! Ura, you idiot!

"Wait, Velt-kun, wha, what are you, or rather, is what she said right now true!" (Lallana)

Ahh, see, even the missus dropped a bowl and broke it from surprise. This is why you should think about the timing, or how you put it.

"Velt-kun, what are you thinking! I will not let you do that!" (Lallana)

"No, no, no! I don't want niichan to gooooo!" (Hanabi)

"Velt, are you trying to abandon us! That being the case, raise your hand if you oppose Velt from leaving home!" (Ura)

"Yes yes yes yes yes! I strongly oppose and will not let you do that!" (Lallana)

"I definitely don't wanna!" (Hanabi)

"How's that, Velt. Due to the amount of opposers, your stupid thought has been rejected!" (Ura)

Ura you asshole, you had to go and get allies.

I've been thinking this since before, but ever since Hanabi was born, the women's power has increased.

When the missus or Ura are troubled, they drag Hanabi in as their ally and hold down sensei and I.

"Niichan, not going, way, right?" (Hanabi)

"Uuu." (Velt)

"Don't leabe, I don't want, niijan to leave!" (Hanabi)

Uooo, damn it, Ura you idiot! I said it before, but that's foul play! Stop it, stop it! It's making my unsteady body want to naturally come up to Hanabi, hug her tightly, and say "niichan isn't going anywhere."

"Ha, Hanabi, look, okay." (Velt)

“Higu, higu, uuu.” (Hanabi)

“Ni, niichan will always, be in yo, your, heart?” (Velt)

What suspicious things am I saying?

However, that was dangerous. My determination was about to weaken.

“Then, niichan, will you do the fuwa fuwa play with me, every day from now?”
(Hanabi)

Fuwa fuwa play.

The sole technique I thought up for Hanabi in this world to not defeat an enemy, but to let Hanabi have fun.

Fuwa fuwa up high. Fuwa fuwa jet coaster. Fuwa fuwa nap. Fuwa fuwa tag.
This is a technique that I developed in this world for Hanabi due to Hanabi because she is Hanabi.

“I’ll come back occasionally, so at that time.” (Velt)

“Uuu, uuu, bigyaaaaaaaaaaaaa!” (Hanabi)

The only time I became this flustered was probably when I first met the pervert general Gyanza.

I don’t think I can go against this.

Behind Hanabi, who is crying, Ura and the missus are supporting her.

I’m completely isolated and helpless, being surrounded by enemies on all sides.

Do I not even have a single ally on my side?

No, that’s not true.

“So you’ve finally decided, Velt.” (Melma)

With a somewhat heavy tone, sensei, who had been silent for the whole time, said that.

“Wait, dear! What are you saying!” (Lallana)

“Are you saying you’re going to let Velt leave the house!?” (Ura)

“Daddy you idiot!” (Hanabi)

The women camp instantaneously opposed. However, unlike me, sensei was somewhat calm.

“The truth is, Velt. Right now, there was a message from the king, and he said he was also thinking of making a second shop, instead of only increasing the

size of this shop.” (Melma)

“Eh, seriously? That’s amazing.” (Velt)

Is that what you call a chain store? Well, there are a lot of employees and disciples now, so it’s not strange.

“And Lallana was saying this too, but if that really happens, then we should leave that shop to you and Ura.” (Melma)

“Eh?” (Velt)

“You guys are already 15. If you officially register as a family, get a kid and occasionally play with them, you would probably live happily.” (Melma)

That’s the first time I’m hearing that. It’s probably Ura’s first time hearing that too, because her face is blushing a bit while staring at me.

And then, the moment I heard that story, I suddenly imagined that kind of future.

That will surely be a happy life.

However, as expected, that’s not what I want.

“But, there’s no helping it I guess. I already knew that this would happen since before.” (Melma)

At that moment, for the first time, I saw it.

“After all, even though Velt Jeeha is loved by many people, I’m the only one that understands the feelings of Asakura Ryuuma. As long as you can’t completely throw that away, I knew that a day like this would come eventually.” (Melma)

“Sen, sei.” (Velt)

“See you later, Velt. Go, see the world, then search for your benefactor, and your classmates! Go do something that I can’t do anymore!” (Melma)

Sensei’s voice that’s always heartily laughing or getting angry, was slightly shaking, and his eyes were wet.

However, even so, those eyes, expression, and words, supported my everything.

That’s why, I’m going to go.

“Yeah, I’ll be off, sensei.” (Velt)

I thanked Velt Jeeha's other father from the bottom of my heart.

"U, uwaaaann, dear you idiot! What is up with that, it looked like only you two could understand each other! Velt-kun is, Velt-kun is my child after all!" (Lallana)

"I strongly oppose! Rather, Velt, reconsider it! Were you listening to his story right now? It's a second shop, a second shop you know? And, I, I will, be Velt's, wa, wai, wife, uuu~, it's making my fa, face grin!" (Ura)

"Nooooo!" (Hanabi)

It has been seven years since I remembered about Asakura Ryuuma. I've completely changed, haven't I.
There was a time when I thought my old man and mum, who gave birth to me, raised me, and risked their lives to protect me, were strangers.
But now, I feel so satisfied.

"Missus, Ura, Hanabi. I really am sorry. But, I'm going. To other people, it might just look like I'm wandering, but I want to devote my life to this trip." (Velt)

"Velt-kun, but." (Lallana)

"So, could you send me off with a smile?" (Velt)

In a way, although I was free when I was alone, now I've made too many important people that I have to plead people, so that I can go somewhere.
Then, missus looked downwards as if giving up.
Seeing that, Ura and Hanabi sobbed.

"Ah~, geez, it's going to be lonely. But, Hanabi is going to be the loneliest. She's going to part from her family that she loves so much after all." (Lallana)
"Yeah. But sensei, missus, and Ura is here. That's why, I can go with a peace of mind." (Velt)

To be honest, Hanabi's tears pierced my heart, but it'll be fine if these three are here for her.
Besides, above all, Ura is here.
Human or demon no longer means anything.
Ura dots on Hanabi as if she was her real younger sister.

I was also able to begin a trip, because I confirmed that Ura is living a plenty happy life.

I've thoroughly accomplished the promise I made with Samejima.

This country doesn't look at Ura with rose-coloured glasses anymore, just because she's a demon.

Many people love her.

That's why~, eh, what?

""""Eh?"""" (Everyone except Velt)

Huh? Why is everyone looking at me with such weird faces?
Even sensei is too. Why?

"Oi, Velt, what are you saying right now? No way, eh, did you think leaving home meant that kind of leaving home?" (Melma)

"Ve, Velt-kun, was that an, auditory hallucination? I feel like I just heard something outrageous right now." (Lallana)

"Oi, Velt, you bastard, do you want me to kill you?" (Ura)

"Uwaaaann, niichan you idiot~!" (Hanabi)

Eh, why? Did I say something weird right now?

"What, what is it?" (Velt)

"No like, when you said you're travelling, did you mean by yourself?" (Melma)

"Ha, haa?" (Velt)

Well, obviously.

What are they saying?

"You know, just, look at that." (Melma)

"Haa?" (Velt)

The place where sensei pointed at, was where Ura was, who looked like she's filled with anger and despair.

She disappointedly dropped her shoulders, and is muttering curse-like words.

"Ura-chan, Velt-kun is just being his usual self, so hold on." (Lallana)

"Neechan, niichan is an idiot, since he's an idiot, so he's an idiot!" (Hanabi)

Why? More like, Hanabi, even you get it? What do they mean?

“You know, do you really think you’re allowed to do something like going on a journey while leaving Ura behind by herself?” (Melma)

At that moment, I remembered our conversation.

I also need to prepare my heart, but the most important thing, is for my trip-

“Ah, so that’s what you were talking about. Wait, so you’re coming with me?”
(Velt)

Like this, it was decided that Ura would go together with me on my journey.

Chapter 39: The world is fine like that

I had regularly been coming to the graveyard, that's located in the outskirts of the royal capital.

Occasionally, I would let out complaints alone, but today is a bit different. Like always, I brought flowers, and put my hands together, but the reason I came here today is to say my farewells for a while.

People would regularly come and clean or offer flowers to that grave, so it should be fine even when I'm not there.

Even though several years have passed since then, I'm proud of both of them, who have people other than me thinking about them in their hearts.

"Old man, mum. I'm going to be away from home for a while, so I won't be coming here. Well, just wish for my safety from that world." (Velt)

"I will properly look after Velt, so there's no need to worry. Father in law, mother in law." (Ura)

"Oi, since when did they become your old man and mum." (Velt)

"Don, don't be mean. Both of them would be a lot more relieved than if you were by yourself." (Ura)

Ura shrewdly ended up coming with me.
To be honest, it was unexpected from the beginning.

"Come on, next we have to greet father." (Ura)

Next to old man and mum, there is a grave that's engraved in letters that no one in this world can read.

No one in the town knows whose grave that is.

It's a grave that only Ura, some authorised people, and I know the identity of.

"Father. I will go together with Velt. I won't be able to come back for a while, but please forgive me." (Ura)

Demon king Sharkryu. In other words, Samejima's grave.
Although he is Ura's father, as expected, there's no way they could make a grave for a demon king inside the Elfarshia Kingdom.

So, we didn't engrave Sharkryu's name in『letters that anyone can read』.
A nameless grave would be too desolate, so I engraved it forcefully. Letters that only we would understand, that I wrote for the first time ever since I was born as Velt Jeeha.

‘Sharkryu Vesparda. Resting here, together with Samejima Ryouichi's soul.’

A grave marker I engraved with katakana, kanji, and hiragana. The king, Ura, and the others tilted their heads, but sensei and I forcefully pushed through and wrote these letters.

To be frank, I couldn't write the “Same” kanji in Samejima, so I really was glad that sensei was here.

“Samejima. I'm going to go find the guys that can read the letters on your grave. For some reason, your daughter is also accompanying me, but well, just let her. I won't make a move on her.” (Velt)

This is going to be temporarily parting with you too, but look forward to the next time we meet.

I'll work hard so that we can have a nostalgic conversation again.

“Have you finished your greetings?” (Melma)

“We will clean the graves when you guys are away, so please don't worry about that.” (Lallana)

“Higu, niicha~n, neecha~n.” (Hanabi)

I turn around, and see sensei, missus, and Hanabi were waiting at the entrance of the graveyard.

When I nod, Hanabi, who had done nothing but cry, jumped at Ura and I.

“Niichan. Nee~chan.” (Hanabi)

This spoilt girl.

Even though Ura and I slept together with Hanabi in the middle all night long last night, it seems it's still not enough.

Well, I guess I've just been spoiling her that much.

“Hanabi, let me hug you.” (Velt)

For a while, I'm going to part from this weight. I'm usually always making her go high with floating, just for today, I'll hug her closely with both hands.

“Get along with daddy and mummy, okay?” (Velt)

“Yup.” (Hanabi)

“Don’t worry. I’ll definitely come back. I promise you.” (Velt)

A promise, huh. I feel like the period when I was called a delinquent is quite nostalgic.

Before I knew it, I had become a soft niichan.

“Now, Hanabi, neechan will hug you next. You give me a good bye kiss too.”
(Ura)

“Neechan.” (Hanabi)

“Don’t worry. Niichan said it too, didn’t he? We’ll definitely come back, and buy lots of presents as well.” (Ura)

“Uuu, I don’t need any presents, so just come back quickly!” (Hanabi)

“Ahh, please don’t cry, Hanabi. If your tears become the farewell gift, I might have to half kill Velt, making his body unable to go on a trip.” (Ura)

“Even though you’re not going to do that! If you’re going to do it, just do it!”
(Hanabi)

Stop it. That’s seriously not funny.

And like, stop making that “oh, so I could have used that trick too” face, missus.

“But it’s no good if you keep crying forever. When we come back next time, you might just have a niece or a nephew, no, maybe someone who you consider as a younger sibling will be made.” (Ura)

You’re joking, right? No, her eyes look kinda serious.

If that happens, I’m going to be killed by Samejima though.

Rather, even though I thought she grew up and stopped being so clingy to me, since she says things that throw me off guard occasionally, I don’t really understand how much Ura loves me as of now.

Although I feel quite anxious about the strange words Ura slipped in in the confusion of the moment, we have to go soon.

“I guess it’s about time. So, you’ve decided on your destination, right?”
(Melma)

Where I’m aiming for in a journey without a single clue of the destination. That had been decided from the start.

“Obviously, I’m going to steadily search from a big as place.” (Velt)

“A big as place? That could only mean one place.” (Melma)

“Yeah. The largest country in the humanity continent; we’re going to the empire. That’s right, our first destination, is the『Archline Empire』.” (Velt)

That’s right, if we don’t go there, nothing will probably ever start.

“Mummy, where’s this ‘empire’? Is it far away?” (Hanabi)

“Yeah, it’s a bit far away. Even on a ship, it would take around three weeks I guess?” (Lallana)

“Is it big?” (Hanabi)

“Yeah, it’s very big. The territory and population is many times the Elfarshia Kingdom. Around ten times.” (Lallana)

“Is that amazing?” (Hanabi)

“Yes. After all, it’s enough to be called the largest country in the humanity continent.” (Lallana)

“Humanity continent~?” (Hanabi)

Yeah, it’s amazing. Well, I don’t really understand that greatness either. Ura bent her back and slowly talked to answer Hanabi’s question.

“Listen, Hanabi. This world is split into four continents. One of them is where humans like you, Hanabi, live in, this『Humanity Continent』.The one where the race known as demons like your neechan live in, is called the『Demon Continent』. The one where human beasts, dragon people, and other tribes that have the blood of animals and humans live in, is called the『Demi-human Continent』. The world consists of these three continents with the sea in between them, as if making a big triangle.” (Ura)

Ura, I don’t think there’s any point anymore. Hanabi is cutely tilting her head, while making a face as if steam is coming out of her head, you know?

“And then, the centre of those triangle continents, is where the fourth continent is located. In the past, it’s said that gods lived there, in the『Divine Continent』. The sole continent in this world that no one owns.” (Ura)

“God?” (Hanabi)

“Well, that information has been passed down, but we don’t actually know if they lived there or not. However, untouched, large territory, abundant mana,

and many precious magic jewels have been confirmed to be on that continent, and it's said that if that continent becomes under your control, you hold hegemony over the world. So, each and every race in this world is keeping each other in check while continuing conflict, trying to make the Divine Continent theirs." (Ura)

Exactly, that's the current situation of this world.
With the gigantic Divine Continent as the stage, humanity, demons and demi-humans all made their bases, continuing the battle to take it while spreading their own territory.
And, many lives from different races have been lost in that battle, and much blood has been shed.
Forna and the others are also going back and forth from the empire and the Divine Continent, continuing war.

"That's weird. Everyone should just get along with each other." (Hanabi)

Ahh, you really are an angel, Hanabi.

"Hanabi, it's just as you say. But you know, the people in this world are troubling, since they just can't do that." (Ura)

"Why? If all they do is fight, wouldn't that place just break?" (Hanabi)

That's right. In the end, although it was originally an untouched continent that's abundant in resources, it broke from the repetition of war.
Everything was meaningless.

"No, well, that is true, yeah. The world isn't that simple. For example, there was a country called Bolbardie, that has already been destroyed, and they were making a plan to spread tunnels." (Ura)

"Stop. Ura, it's fine already." (Velt)

"Velt! No, this is important, and I want Hanabi to remember this." (Ura)

"She doesn't need to remember it. Niichan's wish is for Hanabi to grow up in good health." (Velt)

I don't know how many years, decades, centuries, the war itself will take to end.

No one knows if what they really wanted will still remain there.

No, in reality, everyone knew.

However, considering the hatred from the battles until now, and the lives lost, it's turned into a situation where no one can draw back their raised fists. In the end, what Hanabi said is the truth. That's why, it's fine.

"Hanabi, the demons and humans and whatever your neechan was talking to you about, doesn't matter at all. You love your niichan and neechan. Niichan and neechan also love you. The world is fine like that." (Velt)

"Yup! That makes sense to Hanabi now!" (Hanabi)

"That's how it is, Ura. It's not like we're going to participate in the war after all." (Velt)

Hanabi isn't mistaken on anything, so there's basically no need to explain away every troublesome thing. Probably because she understood, Ura smiled and nodded.

"Now, that being the case, sensei. First, we're going to go to the empire. I haven't really decided where we're going after that, but it should work out somehow." (Velt)

The beginning of a new life. Although one person is crying, I feel optimistic about it.

"See you later, take care." (Melma)
"Both of you, please don't fight. Write a lot of letters too." (Lallana)
"Come back quickly!" (Hanabi)

Ura and I somewhat awkwardly hugged the missus. We also hugged Hanabi as well. And then, for sensei,

"See you later." (Melma)
"Yeah, I'll get going." (Velt)
"I'm off." (Ura)

'Thank you for all the help you gave me.'
Was a bit too embarrassing to say, so we exchanged a high five with that much feeling behind it instead. We turned our backs to them, and while turning around from time to time, we waved our hands many times until we couldn't see our family anymore.

“Oi, Velt, Ura-chan, are you guys travelling somewhere together with such heavy baggage?”

“O~i, both of you, what’s up?”

I hadn’t told the others that I’m temporarily leaving the country. It felt like they would make some big commotion, so not saying it was easier. Well, there would probably be some big as commotion tomorrow, but we unseriously waved our hands and passed by them.

“Oh.” (Ura)

“Hmm? Why is that guy over there.” (Velt)

And then, he was there, in front of the royal capital’s gate where we finally arrived at.

With the same appearance as always, he was carrying a slightly bigger bag on his back.

“Are you done?”

“Yeah.” (Velt)

The person standing there, was Farga. Farga looked at us, and then didn’t ask any further.

“Then that’s good. Well then, let’s go.” (Farga)

“Yeah.” (Velt)

“Umu.” (Ura)

Putting the royal capital behind us, our story finally started. Us three’s, Farga, Ura and my.....

..... Eh?

““Wait, you’re coming with us too!?”” (Velt and Ura)

“I was just thinking of wandering around some far places.” (Farga)

““No no no no!”” (Velt and Ura)

“Besides, when I reported to my damn old man that you guys are going to be away from the country, he got worried and told me to come with you guys.” (Farga)

For some reason, Farga ended up slipping in and coming with us.

Like, why is making a face that looks like this is only natural?

Ooh, Ura, who thought she was going to travel together with me as a two, is glaring at Farga with a very dissatisfied look.

Anyway, like this, our trip, that is also an adventure and a battle, started.

Chapter 40: An important hint from a hoodlum

If people notice us wandering around outside of the royal capital with these members, there would probably be an uproar.

Thinking that, I got slightly concerned about our appearances.

So, Farga is now wearing a purple, hooded mantle that's covering his head, and Ura is wearing a completely white, wide brimmed hat deep into her head.

However, we didn't have to care about it that much.

After crossing the forest, we walked through grasslands, and crossed over a plateau.

The reason why there's no conspicuous trouble, is because the Elfarshia Kingdom's territory is that peaceful.

Two days have passed since we left the royal capital, and it took several days to reach the national border, but there weren't any bandits, nor were we attacked by beasts.

According to Farga, that's boring, but as long as there isn't anything troublesome, there's no loss for me.

However, even so, continuously camping for several days without any baths, doesn't feel good.

To say nothing of Ura, who pays a lot more attention to hygiene.

However, by the time I started thinking about that, I could already see our destination.

At the bottom of a mountain surrounded by a forest, there's a coastline. At that place, there's a port city, although small.

"That's the place.『Port City Stato』. A ship that goes to the damn empire periodically comes there. Since it goes through several countries, it takes a damn lot of time though." (Farga)

"Ah~, we've arrived. I don't really care what, but let's just eat something quickly. I really am not good with camping. I want to just settle down and eat." (Velt)

"I experienced it since I was young, during the war, but meals and baths are

matters of life or death.” (Ura)

I can't see that many buildings in the port city. There should only be a few hundred people too.

The building's appearances and the townscape itself isn't that resplendent either.

I didn't mean that in a bad way, and you could say that it's an environment that's easy to live in, because of its simplicity.

For us, that had been living in the large town known as the royal capital, we felt calmness from this, and that isn't such a bad feeling in itself.

However, before getting immersed in sentimentality, first is food.

We entered a random, fairly quiet tavern that we didn't even know if it was open until we went inside.

Just as we thought, there were only a few people in the store. However, since that wasn't particularly something to care about, we surrounded a round table in the corner, and toasted.

“So, our real setting off starts here.” (Velt)

“However, Farga. I can't believe the king allowed you to go on a trip too.” (Ura)

“Hmph, I was just getting tired of living in that damn weak damn city.” (Farga)

No, we're going to the empire, an even bigger city than your homeland you know? I wonder if asking that would be insensitive.

“In the first place, what if damn demons come to my stupid little brother, who has never gone outside of the country, during the war. That would feel so damn uneasy.” (Farga)

Yeah, as I thought, I shouldn't retort to that.

This guy has quite a troublesome personality, but basically, he came along because he was worried about us.

Well, he certainly is skilled, and in the end, the king probably thought it would be more convenient if Farga went with us, rather than him moving alone.

“Besides, you say trip, but it's not like you're going to the damn Divine Being Continent or a different race's continent. My damn old man was gave in quickly.” (Farga)

“Yeah, that makes sense. Velt and I weren't allowed something that big..... hey,

what's wrong, Velt? Looking towards the day after tomorrow like that." (Ura)
"No, it's nothing....." (Velt)

Now, should I tell the two who are stuffing their mouths with potatoes and meat as if it's only normal.

It's not like I was only aiming to go to the empire.

"Oi, stupid younger brother. You were thinking about something bad right now, weren't you?" (Farga)

"Looks like it. Besides, I'm curious about what you're searching for. You didn't tell me no matter what after all." (Ura)

"Ah~, um, well~, I'll tell you one day." (Velt)

Well, yeah, I was thinking about something bad.

After all, what I do depends on whether I find any clues at the empire.

"It'll be good if I could avoid it, but I don't know what will happen. Ah, but, yeah, there is one place that I don't want to go to." (Velt)

To be honest, I won't hesitate to go to the Demon Continent or the Divine Being Continent if there are clues to find Kamino there.

Obviously, I definitely don't want to be involved in something like war though. However, leaving that aside, there was one place I wanted to avoid if I can.

"The only place I don't want to go to, is the Demi-human Continent." (Velt)

The Demi-human Continent. You could say that demi-humans themselves are my trauma.

"Well, I guess that's only obvious, considering that incident from when you were a brat. Though, if we go to the damn Demi-human Continent with these members, we would probably make enemies out of everyone there." (Farga)

"Indeed. The prince of a human country, and although ruined, a demon princess. There's no doubt it would irritate the demi-humans." (Ura)

That's right, demi-humans remind me of the incident in the past.

Ever since that incident, I've never met a demi-human.

Ura is also of a different race, but I can't help but feel resistance towards demi-humans.

"Well anyways, for now, it's the empire. I'll go to humanity's largest country

first, and from then on, it depends on whether I found any hints or not about what I'm looking for." (Velt)

Aiming for the empire is nothing more than the first step to finding clues. In the first place, since Samejima was reincarnated as a demon, I don't know what could have happened to the other guys. Therefore, I've already prepared myself for the worst case situation. However, if I talk about that to these guys right now, they would probably take me back to the royal capital forcefully, so I'll avoid that. I decided to swallow my small secret together with the water poured in the glass. Then, at that moment.

"What, so you lads came to this town to go on the ship to the empire?" (Store owner)

A middle aged man, that looked like a local citizen began talking to us from the counter.

"Yeah~, we did, but what do you want?" (Velt)

"Nah, I just thought that you guys were unlucky." (Store owner)

"Unlucky? What do you mean by that?" (Velt)

"No ocean liners are going to go out from this harbor for a while."

Oi.

"What?" (Velt)

"No way!" (Ura)

"Hah?" (Farga)

Hold up, why do you have to go throw cold water on someone's determination.

"Wait, what's up with that, old man! I didn't even hear about any storms or naval battles happening nearby. And yet, why aren't any ships coming out from here! Isn't this a port city!" (Velt)

"There's nothing up to it. A certain commerce ship got too much cargo to carry, so all the ships got lent out." (Store owner)

"What?" (Velt)

"Right now, they're preparing ships to carry cargo at the harbor. Those ships

aren't going to the empire, but are heading to the country before it,

『Shiromu』.” (Store owner)

“Shiromu? Where's that. I've never heard of it before. Rather, I seriously can't believe it.” (Velt)

The trains aren't coming out from the station. The airplanes aren't flying out of the airport. It's basically the same as suddenly being told that.

And, unlike Asakura Ryuuma's world, the most troublesome thing is that there are no other means of transportation.

There's no way I could accept that without even asking for the reason.

It feels like tripping over from the very beginning. Then, Farga interposed.

“Shiromu huh. I only hear shitty rumours from it though.” (Farga)

“Farga, do you know about it?” (Velt)

“Yeah. It's a country that publicly calls itself a trading country, but that's only in public. In the shadows, they do illegal transactions, have slave markets, and even run an illegal pleasure quarter.” (Farga)

Uwa~, even if he's only heard that through rumours, those kinds of things really exist, huh.

Well, I definitely don't want to get involved with them at all.

“Fumu, however, that is unexpected. What will we do, Velt? Are we going by land?” (Ura)

“Oi oi oi, how many months do you think that would take. Besides, if we go by land, we'll need to cross through a lot of national borders. And because that's troublesome, I wanted to go by ship.” (Velt)

“True. How about we negotiate with the people on those merchant ships? We could ride it until midway or something.” (Ura)

“Haa? As far as I heard from Farga's story, that merchant ship seems kinda dangerous too. What are you going to do if something happens?” (Velt)

It has people that are going to such a dangerous country in it.

It's hard to say that they would be that respectable. Besides, if something happened, Ura, a woman, would be.....

“Kukekekekeke. The usual, gloomy eating house is a bit noisy.” (Sea Thieves Member)

“Ora ora get out of the way, because this store has been reserved by us, 『Commerce Guild, Sea Thieves』.” (Sea Thieves Member)

“Oi oi, I told you to prepare some women, didn’t I. Or else, I’ll go kidnap some. Kuku, just kidding. It was a joke, a joke. Extra fine women are different though.” (Sea Thieves Member)

At that moment, around ten vulgar looking men with coarse smiles entered the store.

“Tch, it’s them. You lads better not get involved with them.” (Store owner)
“Ho~, obviously. Wait, so those are the damn troublesome assholes that reserved all the ships, huh.” (Velt)

After barging in and walking inside the store, acting like they owned everything, they violently moved the desks and chairs, and they’re trying to take out alcohol from the counter of their own accord.

“Cus, customers, that, taking out alcohol from the shelves is.....” (Store owner)

“Ahh? Who the hell are you, don’t go touching me with your dirty hands, you poor person!” (Sea Thieves Member)

“Gyafuh!” (Store owner)

“Oi, hurry up and bring some food already!” (Sea Thieves Member)

“Hi, hiii, righ, right away!” (Store owner)

The store owner who tried to stop them, was dealt with by getting kicked away.

“A~ah, doing whatever they want. There really are people like that, aren’t there.” (Velt)

“There weren’t any in the royal capital though.” (Ura)

“Pieces of shit.” (Farga)

“Aaah, just leave them alone, Farga. There’s no end to them. In the end, they’re just hoodlums.” (Velt)

I’m disgusted by irresponsible people that do whatever they want. Rather than merchants, those guys are hoodlums.

Just like I thought from the start, I don’t even feel like negotiating with them to let us ride it until midway.

“Honestly, this really is so gloomy. We have to stay in a country town like this for three days, and there aren’t even any good women.” (Sea Thieves Member)

“Yeah. But this is fine. The cargo moving and sailing preparations finished. We can return to Shiromu in a week.” (Sea Thieves Member)

“And besides, we had a big job this time. I’m looking forward to going back.” (Sea Thieves Member)

“Everything is thanks to Jeed-aniki.” (Sea Thieves Member)

“Yeah, with Jeed-aniki on our side, we aren’t scared of any pirates, thieves or even different races.” (Sea Thieves Member)

“Ahhhh, I’m so backed up, I wanna go back already and release it all. Jeed-aniki would probably get mad if I make a move on one of the goods.” (Sea Thieves Member)

“Well, don’t worry, we can do whatever we want at Shiromu in a week’s time. Hyahahahahaha!” (Sea Thieves Member)

Even though it’s still daytime, those guys suddenly started partying. Like, you guys look exactly like pirates and thieves though. Ura and Farga are looking at those guys with sidelong glances and obviously displeased faces, but they better not succumb to their strange sense of justice. No, that prediction was correct.

“Dad, I finished sorting the warehouse.”

“I helped too~.”

A young girl that’s around the same age as me or a bit older, and a girl that seemed like her younger sister, that’s around 12~13 opened the door of the store and came in.

The girl around my age is wearing simple, cheap clothes, has slightly long, chestnut-coloured hair, and rather than cute, she’s beautiful.

“Oh.” (Sea Thieves Member)

“He~.” (Sea Thieves Member)

The moment they saw her, the men from the commerce guild stopped their eyes, and I could see vulgar smiles with drool.

“Ha! You, you guys, don’t come inside!” (Store owner)

Their father, the store owner, shouts in a panic, but it was already too late.

The men suddenly grasped the hands of the girl, and forcefully pulls her to their seats.

“What do you know, there are some decent woman here after all.” (Sea Thieves Member)

“Kyaaa! Wait, wha, what are you doing!” (Daughter)

“Hyuu, energetic ones are nice~, her chest is, oh, soft!” (Sea Thieves Member)

“Eh, noooo, wha, what are you!” (Daughter)

“Ora ora, we’re specially paying money, so at least pour us alcohol. Oh, here give me a bit of service. Her skirt is, hyahah, ta-dah!” (Sea Thieves Member)

“No, don’t tear it, no, noooo!” (Daughter)

That was forceful, and he didn’t have any hesitation.

The men suddenly touched the girl’s chest, teared her clothes and tried to undress her clothes.

For me, that had gotten used to the peaceful Elfarshia Kingdom’s royal capital life, it took quite some time to react.

What are these guys doing?

“Ple, please stop it! Please don’t touch my daughter! I won’t charge you anything, so just my daughter!” (Store owner)

“Oneechan! Oneeechan!” (Younger Daughter)

“Shut up! We’re just borrowing her for a while. It’s not like we’re thinking of taking her life or anything.” (Sea Thieves Member)

The men even sneered at the store owner that’s crying while prostrating himself.

“Now, we might as well just take off everything.” (Sea Thieves Member)

“Nooooo, don’t, noo, help!” (Daughter)

“Ah, I’m going first.” (Sea Thieves Member)

“Fine, then I’m second.” (Sea Thieves Member)

It’s quite uncomfortable looking at this.

It’s enough to make me feel like the period when I was called a delinquent was cute.

But that’s why I somewhat feel pity for them.

These guys aren’t in luck.

“You damn pieces of shit.” (Farga)

See look, you made Farga get mad.

This place is just barely within the Elfarshia Kingdom’s territory, right? So, obviously, that means the girl you guys are trying to attack right now is one of the citizens in this country.

He’s usually a wandering prince that has no interest in the throne, but his love to the country is real, so if you do something like that in front of him.....

“Stop it, you louts!” (Ura)

So you’re reacting too! It was Ura.

Well, as a girl that was raised at a restaurant, I know there’s no way she could overlook it.

Oh boy, a fight, huh.

“The children of a restaurant, are the treasures of the working father. Getting involved with them, means you’re ready to become all bloody, right?” (Ura)

Hey, Ura! Isn’t that a rip-off of the killer phrase I use occasionally!

“Good grief, there’s no helping it. You’re way quicker to violence than I am.” (Velt)

“That’s some damn good timing.” (Farga)

Since there’s no helping it, I decided to go with them.

That being said, Ura alone should be able to instantly kill this many people, but Farga has a face that looks like he wants to punch these guys too.

“What was that~, you..... who do you think you’re talking to with that cheeky mouth!” (Sea Thieves Member)

Uwa~, this is too conventional.

I was surprised when they made a move on the girl without advance notice, but that phrase is way too conventional.

“Kukuku, I don’t know who you are, but you must have some nerve to say that.” (Sea Thieves Member)

“Honestly. To think you don’t even know us, the Sea Thieves.” (Sea Thieves Member)

“Well, they’re probably travelers from some far away country.” (Sea Thieves

Member)

“True. If you were to say the famous people in this country, it would be the five people,『Paladin General』,『Queen War Hero』,『Giant Killing』,『Scarlet Dragon Slayer』, and the『Golden Comet』. The rest are just a gathering of trash peace idiots after all.” (Sea Thieves Member)

That’s unfortunate. This guy wearing a hood is one of those five people. But like, I’m glad that『Remote Control』didn’t come out.

“We have our aniki with us after all~.” (Sea Thieves Member)

It’s useless, these guys aren’t scared at all. Not only Ura and Farga, but it would probably even be an easy win for me too. By just lightly moving this finger, I could use fuwa fuwa panic on all of them.....

“What’s wrong? What are you arguing about?”

At that moment, as if choosing the right timing, one man entered the store. He’s a large, skinhead that’s wearing sleeveless clothes. On his waist, he’s carrying a sword stored in its scabbard.

“Jeed-aniki!” (Sea Thieves Member)

It seems their great aniki has come. This guy is so-so. But I could still probably beat him. Seeing Farga and Ura regularly probably made me like this.

“Kukuku, if it’s a dispute, let me handle it. I just wanted to try out this samurai sword or whatever that the swordswoman demi-human from the day before yesterday was carrying.” (Jeed)

After saying that, the man called Jeed drew the sword from his waist. Since it was quite unusual, I became a bit surprised.

“A Japanese sword, huh. How maniac of you.” (Velt)

The katana could be called a samurai’s synonym. Then, Ura and Farga questioned the words that unintentionally came out of my mouth.

“Oi, stupid younger brother. What is this ‘nihontou’?” (Farga) (TL Note:

Nihontou is Japanese sword in Japanese.)

“Umu, it has quite a beautiful shape, but it’s my first time seeing it.” (Ura)

Eh, seriously? That’s a surprise.

“Hah? Do you guys not know what samurai and Japanese swords are? Unbelievable.” (Velt)

“Like I said, what is that.” (Farga)

“Samurai, are Japan’s olden..... ah.....” (Velt)

At that moment, I realized.

They don’t know what samurai and Japanese swords are? No, of course there’s no way they would know.

After all, samurais and Japanese swords aren’t from this world.

They’re from a different world, where Asakura Ryuuma was in.

Then, why does this skinhead have a Japanese sword.....

“Ehhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhh!!!!” (Velt)

I didn’t think that something like this would happen at the opening of the opening of this journey.

Chapter 41: Unpleasant

I can't hold back my excitement.

I've already forgotten the unpleasant feeling I had from seeing those disgusting people and that scene.

"Oi, bald macho. Where did you get that katana?" (Velt)

I didn't think I would get a hint so quickly.

By the time I realized it, I had become talkative.

"Geh!" (Sea Thieves Member)

"Wha, what is this brat saying to aniki!" (Sea Thieves Member)

"Kukuku, how stupid are you, you're totally dead now." (Sea Thieves Member)

Now now, don't say that.

No one can understand my current feelings. Not even Ura and Farga can.

This feeling is the same feeling I had when I reunited with "ramen" and "karate" in this world.

"Gahahahah! Kid~, that's qui~te an interesting thing you're saying. Do you not even know who my great self is?" (Jeed)

Stupid dialogue is just a waste of time for my current self.

"Fuwa fuwa merry-go-round." (Velt)

"Ah? Wh, what, my body, is." (Jeed)

"Enjoy a hundred circles for now." (Velt)

"Gyaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaa! Wha, what, ey, eyes are, why is my body." (Jeed)

I just floated his body up a bit, and just spun him in a clockwise rotation round and round.

"Wha, aniki! Aniki is!" (Sea Thieves Member)

"Wait, why, what happened, aniki!" (Sea Thieves Member)

"Uwaaaa, it's, it's not stopping! Some, someone stop me-!" (Jeed)

It would be better not to stop him, since I'm spinning him at a high speed like

a spinning top.

Recklessly touching him would just send you flying.

“Ugyaaa!” (Sea Thieves Member)

“Guwaaa.” (Sea Thieves Member)

See.

The underlings got blown off easily.

“Stupid younger brother. Even though you didn’t have that much interest, you were unexpectedly fast to make a move.” (Farga)

“What’s wrong, Velt?” (Ura)

It seems the two noticed my change of state.

But just let me off for now.

Since right now, I’m feeling good.

“Ugee, eye, eyes are spin, ugeee, disgusting.” (Jeed)

At a speed that he wouldn’t lose consciousness, I spun him a hundred times. In exchange for staying awake, the world probably became all flabby, his mind would be spinning, and he probably feels unpleasant.

Even a man with a muscular, big body, is staggering more than a drunkard.

“A, aniki was, thi, this damn brat!” (Sea Thieves Member)

“Kill him!” (Sea Thieves Member)

I told you not to disturb me.

“Fuwa fuwa panic.” (Velt)

By the way, there is a difference between fuwa fuwa merry-go-round and fuwa fuwa panic.

Fuwa fuwa panic is a move to make the opponent lose consciousness in an instant.

By simply moving my finger, all the hoodlums in the tavern fainted in an instant and fell over.

“Uoo, wha, what is this! What did that lad do?” (Shop owner)

“Who? What kind of person is he, sca, scary.” (Daughter)

Ahh, well, I don’t feel like I saved her, but am I irregular enough to make the

woman that was getting attacked, scared of me?

Well, I don't really care though.

Ah, but I can clearly see your panties from your ripped up clothes, so at least hide that.

Since my body is going through puberty, it was somewhat on my mind. By the way, it was a strawberry design.

However, my mind was so full with what was in front of me that my eyes weren't snatched away by the strawberries.

"Yo~, aniki-san. How are you feeling?" (Velt)

"U, da, dastard, who da hell, are you? Wha, what kind of magic did you use."

(Jeed) (TL Note: Mispronouncing words because he spun too many times.)

"Who the hell cares about something like that. Well, while I'm at it, I might as well say that I don't care or know who you asshole are and what kind of business you're running. What I'm interested in, is the katana you're holding."

(Velt)

Drawing the katana from Jeed's waist while his visual point still hasn't settled, I entered the main question while putting the blade against Jeed's face.

"Kuh, what do you want, bastard, are you trying to threaten me?" (Jeed)

"Don't worry, I'm not going to use this, I just want to ask you something." (Velt)

"A, ahh?" (Jeed)

"Where did you get this?" (Velt)

"Hii!" (Jeed)

"If you don't answer, I'll spin you another hundred times." (Velt)

Where did he get it. Who made it. Who thought of it.

There are plenty of things I want to ask.

However,

"I, I don't know! I don't know anything!" (Jeed)

"Fu~nn, then another hundred times it is." (Velt)

"Wa, wait! I'm serious, I seriously don't know anything! That was a weapon the demi-human I fought with the day before yesterday had, and I stole it because it was unusual!" (Jeed)

It was quite a cornered shout. He's probably saying the truth.

Rather, that reminds me, he was saying something like that at the start too. He called it a samurai sword that a demi-human swordswoman had.

“Fu~nn. Then, where is this demi-human swordswoman? Where did you meet her? Like, did you kill her?” (Velt)

“Why, why do I have to say that much to-” (Jeed)

“Fifty times.” (Velt)

“Gugyaaaaaaa, eye, eyes are, uoeeee.” (Jeed)

“Answer me before you get covered in vomit.” (Velt)

“O, okay, I get it, I’ll tell you! It was near the undersea tunnel I passed by the day before yesterday at the old Bolbardie! Since we heard that smuggling ships occasionally appear in the undersea tunnel to get seafood you can’t get near the Demi-human Continent, we went and caught them!” (Jeed)

Bolbardie? That’s quite nostalgic.

The country that Samejima and the others destroyed, huh.

However, this is my first time hearing of the undersea tunnel.

“Wait a minute, hasn’t the undersea tunnel that Bolbardie dug already been sealed up, like the underground, continent tunnel?” (Ura)

“Ura, do you know something about it?” (Velt)

“Yeah. Bolbardie specialized in tunnels. Not only beneath Humanity Continent, they even dug tunnels in the seabed..... no, rather than dug, they made them. Because that extended to the Demon Continent, it became a cause for war against the Vesparda Kingdom.” (Ura)

I see. In other words, they made a tunnel to the Demi-human Continent too. However, if they find out, that would certainly become dangerous.

“I’ve heard of that story too. They did actually seal some, but Bolbardie made them connect everywhere, so to be honest, no one knows all of the tunnels.” (Farga)

I understood from Farga’s words.

Certainly, unsealed tunnels means that no one knows about it.

Since Bolbardie was destroyed, if you use an unknown tunnel, you can get great profits.

Well, Vesparda, that Samejima lead, was faster than anyone, and it seems they

had their eyes on them anyways.

“I see. However, how did hoodlum corps like these guys notice that tunnel and the existences of demi-humans there?” (Velt)

“No, isn’t that why they knew? Stupid younger brother, the information network of a commerce guild is a lot better than you think they are. From behind the scene information, to even information on other races are collected, depending on the money paid. They creep around the ground much more than the management of a country filled with elites, and gain information.” (Farga)

“Ho~, so they gain information through legwork. That’s such a waste, even though they could have become fine businessmen as long as they didn’t work for bad people.” (Velt)

Oops, I derailed form the topic too much. This isn’t the problem, it’s the weapon made by copying a Japanese sword.

“So, where’s that demi-human? Or did you kill her and the others?” (Velt)

“I, I didn’t kill them! All of them, well, ah, um, I failed to catch them.” (Jeed)

His eyes are swimming. This is a lie.

“Fifty times.” (Velt)

“Ple, please, stop, I’m begging you, just that!” (Jeed)

“Then say it. What did you do with them?” (Velt)

“Uuu, tha, that is, um.” (Jeed)

Rather than him telling a lie, this is him not wanting to say something he’s guilty of. That’s how it looks.

Just looking at the cold sweat coming out of Jeed and his eyes, I can somewhat feel that.

He probably didn’t kill them, but the fact that he let them go was a lie.

Then, all I can think of is.....

“Oi, you damn baldie.” (Velt)

“Hi, hii!” (Jeed)

“If I remember correctly, demi-humans and demons sell at a high price in the slave market at Shiromu, right?” (Velt)

“Guh, uuuuu.” (Jeed)

“Especially female, well proportioned people from other races are priceless

treasures with those damn rich pieces of trash that grew tired of human women.” (Velt)

I see, so he doesn’t want to say it.

“I see, so you’ve imprisoned them to sell them, huh.” (Velt)

“You really are a hopeless low life.” (Ura)

“You piece of shit.” (Farga)

What laws do you treat slaves and prisoners of war again?

Well, I’m not interested in that, but if I get careless, I feel like Farga and Ura might kill Jeed.

If eyes that look like they’re looking at garbage waste are pointed at you, it’s scary enough to make you fall from shock.

Sure enough, Jeed became more frightened of the other two, and his body is trembling in a way that looks like it’s jiggling.

Gross.....

However, it would be troubling if he got killed now. Like, rather, I don’t want my friends to kill people so easily.

“Oi, bald macho. Let us investigate your cargo right now. She’s there, right? The owner of this, inside the ship.” (Velt)

“Wa, wa, wait! Please let me off for that! We already messaged the auctioneer that we’ve received demi-humans! There are already a flood of applicants! If I mess this up, I’ll be killed, and you guys won’t be let off so easily either! There are already lots of high rank nobles from various countries giving good deals. If you’re careless, many countries will become your enemy!” (Jeed)

“Isn’t it better than going through something disgusting enough to die right now?” (Velt)

“Don’t, don’t fuck with me! In the first place, slavery is a rule that’s approved by the Humanity Continent!” (Jeed)

Eh, seriously?

I thought slavery was out since it’s a country where they do illegal transactions and have a pleasure quarter, but was I wrong?

When I look back with that kind of face, Farga closes his eyes and nod.

“Certainly. It doesn’t fit well with the Elfarshia Kingdom that’s in such a damn

remote region though. There are also job placement roles for prisoners of war and defeated soldiers.” (Farga)

Job placements, huh. Well, the meaning is probably completely different to Hello Work, but it’s quite a strong culture shock. (TL Note: Hello Work is the name for the Japanese government’s employment service center.)

“Fine, I get it. I can just meet her then. All I’m going to do is ask her a question. I’m not particularly interested in slaves, and I’m not such a softhearted person that would save a demi-human out of pity.” (Velt)

“Velt! Are you seriously saying that?” (Ura)

“Well yeah, I would save you if you were about to be sold, but this time is different. It’s legal, and it’s better than making something troublesome our enemy.” (Velt)

“Tha, that is true, but, u~nn, but I still have complicated feelings about that.” (Ura)

It’s understandable. If Ura had made a single mistake, she might’ve been living such a tragic life too.

Well, I somewhat understand what actions I should be taking as a person, but that’s a Japanese peace idiot’s way of thinking.

As long as this world finds this as common sense, trying to correct that every single time, questioning it, and swinging around my ‘justice’ is foolish.

“Uu, are, are you sure?” All you’re doing is meeting her! Letting her escape, or taking away the slave is-.” (Jeed)

“I won’t do that. I hate demi-humans anyway.” (Velt)

That’s right. I don’t feel like letting them escape, and I don’t feel like saving them.

Of course, that would depend on how important the thing that demi-human is carrying though.

“Ah, while we’re at it, we want to go to the empire, so let us ride the ship until midway.” (Velt)

“Haa?” (Jeed)

For the time being, we’ve gotten a means of transportation, so that should be fine.

Chapter 42: Trauma of demi-humans

From my back, a family calls out to me in the harbor, while I was looking up at the ships and waiting, wondering when we'll depart.

"Um, oniichan, thank you for saving oneechan." (Younger daughter)

"Really, thank you so much." (Daughter)

"I really don't know how to express my gratitude." (Shop Owner)

Although they were afraid of me at the start, probably because they would feel guilty to not thank me, the tavern family is thanking us, but to be honest, I don't feel like I did anything.

I just took action because of my own circumstances.

"Velt. Regardless of your method and real intention, you are being thanked. Why don't you at least wave your hand with a smile?" (Ura)

"I~diot. It's already decided that the only people who can make people happy by waving their hands with a smile, are idols and ikemens." (Velt)

"I, ikemen? Ahh, the word you told me about before, which means someone with a good looking face. If so, there's no problem. For me, there has only been one person since five years ago, which is that word you call ikemen~, or rather, an ikemen to me~, and-." (Ura)

"I think your head's disappointing sometimes." (Velt)

"Let me finish my sentence! Or rather, don't just make an end of it with a brief comment!" (Ura)

Like, it's just embarrassing. To be frank, if I didn't get interested in the Japanese sword that Jeed was holding, I would have left things to Farga and Ura, since those guys would have been instantly killed.

"Say, will you be alright? Riding a ship together with those dangerous people." (Daughter)

The woman I saved asked that while seeming a bit hesitant to ask. Her doting father introduced her to me, saying that she's the most beautiful woman in the port city, according to rumors, and that her name is 『Rita』. To be

honest, I don't think I'll meet her again, so I'll probably forget her name.
Rather, what part of me was this woman looking at? What part of my exchange with Jeed did she see was worrying?

"There's no problem. I'm the most brutal guy in the royal capital's wheat field, you know?" (Velt)

".....?" (Rita)

Ah, crap, did I miss? Her eyes are staring in puzzlement.

"Ahahahahahahaha, oniichan isn't scary at all! He's funny!" (Younger daughter)

I, I was laughed at! By a brat! Moreover, oniichan? Don't fuck with me, the only person that can call me that is Hanabi.

"Fufu, he really is funny!" (Rita)

Why are you laughing too now.

"Sor, sorry. In the shop, I thought you were really amazing and scary, but you are just trying to behave like a scary person." (Rita)

"Ha, haa? Don't fuck with me, oi! I'm-!" (Velt)

"I hope you stay safe. And please, come again. Please let us give you grand service next time." (Rita)

Damn, so lame.

Why are you trying to see me off while smiling so happily like that?

"Come back again, oniichans." (Younger daughter)

No good, this is messing up my mood. Now it looks like we saved them or something. Well, that's not wrong, but that kinda makes me feel uneasy.

"Hmph." (Ura)

"Wait, Ura! Why are you pulling on my ear." (Velt)

"No reason. Just don't be so deredere." (Ura)

"You're the one that told me to be more social though!" (Velt)

Even Ura seems like she's in a bit of a bad mood. Ahhh, so troublesome.

"Fufu, she is pulling her hat over deeply, but I can see that she is a very beautiful person. If you are going to ride a ship with such dangerous people,

make sure to properly protect your lover, okay?” (Rita)

Rita secretly said that to me, but Ura probably heard her voice too, because her displeasure suddenly changed completely, and Ura began humming. Like, she’s not my girlfriend though. Besides, she’s overwhelmingly stronger than me, so there’s no need to worry.

It would be Jeed and the others who get sent to the watery grave after stupidly making a move.

“Oi, you damn shits, what the hell are you talking about. You seem like you’re prepared already, so let’s hurry up and board it.” (Farga)

At that moment, when I looked up, Farga said that while holding onto the ship’s handrail.

There are about fifty crew members in the sailing ship. Since it’s quite a large ship, there shouldn’t be any concerns about the voyage.

“Men, we’re departing! Let’s return to Shiromu!” (Jeed)

“Ooooooh!!” (Sea Thieves Member)

Seeming somewhat unenergetic, Jeed started, and the other commerce guild Sea Thieves middle aged men joined in.

Well, they let me do as I pleased, and even let me ride the ship. It’s inevitable for them to feel down.

“Alright.” (Velt)

“Well then, we should go.” (Ura)

Jumping onto the ship that detached itself from the harbor, we are now traveling through sailing.

In a way, this means that we really are leaving the country.

While holding slight nervousness and curiosity in my chest, we now set off.

“Goodbye!” (Rita)

“Come again, oniichans!” (Younger daughter)

Well, I won’t ever meet her again, but for now, I’ll at least wave my hand. I don’t know what could happen after this, so I’ll have to replenish on some human nature.

“Now then, Jeed, let the others run the ship, and protect your promise.” (Velt)

It's because I need to ready myself for some trauma from now.

"Hmph." (Jeed)

"Now, lead the way." (Velt)

At the deck of the ship, Jeed is making quite a reluctant face because of us three, but a promise is a promise.

Jeed gave up, and gestures us inboard, to guide us.

"Come with me. All the goods are packed in the bottom warehouse." (Jeed)

The ship sways. Pleasant wind blows. The sound of waves is gentle too. Since this ship is usually used as an ocean liner to go to the empire, it's made firmly, and the cleaning is thorough.

And yet, the more I walk inboard, the more my heart creates a stir.

Even Ura, who looks unconcerned, seems somewhat uneasy, and is tightly clutching the hem of my clothes.

Farga doesn't seem to be particularly phased, but I don't know about his inner thoughts.

And then,

"It, it's here." (Jeed)

Jeed stopped in front of the door. He inserts the key into the door, and slowly opens it.

I swallow my saliva and resolve myself too, for the scene beyond that door.

"I'm begging you, save me! I don't want to be a slave!"

"We will never come to the Humanity Continent again!"

"No way, I don't want to be a human's slave! Hey, let us out! Please, return me to my country!"

"Hey, you, save me! Hey, let me out of here! If you let me out, I'll do something good for you, hey! I'll do anything you ask of me!"

"Please, my family is in waiting for me at home! Even I didn't really want to do it, but I had no choice since I need to return my debt!"

Inside, there was a rotten smell and the smell of beasts. Tears, screams, and begs.

Demi-humans had their hands and feet binded, inside small, cage-like pens. The majority of them have human bodies, while having partial characteristics or organs of animals, and there are many diverse races.

Cats, foxes, and men with rabbit ears and noses, wrapped in worn out, dirty cloths. No, would it be more correct to call them males?

And similarly, there are also slightly young females, with voluptuous appearances.

“-” (Velt)

Damn, I feel nauseous in lots of different ways.

I’m begging you, don’t look at me with those kinds of eyes.

However, I need to make sure they don’t notice my nausea.

If I get flustered, Jeed would probably sense my weakness after all.

“Are these guys demi-human parents?” (Farga)

“Ye, yeah. These workers were secretly fishing in the Humanity Continent’s sea.” (Jeed)

Farga calmly asked that while looking at the shouting males in the pen.

“By the way, females are mixed in so that problems don’t occur during the long voyage, so uh, putting in『those types of women』seems to be part of the demi-humans’ culture. Especially since the energy of demi-humans in their mating season is way too dangerous.” (Jeed)

“I see. So there’s nothing to criticize about this situation of getting demi-humans slaves. That’s fucking disgusting.” (Farga)

Only for this, I have the exact same feelings as Farga.

But rather than just feeling disgusted, in my case, I might actually vomit.

“It’s not that hygienic. What about taking baths? Are you properly giving them meals? Their cheeks are slightly hollow! There are women there too, you know?” (Ura)

“Wa, wait, even we won’t let the goods die. Just, we don’t know what food to give to these guys that would give them stamina.” (Jeed)

It’s fine already, I don’t want to hear anymore, and I want to leave this place as fast as possible.

I’ll just hurry up and get through with my objective.

“Oi, so where’s that swordswoman?” (Velt)

“O, ooh. That’s right. She’s in a pen at the back. So that she doesn’t struggle, I restrained her tightly.” (Jeed)

In front of us, who advanced to the back, was a slightly bigger and different pen to the others.

“There were actually three people, but two of them ran away, and so now she’s the only one left.” (Jeed)

Inside, a girl whose limbs were locked up and had a gag stuffed in her mouth, was rolling around in the pen, stark naked.

She’s quite young. Probably a bit younger than Ura and my age.

“Outrageous! She’s still a young girl! Do you not even have the compassion to let her wear a single piece of clothing, you low life!” (Ura)

“Hii, there, there’s no helping it! She was hiding weapons and stuff! Bu, but, she’s an important merchandise, and virgins sell at a super high price, so we haven’t made a move on her! I’m saying the truth!” (Jeed)

“That’s not the problem here! It’s not good, as expected, I can’t endure it!” (Ura)

Immaturity is still remaining on her face.

She’s a girl with long, emerald hair tied up in a ponytail, and tiger ears and tail. No, a female? It doesn’t really matter now though.

“Cut it out, Ura.” (Velt)

“Don’t stop me, Velt!” (Ura)

“Shut up, at least do it after I finish my business!” (Velt)

Even though she can’t talk, she’s looking up at us with eyes filled with hostility.

“Like, why was a swordswoman on a poaching ship though? Furthermore, it was a brat like this.” (Velt)

“It’s to escort the ship.” (Jeed)

“Escort?” (Velt)

“Ye, yeah. But she wasn’t that skilled. In the first place, demi-humans that poach are usually full of people that dream of getting lots of gold in one grab, so they don’t have much money. That’s why they can only hire novice brats to

escort them. The two that ran away were also brats.” (Jeed)

So that’s how it is. Well, to be frank, I don’t care about her skill. The only question I want to ask is why this brat had a katana that resembled a Japanese sword.

“I’ll be talking to her for a bit.” (Velt)

“Ye, yeah. I’ll remove the thing in her mouth right now.....” (Jeed)

“You don’t need to.” (Velt)

“Eh, ehh!” (Jeed)

The mouth gag was binded by a string. I can easily untie a string like that with one fingertip.

While looking down on the slightly surprised brat through the iron bars, I finally ask the question I wanted to ask.

“Are you Japanese?” (Velt)

Now, how will she reply? Farga and Ura’s expressions have question marks on them, but what about this brat?

“What is that nihonjin or whatever! No, rather than something like that, die die you damn filthy human, let me out of here right now! Die!”

She shouted at me with an anger filled expression, but I became slightly disappointed.

It seems it was a miss.

“Tch, is that so. Then, I’ll change the question. Is this katana yours?” (Velt)

“Return it! My samurai sword! A repulsive human shouldn’t be touching it, die die!”

“Shut up. Tiger brat girl, answer my question.” (Velt)

“I have nothing to say to an inferior human! Get me out of here already! I’ll kill you! Die die die die dieeeee!”

Stop putting modifiers on me every single time, like filthy, repulsive, and inferior.

And you’re saying die die too much. Even Asakura Ryuuma hasn’t gone that far either.

“Ah~, we put that mouth gag on her because she was quite loud.” (Jeed)

Well, that would make sense. It's quite irritating to me.
No, calm down. Don't make a fuss over talking with a brat.

"Are you the only one that has a samurai sword?" (Velt)

"Die die die die dieeee!"

"Ah?" (Velt)

I'm annoyed.

"I'll break this katana, you know? I might throw it away." (Velt)

Oh, her face changed.

"Stop it! That is what my grandfather gave me for my birthday, a samurai sword! Stop it, stop it! Dieeeee, just dieee!"

A samurai, huh. Well, they do say a sword is a samurai's life after all.

"Who made this samurai sword? No, whose invention was it?" (Velt)

Now, this is the main question. I don't care about who this girl is. The problem is who designed this katana.

However.....

"I don't know something like that! Dieee! The swordsmen of the country had it since the past after all! What will you do by knowing something like that, diee!"

Is that so. However, in that case, it's turned into a complicated, troublesome situation.

At the very least, this brat doesn't seem to know anything else.

To know the roots of the katana, I'll need to rake up the demi-human's history, or find someone else that's well-informed.

"Good grief, even though I thought I was quite close to the truth, I guess it wouldn't be that simple." (Velt)

"Velt, what's wrong?" (Ura)

"Hmm? Ahh, I've finished my business here, so I'm just going to sleep already." (Velt)

There's no longer any reason to stay here. I feel gross, so I'll just leave already.

“Eh, wha, ehh? Ve, Velt, is that all? Are you fine with just that?” (Ura)

“Oi, stupid younger brother. Even though you put on that much airs, you didn’t learn shit in the end? What the hell are you thinking about. What did you want to know?” (Farga)

“She just didn’t know what I wanted to know. I’m fine now.” (Velt)

It’s understandable for Ura to become perplexed, but there’s no helping it. She really didn’t know anything.

Besides, this brat kinda annoys me, and I feel like hearing the voices of imprisoned demi-humans is going to become a trauma.

In that case, I should get out of here as fast as possible. That’s all I felt.

Hearing that, Jeed let out a relieved breath because I didn’t cause any strange actions.

However,

“You damn human, just watch me!”

As Jeed tries to put the gag back on the brat, she stops my leg as I try to leave.

“Definitely, definitely! Onee will definitely clear away this resentment! At just 15 years of age, onee became a young, genius swordswoman whose name was famous throughout the country! She has enough talent that she’ll be chosen as one of the『Four Heavenly Demi-humans』in the future! Onee will definitely save us.” (TL Note: Onee = elder sister)

Yes yes, is that so. I’m not interested in that.

Well, by the time your onee comes to save you, I won’t be here anymore though.

Without having much interest, I just tried to leave the room like that.

However, at that moment.

“Gyaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaa!!!!” (Sea Thieves Member)

A scream resounded.

It’s from outside.

“It, it’s a demi-human, a demi-human is attacking us!” (Sea Thieves Member)

“Shit, these guys, somewhere, gyaa!” (Sea Thieves Member)

“These guys are the guys that ran away the other day! They brought along a

demi-human helper!” (Sea Thieves Member)

“Hii, hiii, you, you bas, pigya!” (Sea Thieves Member)

“A weapon, weapon, gukya!” (Sea Thieves Member)

The screams of humans that disappear one by one.
By the time I realized it, we were running outside the ship.

At that moment, from the room we just ran out of, I heard the voice of the tiger brat girl.

It was a voice mixed with tears, and relief.

“I’m glad..... those children escaped, and called for help. Besides, this smell..... without a doubt, it’s onee,『Musashi』-onee came!”

My heart pumped.

Chapter 43: Samurai girl

My heart won't hurt even if these guys die.
Rather, I thought it would be fine even if they got caught and beheaded.
However, I had perceived "death" and "life" too simply.

Because of the experience from when I was young, I thought I was already a "human that understood," to a certain extent.
However, now that I see this scenery, my heart feels overwhelmed; the scenery of the Sea Thieves hoodlums rolling on the deck of the ship, bloody and bisected.

"You, you, you guyyyyys! You guys are the brats that ran away the other day!"
(Jeed)

Regardless of personality or the sequence of events, it's understandable for Jeed to raise his voice from seeing the tragic figures of his comrades, who he probably lived with, through joy and sorrow.
However, at a time like that, my eyes were snatched away by the three women standing on top of human blood.

"Musashi-sama! It's this guy, this guy is the head!"
"I don't know the three at the back! But everything will end once we behead this guy!"

Two of them are young children. They look to be around the same age as the captured tiger brat girl.
However, the katana gripped with blood stained hands made my heart excessively discomposed.
Not because brats like these are holding Japanese swords, but because they find killing people extremely normal.

This really is a messed up world that I can't get used to, no matter how many years I stay in it.

"Prepare yourself, you slave trader!"

“Since onesama has come, we won’t lose to you guys anymore!”

There’s one woman standing still behind the two brat swordswomen. With tiger ears and tail, her appearance resembles the tiger brat girl. However, although she called her her onee, she’s still quite young. She’s in the later half of the teens, but she might even be the same age as me.

And those clothes are impressive. A shape that I’ve never seen before in this world.

However, it feels somewhat nostalgic from my past life’s memories, as it seems like “Japanese style” attire.

A black hakama, and a pink haori.

She isn’t holding a Japanese sword in her hands, but for some reason, she has two wooden swords.

“Are you the head of the villains who kidnapped us demi-humans’ brethren?”
(Musashi)

And she’s even using “gozaru”!

“Who the hell are you!” (Jeed)

Ahh, I’m super curious too.

Who is this woman that suddenly appeared like the wind? Then, the woman glared at him with a crisp look.

“I am Musashi Gabbana! From the Demi-human Continent, in the Yamato village of the Furuure country, of the proud tiger race, and a user of the strongest demi-human kenjutsu, 『Miyamoto Kendo』, that my grandfather founded! Also known as Souken Juuko (Dual Sword Beast Tiger) Musashi! I do not have a name for naming myself to villains!” (Musashi) (TL Note: Uses ‘sessha’ for ‘I’)

She gave a completely self introduction. That’s information I haven’t heard of.

“I have come to save my sister, Jubei, and my other demi-human brethren!”
(Musashi)

Furthermore, she introduced herself with hot eyes that look like lumps of quite a straightforward sense of justice.

Rather, that brat who was captured was called Jubei, huh.

“This damn demi-human is an idiot.” (Farga)

“An idiot indeed.” (Ura)

Farga and Ura, it’s understandable for you guys to think like that, but just tolerate it.

She probably is one though.

“How dare you, how dare you do that to my henchmen! I’ll kill you!” (Jeed)

Jeed started running.

To be honest, I had my attention caught by the woman called Musashi, and had a late reaction.

However, I immediately knew at least what would happen in the next moment.

“Stop it, Jeed!” (Velt)

To be frank, he isn’t my friend or anything.

No, let alone that, he’s such a shithead that makes me feel nauseous, and in the corner of my heart, I might have even thought that it would be fine even if he dies.

So, I don’t know why I tried to stop Jeed.

Was I not able to control myself because someone was about to be killed right in front of me? Either way, my response was already too late.

“How foolish. Know that your angry roar of reaping what you sow cannot reach my great cause!” (Musashi)

The two wooden swords relaxedly swayed like a heat haze.

“Miyamoto Kendo, Guren Kaihamen!” (Musashi)

Rather than cutting, that would be called drubbing.

The blow on the top of Jeed’s head even pulverized his trunk, and the pulverized meat was engulfed in flames, disappearing into ashes.

It truly was an instantaneous event.

“This woman!” (Velt)

“..... can do.” (Ura)

“Fuun, she’s good.” (Farga)

As expected of Farga and Ura, who have experience of actual fighting on the

battlefield, they're quick to switch their minds.

Even though Jeed was killed like garbage waste, they had already pointed their caution to Musashi.

On the other hand, I wasn't that calm yet.

"Now, you can leave, you damn slave traders. If you obediently release our brethren, your lives will be saved." (Musashi)

She's underestimating us.

"You damn brat!" (Velt)

By the time I realized it, I had started running towards Musashi.

"S, stupid younger brother!" (Farga)

"You moron! Let's stop him, Farga!" (Ura)

Don't misunderstand. I won't do something worthless like revenge.

Just, this woman looked at me with underestimating eyes.

Eyes that looked like they were looking at garbage waste, like she was at Jeed.

Don't fuck with me.

"Musashi-sama doesn't even need to go against an underling like you!"

"We are your opponents!"

Shut up, you damn brats.

Don't just stand there shining that shiny thing in front of me!

"Out of the way, you damn brats! Fuwa fuwa Moses!" (Velt)

Fuwa fuwa Moses.

A technique that can be used when there's a crowd of people in front of me, as it lifts everyone, and makes a path by blowing away everyone to the sides.

"Eh, wha, what is this?"

"My body just lifted and, kyaa!"

The two noisy brats got blown away very easily, and they both hit their backs on the wall.

"Wha! Ushiwaka! Benkei!" (Musashi)

Again, there are some quite incredible names.

I'm extremely interested in the person that named them, but before that, I can't settle down before doing something about this idiot first.

"Tch, how dare you do that to those girls I treat like younger sisters! Smash slice!" (Musashi)

"Uooh!" (Velt)

Musashi, is fast! She came right up to me in an instant.
I tried to seal her movements with a fuwa fuwa technique, but my aim couldn't settle as she was too fast.
This is bad!

"I will take your life!" (Musashi)

If I get touched, it's over. I'll become just like Jeed.
Fuwa fuwa escape? No good, I won't make it! I would have been able to do it with another second..... damn..... it.....

"Nu!" (Musashi)

At that moment, a scarlet flash of light that looks like the evening sun burst open from Musashi's side.

"I won't let you have my stupid younger brother's life." (Farga)

Uoooo, that was so dangerous, I'm saved!
Farga's spear came in just before Musashi's sword touched me.

"The, these movements, what a polished spear handler!" (Musashi)
"Hou, you evaded it, huh. How agile." (Farga)

Immediately after just barely evading it and jumping to the back, she kicks off of the deck, jumping at Farga.

"You are fast. However, you are not my enemy!" (Musashi)
"Shut it, you damn stray cat. I'll beat you down together with those two fangs of yours." (Farga)

Musashi's dual swords, and Farga's spear cross.
However, the moment Musashi tried to slash at him with her wooden swords, Farga's spear repelled the projecting part of her sword.

"Nu, oh, guh, ho!" (Musashi)

Farga's speed of thrusting over ten times in one lunge, far surpassed a demi-human's physical ability.

"No way! Mu, Musashi-sama can't get close!" (Ushiwaka)

"Who, who is that, spear user! He's making oneesama go on the defensive the whole fight!" (Benkei)

Musashi keeps trying to step in and attack, but she has her hands full with Farga's storm-like spear thrusts.

"This man can do it! For me to not be able to not enter the distance, he must have a frightening amount of skill!" (Musashi)

"Stop crying out so loudly over every single thing." (Farga)

"Guh, nu, oh, wha, you can still raise your speed!?" (Musashi)

"Elfarshia style spearmanship, evening shower." (Farga)

Like the rain, there was no opening. Thrusts get let out in succession at a powerful speed, like a light ray.

Although she tries to just barely block them, Musashi's clothes and body's thin skin gradually gets cut up.

That was the same red blood as a human.

"Kuh, it has been quite a while since I had shed blood." (Musashi)

"Hou. The last time evening shower was handled this well by someone was when I fought with that damn guy from the ten heroes of light." (Farga)

"Although you hold this much strength, performing such inferior acts of slave trading is making your technique cry!" (Musashi)

"Don't make a stupid misunderstanding. However, even if my technique cries or screams, I will conquer power with my own method." (Farga)

The brat swordswomen are surprised by Farga's power, that was far beyond their expectations, but I'm the one that's surprised.

I didn't think there would be someone who could go up against Farga this well.

But well,

"Sorry samurai-san. We aren't knights or samurai, so don't misunderstand this as a duel." (Velt)

Aiming at Musashi, who is completely focused on Farga, I throw my prideful

partner, my expanding and contracting baton.

Of course, she's a master. She sensed the presence of it in an instant, and evaded.

"You, how shrewd!" (Musashi)

My partner gets evaded, and flies into the ocean.

But, her posture collapsed. That's plenty.

"I will erase all enemies that threaten Velt's life." (Ura)

"Wha, when did you!" (Musashi)

You didn't notice, did you? The princess that's approaching from the skies.

"Makyokushin Karate, Mashinkuu (Devil Sky) Axe Kick!" (Ura)

"Guh, Miyamoto Kendo, Immobile Receive!" (Musashi)

She crosses her wooden swords above her head, and receives Ura's axe kick. However, she couldn't receive it perfectly.

With the power of the kick filled with Ura's destructive power, Musashi's legs pierced the floorboards and went down.

"You're good. Although it wasn't perfectly, you defended against my kick."
(Ura)

"What power! Who are you people!" (Musashi)

"However, it's already over." (Velt)

"Wha, what are you..... !" (Musashi)

It was praiseworthy of her to receive it in that posture, but she was completely full of weak spots.

Both her legs are sunk, and she probably can't even move, so she's already too late.

"Goboh!" (Musashi)

A dull sound resounded.

"Gah, ah, u, ah, ga." (Musashu)

Musashi suddenly swayed unsteadily like a drunkard.

My baton had stuck against the back of her head.

"Why, is, thi, this?" (Musashi)

The baton that was thrown outside of the ship after her dodging it, came back like a boomerang with my ability and directly hit the back of Musashi's head, as she completely had her guard down.

Five years ago, one baton was fifty kgs, but now, they each weigh a hundred kgs. Furthermore, if they hit the opponent with centrifugal force and speed, it produces more power than getting run over by a truck.

If that directly hits the back of her defenseless head, even Musashi wouldn't still be fine.

"Wha, thi, what, I, I was, guh....." (Musashi)

"Sleep a bit and be quiet. I'll have you answer a lot of things once you wake up after all." (Velt)

"Guh, re, regret..... however, sp..... sp..... splen, did." (Musashi)

Musashi finally collapsed, falling straight onto the ground.

To be honest, it was dangerous. If I made a single mistake, I would have definitely been killed.

"She was a damn noisy cat." (Farga)

"Rather than that, Velt! Why did you try and get killed so easily! Without Farga, you would have been killed!" (Ura)

"Ye, yeah, I'm sorry. Well, she was quite a lot stronger than I thought she was." (Velt)

However, a win is a win. It would have been quite severe if it was a one on one though.

"Way, no way, no way, no wayyyyyyyy!" (Ushiwaka)

"Oneesamaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaa!" (Benkei)

Well, for now, I guess I'll tie Musashi up so that she won't suddenly try to kill me after waking up.

And well, for the time being, when we land somewhere, I'll go find some land to make a grave for these guys that were killed.....

By the time I realized it, the smell of blood on board once again got on my mind.

Chapter 44: The tiger talks about her trauma

The sea is wide. I thought the sun was still rising, but before I knew it, it had gone down.

However, the waves are still gentle, and the ship is advancing without a problem.

The problem was inside the ship.

“A wooden sword, huh. That’s nostalgic.” (Velt)

I’ve touched a wooden sword a lot, and no matter how you look at it, this is one.

They were used a lot in fights during Asakura Ryuuma’s age, but I haven’t seen one ever since I became Velt Jeeha.

I tried asking Farga and Ura about it, but they don’t seem to know.

In that case, who invented this wooden sword and that Japanese sword-like katana? The answer was mostly out already.

“Uu~, nn~, grandfather~, guh~, guh~.” (Musashi)

That being said, even though she easily killed humans, what’s up with this carefree sleeping face?

“Ha, haha, how adorable.” (Ura)

“This damn cat.” (Farga)

“Is, is this the person that almost killed me before?” (Velt)

Is she a cat curling up in a kotatsu? Although she seems to be the same age as I am, 15 years old, when she relaxes, she completely turns into a brat.

She had fainted, but seeing Musashi curl herself up while being fast asleep, gives my heart mixed feelings.

“Tch, wake up already, you tiger girl.” (Velt)

“Agyah!” (Musashi)

We restrained both her hands and feet with a lock and left her in a pen, but since she isn’t waking up at all, I nudged her head with a wooden sword.

“You, you bastard, die die die die die! Of all people, you’re hitting onee!”
(Jubei)

“How cruel of you to poke Musashi-sama’s head!” (Ushiwaka)

“As long as she just gets her katana back, she can easily kill you humans!”
(Benkei)

With all three of them together, the brats became unnecessarily loud. Although Ura put on clothes for Jubei, who was naked, we confiscated their katanas and put them all in a pen.

By the way, the people inside the pen with her, is Ushiwaka from the cat race, and Benkei from the fox race. Both of them are 13 years old, and are Musashi’s juniors, while also being people she treats as younger sisters.

“Uu, this, this place is? Nn~, is the meal ready yet?” (Musashi)

I thought she finally woke up, and yet, why is she saying such carefree things.

“Oi.” (Velt)

A cat that just woke up? With a yawn, her ear and tail fur slightly bristled up.

“Nn? Oh~, e~h..... hah!” (Musashi)

However, she gradually regained her awareness, maybe because of the pain from the lump on the back of her head, as she seemed to remember the current situation, and the moment she saw me, she suddenly started screaming from inside the pen.

“You bastaaard! How dare you, how dare you do that to me!” (Musashi)

“Shut up. That was all caused because you guys assaulted us. Rather, didn’t this happen because you demi-humans poached on the human’s territory?” (Velt)

“What are you saying! An inhumane human who stole our territory in the war and treated my brethren below livestock, should not use reason in an argument!” (Musashi)

Ah~, I’m glad she’s in the pen. The conversation isn’t progressing at all.

“How stupid. Go lecture morals and problems between humans and demi-humans or whatever in your own time. I’m not interested in it.” (Velt)

“What are you~! You, because humans like you exist, us demi-humans get persecuted!” (Musashi)

Eyes of resentment towards humans. It kinda seems like she has some special circumstances.

I'm not interested in them though.

Then, while trembling as they saw our exchange, the panicking demi-human prisoners interposed.

"He, hey, is it true that you, you guys aren't slave traders?"

"Um, are you not comrades with Jeed and the Sea Thieves?"

Well, of course they would be concerned about that. After all, since Jeed and the Sea Thieves died, we have the power of their life and death.

"Eh! Were these people not slave traders?" (Musashi)

"No way! Even though these people have such evil looks that are enough to die?" (Jubei)

"That's a lie! These guys are their comrades!" (Ushiwaka)

"What do you plan to do to us!" (Benkei)

So they realized that now, huh. They jumped to the wrong conclusion first after all.

That being said, things aren't so simple that their hearts would forgive us because of that.

"How, however, either way, they are humans! There's no difference to the fact that they are filthy humans!" (Musashi)

"Fu~nn, so that's how it is. Ei." (Velt)

Things aren't so simple. That being said, it kinda annoyed me, so I lightly hit her head with the wooden sword.

"Nu, don't, don't poke me! With my dear sword, to my head, ouch, ouch, ouch, what humiliation! Just because I am unable to move, learn some shame! This is why humans are atrocious!" (Musashi)

"Fu~nn, then, cochocochochochocho." (Velt) (TL Note: Tickling sound)

"Ny, nyaaaa, sto, stop it nya, no, not my sides pleaje nyaa!" (Musashi)

"Kuhahahahahaha, see, this is what you get for cheekily running your mouth at a filthy, great human." (Velt)

O, ooh, it's kinda funny. She's laughing while rolling around as I twist up the wooden sword into her side.

“Dieee, bastard, what’s with that face! Don’t play with Musashi-onee!” (Jubei)
“So cruel! Stop it! If, if you’re going to violate Musashi-sama, then violate me instead!” (Ushiwaka)
“Don’t touch neesama’s body! You filthy human!” (Benkei)
“Velt, you, can’t you do something about how villain-like you are?” (Ura)
“So damn worthless.” (Farga)

In the first place~, I don’t plan to call myself a clean human, but I don’t have a single memory of causing troubles for demi-humans in these fifteen years. Rather, I’m the one that got hates demi-humans. And yet, these guys are just saying whatever they want, lumping us humans all together.

“Ora ora ora, stop crying out nyaa nyaa, it’s so noisy nyaa! Kuhahahahaha!” (Velt)
“Guh, guh, m, my, heart, will definitely not break, from just this much, humiliation nyaaaa, it is ticklish~!” (Musashi)
“A tiger should be roaring, right? Ah~, so funny. Are there any cat teasers around?” (Velt)
“Kuuuu, what humiliation! A human is, a human is!” (Musashi)
“Good grief, you really hate humans don’t you~, did they kill your family or something?” (Velt)
“!” (Musashi)

Oh, her eyes changed.
This is rage.
It seems the words I loosely said touched a part that she really doesn’t want to touch.
No, it’s the same for the midget trio too. They’re glaring at me with quite anger filled eyes.
Well, I’m not interested in that though.

“As if you, as if you would understand!” (Musashi)
“Ahh? What, did something happen?” (Velt)
“Shut it, someone like you, I won’t tell someone like you even if I die! The humiliation we demi-humans received, tragedy, and this anger! Who would tell you! You ask if my family was killed? Don’t just spit that out so easily! Far from

being killed, they were snatched away! By those damn humans!” (Musashi)

You just said it though.

Even though you that you wouldn’t tell me even if you died.

“She’s serious, but she’s an idiot.” (Velt)

“Hey.” (Ura)

From my blind spot, Ura poked my side, telling me to read the atmosphere.

“Do you guys know? The mythical beast races that we demi-humans hold most sacredness to!” (Musashi)

I don’t know. Rather, she just started telling us normally.

This is a troublesome pattern.

“They are not general demi-humans like us, but they are the highest class existences among us demi-humans, that they are even called the descendants of the former perished divine beings. The mermaid race with magical singing voices, the elf race that made the Demi-human Continent lushly green. As a swordswomen who studied Miyamoto Kendo, once I become of age, I will be by the side of someone like them, and spend my entire life protecting them, respecting them as a『lord』. That is our pride!” (Musashi)

Ah, this is a bad development.

After this, she’s probably going to burst into tears, and talk about her trauma from when she was young, isn’t she?

“Uu, uuuu, however, humans, humans! They said something about how mermaid meat has the effect of giving immortality, so they over hunted the sacred mermaids without hesitation, and because elf women have mystical beauty, those damn humans with sexual desire even sold young girls at high prices..... uu, uuuu.” (Musashi)

See look, she cried.

“The elf race in the Kaide forest that is to west of Furryuure, in the Demi-human Continent, were the people that my father served. While being high class, they gave my young self lots of love. However, however! The minute we learnt that the main force of the army will be dispatched to the Divine Being Continent, those damn human Hunters suddenly appeared and marched into

the Demi-human Continent, burned our beautiful forests down, abducted the elves, and cruelly killed my father, that had been resisting!” (Musashi)

And finally, she spoke about everything.

A~ah, she made me listen to a sickening story.

What’s up with this world.

Even though I don’t want to hear a single bit about it, why does every single one of them have to talk about their trauma?

“That’s a shitty story, but it’s not wrong. Elf and mermaid females are being traded for extraordinary prices at Shiromu. Even if they know that the rumor of mermaid meat giving immortality is a superstition, the rarity value of the Mythical Beast races are damn expensive.” (Farga)

“Eh, seriously? Did someone eat one? And like, Farga, you’re a Hunter too, right? Were you not involved with stuff like that?” (Velt)

“So damn worthless. Why would I do something like that, when I’m not even troubled for money?” (Farga)

Well, I guess so.

So that means we don’t really have to feel guilty towards her.

“I don’t really care about something like that, but.” (Velt)

“! You, you bastaaaaaard! You don’t care!?” (Musashi)

“Like I said, I’m not interested in it, and it doesn’t concern me! Like, just hurry up and let me ask my actual question already!” (Velt)

“I, I will kill you, I will kill you! You heartless, worst species!” (Musashi)

Like I said, what are you telling me to do by telling me a story like that! What? Do you want me to prostrate myself and apologize?

“Stop it already, Velt.” (Ura)

“Nu!” (Musashi)

At that moment, Ura grabbed the hem of my clothes.

“Ahh? Why do I have to withdraw! It doesn’t concern me!” (Velt)

“Certainly. However, although only slightly, I understand her feelings.” (Ura)

“Haa?” (Velt)

“Could you leave this to me, Velt?” (Ura)

Understand her feelings? Why's that, do you hate humans too, Ura? Ah, but it wouldn't be weird for Ura to actually hate humans in the inside.....

"Alright. Do what you want." (Velt)

That's true. I didn't realize because we were always together, but humans made her go through something tiring after all.

It does seem like she could advance the conversation.

"You said your name is Musashi, right? I will introduce myself too." (Ura)

"Hmpf, I don't even want to know the name of a filthy human!" (Musashi)

"No, I'm not human. I'm not a demi-human either." (Ura)

Ura talked gently and slowly, so that Musashi would calm down, and then took off the white hat she was using to cover herself.

At that moment, the demi-humans became fascinated by her beautiful face that looked like a work of art, and were speechless.

However, seeing her ear shape and pupil colour, Musashi's whole body trembled in fear.

"Tho, those red eyes! Yo, you are a, demon! A demon!" (Musashi)

"Yeah. I am without a doubt, a demon." (Ura)

"No, no way, no way! Why, why is a demon with a human! Demons are fighting with demi-humans, but they are also fighting humans too!" (Musashi)

Well, it's understandable for her to get surprised.

With an unable to understand expression, Musashi and the other demi-humans' agitation was clear.

"My name is Ura Vesparda. I am from the Vesparda Kingdom, that no longer exists, in the Demon Continent." (Ura)

"Ves..... parda? Wait, that's Demon King Sharkryu's country, which was once called one of the Seven Great Demon King's countries!" (Musashi)

"That's right. They lost to humanity's great allied forces that was lead by a champion called the boy hero at the time, and was destroyed." (Ura)

"!" (Musashi)

It's a story from five years ago, but it seems that incident was famous worldwide too.

Even her, a demi-human, found it jaw dropping.

“Although it was a war, my precious people were snatched away from me. My father, mother, the people that had been close to me since I was young, my country, and everything. Of course, I resented them at the time. I can still recall my resentment towards humans.” (Ura)

“No way, if so, then all the more, why are you with a human!” (Musashi)

“However, in exchange for what I lost, humans gave me many new things too. New happiness, new non blood related family, a rival that I can go against with all my power, and..... my first love in my life.” (Ura)

! A surprise attack! She’s taking me by surprise too many times! Don’t blush there while grasping my hand! I instinctively got shocked and my face is about to get red.

Ah~, that surprised me. It almost showed on my face.

“Of course, I don’t plan to tell you to love humans, or change what you think of Velt. Just, don’t drag in Velt and Farga by lumping all humans together and resenting them.” (Ura)

“Ah, yeah, that! That’s what I wanted to say!” (Velt)

“Since Jeed and the others died, we don’t plan to do anything to you guys. If you say you will no longer harm us, then we will silently release you, and return your swords. Are you fine with that?” (Ura)

Musashi and the others had a perplexed expression from hearing Ura rebuke them.

However, while still looking reluctant to say, Musashi said this.

“As I thought, no, it is not like I cannot understand what you are trying to say. However, even so, I can’t forgive humans.” (Musashi)

Well, their attitude won’t change so easily just because she persuaded them. This is why overly serious people are troublesome. However, it seems Ura’s words had some effect on them.

That being said, it doesn’t matter to me what Musashi thinks of humans, as long as there’s no harm to me.

From the start, there has only been one thing I’m interested in.

“I have one thing to say, which I’m sorry about because it’s insensitive.” (Velt)

“Yes, what is it?” (Musashi)

“Did you know your name ‘Musashi’ is actually the name of a human swordsman?” (Velt)

“What!” (Musashi)

“And, samurai were originally just warriors that lived in a country of humans, you know?” (Velt)

She didn’t know. No, I knew that her and the midget trio didn’t know. The problem is,

“Hey, who’s the guy that thought up the design of this katana, made samurai, and gave you the name ‘Musashi’?” (Velt)

It’s a question I wanted to ask the whole time.
No one knows my aim behind that question.
Musashi also looks like she’s wondering why she’s being asked that.

“That, that is, all, from Jubei’s and my grandfather.....” (Musashi)

“Your grandfather?” (Velt)

“Indeed. Around eight years ago, he was the first samurai that spread the title of ‘samurai’ in my country. The founder of Miyamoto Kendo,『Varnand Gabbana』.” (Musashi)

Varnand. I have no idea of who that could be, but even though something happened a bit earlier, I finally realized it.
I see, I didn’t properly hear it from getting flustered during the fight, but these guys’ kenjutsu is.....

“Miyamoto..... kendo, huh.” (Velt)

There was someone like that.

“Hey, about that old man.” (Velt)

“Yes?” (Musashi)

“Is he quite a slow talker and isn’t very good at talking?” (Velt)

“Wha! Tha, that is, cer, certainly, grandfather is quite a shy person, and he doesn’t speak much.....” (Musashi)

I see.
In that case,

“By the way, does he only say “splendid” when he praises someone, and

always seems to not have much vocabulary other than that?” (Velt)

“Wa, wait a moment! Why, why do you know grandfather’s favourite phrase!”
(Musashi)

Ahh, this feeling is nostalgic.

She has the same face as Ura when I talked to her about Samejima.

“Ve, Velt, what does this mean?” (Ura)

“Stupid younger brother. What are you actually searching for?” (Farga)

I found my answer. I didn’t think I would find someone this quickly.

That being said, grandfather, huh..... it seems I made him wait quite a long time, if he’s already become an old man.

Chapter 45: Hau muchi iz dis

Sorry if I didn't make it clear enough, but basically the title is saying 'how much is this'. ハウマッチイズデイス.

It's almost certain.

Their grandfather, who I've never even met before, is clearly my old friend.

"Oi, where's your grandfather? I want to meet him." (Velt)

"Wha! Don't, don't be stupid! Why does grandfather have to meet a man like you!" (Musashi)

Of course she would ask that. Well, how should I answer her.

He's my friend? They would definitely know it's a lie.

He's my acquaintance? Basically the same thing.

"In the first place, do you even understand how much of a great person grandfather is?" (Musashi)

"Ahh? What, did he do something?" (Velt)

"Hmph, as if I would tell an ignorant and impolite human like you. Grandfather is a great person that brought about reformation to us demi-humans."
(Musashi)

This girl is troublesome. Once again, she said she won't tell me and then talked to me about it herself.

"In the past, demi-humans only showed their wild, conflict instinct, and not only against humans or demons, but even among the demi-humans, days of unending conflict continued. However, the person that spread the demi-human spirit of ethics, morals, manners, etiquette and so on as living things, was my grandfather, who put an end to the conflict between demi-humans forty years ago!" (Musashi)

"Haa? Demi-humans have etiquette~?" (Velt)

"Yes, and he is also the founder of the『Shinsengumi』, which was formed by a

great variety of demi-humans that became an armed insurgent suppression force, that subjugated conflicts within the Demi-human Continent!” (Musashi)

“The shi, shinsengumi, huh.” (Velt)

These brutal people have etiquette?
Moreover, the shinsengumi~?

“I have heard rumours of the shinsengumi, and the demi-human spirit too. Of course, I won’t say all of them, but I heard that there exists demi-humans in certain regions that have a similar spirit to our『Chivalry Spirit』.” (Ura)

“Umu, as expected, a former demon princess would know of it, but that spirit gradually soaked through the demi-human continent, and was able to cultivate the hearts of demi-humans. It’s a spirit that has only been handed down in the demi-human society, but one day, when demi-humans hold hegemony over the world, all living things will know of that great spirit.” (Musashi)

A spirit similar to the chivalry spirit.
Morals? Etiquette?
Are they samurai?
Oi oi, wait, does that mean,

“The demi-human spirit huh~, you’re not going to say it’s the『Bushido Spirit』 or something, right?” (Velt)

“““““Wha!!!!!!””””” (Musashi, Jubei, Ushiwaka, Benkei)

What, so I hit the bull’s eye, huh.

“Wait! Why do you know of us demi-human’s prideful bushido spirit!”
(Musashi)

“And, there’s the culture of performing seppuku if you dishonour that, right?”
(Velt)

“You, what does this mean! Why do you know the traditional way of taking responsibility that’s handed down in miyamoto kendo, sepuuku! Sepuuku is a treasured etiquette that no one knows except for us pupils!” (Musashi)

“Kuhahahahahahahahahahahahahahaha!” (Velt)

There was nothing I could do but to laugh. I’m laughing way too hard.

“Ura, did your old man not tell you anything about this? Karate actually has a

connection with the bushido spirit, you know? Well, I don't know the precise details though." (Velt)

Miyamoto, you weren't a samurai in the edo period, nor did you know any actual samurai.

After reincarnating to another world, I don't know what you were thinking, but why a samurai in a world like this? What kind of life have you been living against beasts like these.

"Velt, what exactly do you know? You're making the same face as the one you had when you met my father." (Ura)

"Stupid younger brother. What happened? You're hiding something we don't know about." (Farga)

It's understandable for those two to become curious about me. But probably only sensei would understand my current feelings.

"Musashi." (Velt)

"Nu?" (Musashi)

"I don't plan on doing something to demi-humans. I'm not interested in war either. But. I am interested in your grandfather. I wanna meet him, no matter what." (Velt)

"Wha, what are you! Why do I have to let the likes of a human meet grandfather!" (Musashi)

"Like I said, I'm not interested in war. So, I don't care even if the other party is a demi-human." (Velt)

"!" (Musashi)

"Well, I probably can't meet him all of a sudden, so I want you to pass on a few words to him. He'll probably understand too. Tell him 'the delinquent that ran together with you in the relay at the athletics festival wants to meet you.'"
(Velt)

Fifteen years for me was long, but he even made a grandchild, so how old would he be? Ah, but since he's become a grandfather, what should I do if he even forgot his memories of his past life? No, I'm sure we'll understand each other.

I have no basis for it, but for some reason, I had that confidence.

However, I didn't notice something, because I was getting too worked up.

"Hmm?" (Farga)

Suddenly, Farga, who was leaning against the cabin wall, realized something.

"What's wrong?" (Velt)

"..... Tch, I didn't realize." (Farga)

"Ha?" (Velt)

"Stupid younger brother, damn demon, this ship is..... surrounded." (Farga)

Even though he said that, I didn't understand.

However, Ura, and Musashi, who's trapped in the cage, sensed it, and their expressions became stiff.

"Wh, who are they!" (Ura)

"Fuh, they better not be reinforcements from those damn demi-humans, right?" (Farga)

"Uwa, so troublesome. Good grief." (Velt)

At a quick pace, we went outboard.

Then, I saw around three ships with quite strange marks drawn on their sails, stopping this ship's advance.

"A picture of a hear, heart mark and a roll of banknotes?" (Velt)

I've never seen something like that before.

A drawing of a roll of banknotes inside a huge heart mark, is their flag.

"That's the flag of the damn Shiromu's auction organization! It's『Heart and Money』's symbol." (Farga)

"What is that straightforward name." (Velt)

"Hmph, so it's a group of trash humans. However, why are they here?" (Ura)

A disturbing atmosphere is in the air from the entry of the unexpected, strange group.

Then, their ship moves right beside the ship we're on, and one sailor shouts at us.

"Ocean liner over there! You guys are the Sea Thieves, right!"

No, we aren't.

“We heard you have a lot of cargo, so we came to accept it!”

Eh, why?

“This time, hearing that virgin demi-humans are going to be auctioned, apparently other guilds are thinking of attacking you guys and stealing them! We don’t want our goods to escape in the confusion, so we came to pick them up this time!”

Wao.

Even though they’re such low lives, they’re dealing with the problem extremely kindly.

“What should we do? We can tell them the sea thieves died, but what should we do about the demi-humans?” (Velt)

“Oi, Velt! You better not be thinking about handing over those children to them, right?” (Ura)

“Oi, you damn demon. I can’t say I don’t understand your feelings of pitying them, but their auction organization is a legal organization that’s been approved of in the Humanity Continent. If you oppose them, you’ll face severe punishment, you know?” (Farga)

“However, Farga!” (Ura)

“Ah~, for the time being, Ura. You wear your hat and stay in the back for a while.” (Velt)

They hung a rope onto the ship we’re riding.

Many men, who have their whole bodies coated in black, boarded the ship. And then, a slightly young man, who seems like their representative, approached us and smiled refreshingly as he decorously corrected his posture.

“Nice to meet you. I am the section chief of love and money’s supply department, Jiel. Best regards.” (Jiel)

Are you a company employee or something. He makes a refreshing smile despite doing a disgusting business, which actually makes me shudder instead.

“Uhh, excuse me, but is Jeed-sama here?” (Jiel)

Then, before I started worrying about how I should answer, Farga dealt with it by taking off his hood.

“Jeed died. He was killed by those damn demi-humans.” (Farga)
“Eh! What does that, wait, huh? Ah, um, are you, possibly!” (Jiel)
“Since we couldn’t ride a ship that’s going to the empire from Stato, Jeed let us ride the ship until midway.” (Farga)
“Ar, are you! Fa, Farga-sama!” (Jiel)
“Hou, so you know about me.” (Farga)

Ooh, as expected of a celebrity.
The refreshing company employee and the men who came in with him became flustered.

And then, although he omitted parts in the middle, Farga explained what happened until now.
Jeed let us ride the ship he was lent.
By the time we realized it, the demi-humans that came to save the cargo killed all of the sea thieves.

“I see, to think Jeed-sama was... However, what about the cargo?” (Jiel)
Rather than Jeed’s death, this guy cares more about the demi-humans, huh.
Then, the guys who came inside the ship of their own accord, came out while carrying pens in groups of people, one by one.

“Jiel-sama! The goods are safe!”
“Ooh, that’s good! Is the showpiece there?” (Jiel)
“Yes, there are even three demi-human children!”
“Ooh, that is wonderful. Even though just one young demi-human girl can be sold for an extremely high price, there are even three of them!” (Jiel)

Demi-humans in pens come out one after the other. Their expressions are filled with despair.

“Nooooo! Save me, please, I don’t want to! I don’t want to be a slave!”
“Hiiii, I’m begging you, let me go! I apologize for poaching! Please, forgive me!”
“Please, please! Let me go back home!”

There’s no way those voice would reach the guys of the auction organization. However, even so, the demi-humans could do nothing but scream.

“Tch, disgusting.” (Velt)

“Kuh, uuu, those guys!” (Ura)

“Be silent, you damn demon. Slave trafficking is something you demons do too.” (Farga)

The auction organization is a legal organization.

And, slavery is recognized in the law.

If there are no problem, these guys can think what they’re doing is normal. I understand that.

However, it doesn’t change the fact that it’s disgusting to me.

“Dieeee! Die die die die die! You human!” (Jubei)

“Uuu~, I don’t like this, I don’t like this.” (Ushiwaka)

“Let me go! Let me go!” (Benkei)

And finally, their pen came out too.

“Gehe, gehehehehe, section chief, there’s no mistake. These three are virgins! They’re 13 years old!”

“Fufufu, that’s fantastic. As always, your smell is on par to demi-humans.” (Jiel)

The three girls, Jubei, Ushiwaka and Benkei.

A drooling, unsightly man, is looking at the three with excited, rough breaths.

“Ah~, there’s no problem for me if the demi-humans are this cute though.”

“You can’t make a move on them. They are going to be showpieces this time.

Well, minister Olband’s son of the Archline empire is the one that won the bid though.” (Jiel)

“Eh~, that rich kid who’s uglier and fatter than I am? Hihhi, how pitiful of these girls. He probably won’t let them escape until their bodies get licked enough to die after all~.”

This is unbelievable, oi.

I can understand feeling nauseous from seeing a human corpse, but to think this would make me feel even more disgusted and nauseous.

Even the noisy three became speechless, and their whole bodies were stiff.

And then,

“Curse you! You damn humans!” (Musashi)

Finally, Musashi was carried in her pen too.

“Oya, who is that demi-human?” Jiel)

“She was strongly arrested in the back. Sniff sniff, ooh! She’s a virgin too!”

“You, you low life! What humiliation!” (Musashi)

You, you can tell from the smell?

“Gehehehe, nice~, from the smell~, hmm, she’s around 15 years old? Uhii~, this is unbearable!”

“Hou, a 15 year old demi-human, huh. That’s nice too. She has a well proportioned figure too. We can expect much from her this time.” (Jiel)

“Uuu~, damn, there’re too many hits this time! I’m getting stimulated, damn it~.”

“Honestly, you really are impatient. Well, it should be fine, since you contributed lots this time.” (Jiel)

“The, then, section chief!”

“Do whatever you want to a demi-human other than these four. If it’s one of the females that were brought out with the fishermen from before, then I don’t really mind.” (Jiel)

Proper use of the carrot and the stick. He’s probably a good boss.
That carrot is so heavy I wouldn’t be able to digest it that easily though.

“Uhh, uhh, hmm~, don’t hesitate~, alright! I’m going with that girl with long hair over there!”

“Wai, eh, what?”

“Get out of the jail. And then, we’ll go to my room.”

“No way! No, I, I don’t want to! I don’t want to! I would rather die than company a human!”

“Don’t struggle. You were shaking your hips for the fishermen on the ship anyways, weren’t you?”

“No, let me go! No, I definitely don’t want tooo!”

Ahh, I don’t like this. I feel like this is going to become another trauma.

“St, stop it! Putting your hands on my brethren is unforgivable!” (Musashi)

Musashi’s must be frustrated.

Blood is oozing out of her lips and her fist that she’s gripping.
But there’s no helping it. You guys lost; you guys got caught.

Even though you at least know what would happen if you get caught, you guys still stepped into the human's territory and lost.

"Bastards, are you bastards that cold-blooded, you damn devils! Do you bastards have no hearts!" (Musashi)

Shut up.

You killed Jeed and the others without even giving them a chance too. This is just the same thing, but the positions have changed. If I made one mistake, I would have been killed, or even trapped in a pen.

That's right. I'm not connected to this.

I have no obligation to help demi-humans out of pity.

For "demi-humans", that is.

"Ura." (Velt)

"What is it....." (Ura)

"Fuh, so scary. You look like you're about to massacre everyone anytime now." (Velt)

"B, be silent, Velt. I don't think..... I can hold it in anymore." (Ura)

Ura's looking down, while letting out a black aura from my back. She looks quite angry.

I can see that she didn't like the way they treated these demi-humans that much.

"Hey, I wanna ask you something." (Velt)

"What is it!" (Ura)

"Ura, have you..... ever done it with a guy before?" (Velt)

"..... Oi." (Ura)

From the best angle and timing, a body blow stuck into me.

"Yo, you, youuuu! What stupid things are you asking at a time like this!" (Ura)

"Guoo, n, no, I was just a bit curious." (Velt)

"I'll seriously kill you! What will you do by knowing that I have no experience! Ahh? I'm going to give it all to you after all!" (Ura)

"Sor, sorry, well, um, yeah, I was just confirming....." (Velt)

"In that case, you can confirm it as much as you want next time in the

bedroom! So thoroughly, that you will never ask such a stupid question again!"
(Ura)

"O, okay, sorry, forgive me. That's reverse sexual harassment, so just calm down." (Velt)

She has an extremely similar face to when Samejima flipped out.
Yeah, I should stop asking Ura unnecessary things.
That body blow just now was truly dangerous. I thought my organs were going to scatter away.

Well, just in case, I guess it's fine since I asked what I wanted to ask.

"Oi, section chief-san!" (Velt)

"Yes?" (Jiel)

"There's something I wanna ask." (Velt)

"What is it?" (Jiel)

I asked Jiel, the refreshing section chief.

"Are demon virgins high price too?" (Velt)

"Demons? Yes, they really are! Furthermore, depending on their appearance, the price will jump up." (Jiel)

"Hmm, then..... how much would she be?" (Velt)

I took off the hat Ura's hiding her head in, and pushed her out in front of Jiel.

"Wha, a de, demon! Whaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaat!" (Jiel)

At that moment, a shock ran through the whole ship.
Shock of the fact that a demon was here. And above all, it was at Ura's appearance.

"Wh, why here, a dem, no, however, she is..... beau, beautiful.....
furthermore, I sense elegance from her too." (Jiel)

"She's the former princess of a certain demon country after all." (Velt)

"Wha, is that true!" (Jiel)

The ship became noisy.

"Velt..... wha, what are you?" (Ura)

And, probably because it was too much of a shock, Ura looked up at me with

eyes that looked like an abandoned puppy.

“Fuh, stupid younger brother. You have such a troublesome personality.”
(Farga)

Ah, but Farga is laughing scornfully with a “I’ve seen through everything” kinda face.

That’s kinda embarrassing.

“Ah, no, my apologies. Is this demon your slave? Well, however, she really is-”
(Jiel)

“I get it, she’s beautiful. And, she has no experience with men. So, how much would she be?” (Velt)

“Ho, how much? However, with this much, u~nn, a demon with this beauty, furthermore, she is a former princess, which is extraordinarily premium..... not one hundred million, or two hundred million, but five hundred million ell. No, ten hundred million, and if she’s lucky, even more.....” (Jiel)

Ten hundred ell. By the way,『Ell』is the common currency in Humanity Continent.

And, one bowl of ramen at sensei’s place is eight hundred ell.

I see.

“Oiiiiiiiiiii!” (Velt)

“Buheh!” (Jiel)

“Ura isn’t an article for sale. How dare you try and put a price to my family, asshole. Unforgivable. I’ll send all of you flying!” (Velt)

Therefore, I hit Jiel.

“Se, section chief!”

“Jiel-sama!”

“This brat, what is he doing!”

“Wha, like, weren’t you the one that asked the price first!?”

“What are you thinking, you brat!”

“Kukuku, stupid younger brother~.” (Farga)

“Velt, you, what are you doing?” (Ura)

Sorry Jiel-san.

You guys aren't wrong about anything by "thinking about it with this world's common sense", but well, you were unlucky.

The world's common sense doesn't matter to a delinquent.

"Fuwa fuwa open." (Velt)

Fuwa fuwa open.

That is a technique to forcefully destroy a lock by twisting it.

"Eh, wai, oi! The pens broke! The lo, lock broke too!"

"Why, wait, oi!"

Kuhahahaha, they're panicking because the demi-human pens broke.

"Yo, you, what are you doing!" (Jiel)

"Ahh? I don't know, I just hit you because you behaved rudely to me, and the pens of the demi-humans randomly broke, so they're just escaping." (Velt)

"Don't fu, do you understand what you are doing! You, even though you are a human, are you going to help demi-humans!?" (Jiel)

"Haa? You're fucking kidding me. Why would I help demi-humans. I'm not interested in doing that." (Velt)

That's right, I'm not trying to help demi-humans, and I have no obligation to do that either.

Instead,

"However, between demi-humans who are fun to tease, and you damn beasts. It should be obvious whose side I'm going to take." (Velt)

"Wha, what!" (Jiel)

Instead, what I'm doing is not a problem.

Then, Ura makes a whole faced smile at my actions and jumps up and down. Because Farga was waiting, he readies his spear.

"Kuku, fufufu, ahahahaha, geez, Velt! You really do have a troublesome personality! You really are too troublesome! You're so troublesome, I love you!" (Ura)

"Hmph, if we send all of these guys flying, this story will spread, and I guess I won't be able to take the throne anymore. That's a good thing." (Farga)

That's right, I don't care about the demi-humans at all.

But,

"You, you guys....." (Musashi)

There's no problem with helping my old friend's granddaughter.

Now, I guess I'll go help my old friend's grandchild, who's making a blank face.

"You damn beasts, come. This great human will discipline you." (Velt)

Miya~ something, you're in my debt, alright?

Chapter 46: The advancing world

To be frank, even though it's a fight I started, I haven't been able to participate much.

"Have you understood the feelings of being put i, a pen, even if it's just a little?" (Ura)

"You guys are so damn disappointing." (Farga)

It was an instant killing.

No, there were no deaths, but with just Ura and Farga, who were fully motivated, they crushed the guys of the auction organization who came to pick up the demi-humans, and then imprisoned them inside pens, as if replacing the demi-humans.

"Prince Farga, do you understand how much of a serious thing this is?" (Jiel)

"Serious thing? Then, what's going to happen?" (Farga)

"The prince of a country personally attacked an auction organization, and even stole the goods, an unforgivable act! If this fact becomes well known, the higher ups of each country will keep an eye on you, no, the Elfarshia Kingdom itself, you know?" (Jiel)

Jiel is glaring at us from inside a pen. On the other hand, Farga wasn't agitated at all.

"Hmph. You're probably excellent in a managerial position, but you're damn insignificant in the battlefield." (Farga)

"Wha, what was that!" (Jiel)

"If this becomes well known? That's only if you guys all safely return, right?" (Farga)

"!" (Jiel)

That atmosphere changed.

Overflowing bloodthirst is coming out of Farga. He looked at Jiel with ice-cold eyes, which I've never basked in before.

“I’m different to my stupid younger brother. My stupid younger brother has a troublesome personality, but he thinks about everything too simply. So, he’s a guy with questionably light responsibility and resolve towards his own actions. However, I’m different. I act even after understanding what kind of situation it will make. Understand that I’ve obviously got that resolve.” (Farga)

Even though they aren’t being pointed at me, I felt such an intimidating air that it still felt terrifying.

It’s not at the level where Jiel, whose main job isn’t a fighter, can endure.

“No, no way, if you start a fight with us, you and your country’s citizens will lose the trust of other countries, and you will not be able to get away with doing that, you know?” Jiel)

“What benefit is there for me to worry about myself and my country’s fate?” (Farga)

“Wha, what are you, no, stop.” (Jiel)

He has serious eyes.

When push comes to shove, Farga might seriously do it.

“Well, just think about the merits, and the meaning of the Humanity Continent going to war against me in return for stealing these damn piss-smelling demi-human brats.” (Farga)

“Uu, uuuu.” (Jiel)

“I’ll teach you exactly the extent of my resolve, that’s enough to drag in other people into my actions.” (Farga)

The one that really doesn’t think about anything when he gets mad might be this guy.

Most people give in before Farga moves though.

“I, I understand! Ple, please forgive me! We will pretend not to know what happened this time!” (Jiel)

“Hmph, that’s fine then.” (Farga)

Jiel is lowering his head and entreating from inside the pen in resignation. It means that the fighting scene he dived down to, was different to Farga in this life abrading negotiation.

“Section chief~, is, is that fine? If we don’t deliver the goods, we will also-.”

“There is no helping it. We have no choice but to report that we were done in by demi-human reinforcements, just like the Sea Thieves.” (Jiel)

In a way, he might have felt deeper fear than just being killed. Anyways, I’m glad Farga is my friend, and similarly to Ura, I’ll need to make sure I don’t anger him too much.

“Now, that just leave you assholes.” (Farga)

After turning his back to Jiel and the others, Farga turns around, and points his line of sight to the demi-humans, who are perplexed from not knowing what to do.

“There are three ships. We’re just going to keep moving forward like this. We’ll give one ship to you damn demi-humans, so just hurry up and go back to the Demi-human Continent.” (Farga)

Well, it’ll be troubling if they stay here, so that might be the best option.

“Eh, ah, is, is it fine for us to leave?” (A demi-human)

“In exchange, we’ll abandon you the next time you get caught by humans. And, if you try doing anything to the Elfarshia Kingdom from now on, I’ll eradicate all of you, without leaving a single one alive. Even if I have to chase you to the ends of the world, that is.” (Farga)

“Hii, hiiii!” (A demi-human)

“Get lost. Don’t ever show yourselves in front of us again.” (Farga)

I wonder how much of an effect this will have.

However, we have no choice but to say this for now.

All I can do is to pray that Farga’s overwhelming coercion will make those demi-humans lose their nerve for the rest of their life.

“I understand. I will not forget this debt of gratitude I have for saving my life, even if you are a human. At the very least, we will not interfere with the Elfarshia Kingdom.” (Musashi)

Musashi, who had become despondent after leaving the pen, sat in a seiza position while lowering her head.

It’s a bit weird though, because I felt Miyamoto must have really instructed her well, since she should have complicated feelings towards humans, but she still

didn't forget her manners.

"I, I tha, thank you, enough to die." (Jubei)

"Thank you, very much." (Ushiwaka)

"I will never forget this debt." (Benkei)

While curling up, the three girls also lowered their heads.

They lost quite a lot of vigour.

Well, I won't say that since retorting and teasing brats is childish.

Well then, that being the case.....

"Oi, Musashi. Do you still remember what I was asking you for before?" (Velt)

"Nu, Ve, Velt." (Musashi)

"You're addressing me without honorifics, huh. Well, I don't mind though. I'm talking about how I was asking you to let me meet your grandfather. I don't need any words of thanks, and I just want you to do that somehow." (Velt)

Since we solved the problem from before, we can move onto the main question.

I got interrupted midway before, but it's about how they should let me meet their grandfather.

"Wa, wait. I asked this before too, but what exactly do you plan to do by meeting grandfather?" (Musashi)

"I'm not going to particularly do anything. I'm just going to talk." (Velt)

"Talk about? This is impolite to do to my benefactor, but as long as I don't know that, I can't really let you meet grandfather!" (Musashi)

Well, that's reasonable. You can't just introduce a human to a hotshot among the demi-humans so easily, much less her own family.

Leaving aside whether she believes me or not, to be honest, putting on airs is annoying, so talking about reincarnation and the like might actually be good. But when I try to talk about that, as expected, her face comes to mind.

"To be honest, I don't mind telling you why I want to meet your grandfather. However, telling you that means I'm telling you about myself, that no one knows about. It's stuff that Farga and Ura don't know either. It's not like it's a secret I have to keep to my grave though, so I don't mind telling you." (Velt)

Even if I tell her, it's not like it's going to influence me in anyway, and it's a worthless, small thing as far as the world is concerned.

But even so, I haven't been able to bring myself to talk about it.

"Musashi. I personally think that I'm quite a troublesome guy." (Velt)

Oi, Ura, Farga, why are you nodding in resignation like that.

"I've been like that since I was a brat. I was troublesome, rebellious, and couldn't be honest with myself. But you know, I don't know what was good about someone like me, and yet there was a girl that said she loved me. That precocious brat was following me around much before I met Ura. Even when I was annoying, even when I stricken with sadness, she always followed me around." (Velt)

Even when I try to talk about when I was Asakura Ryuuma, for some reason, she was the one I thought of straight away.

Forna. My blond haired childhood friend, that I haven't met with in quite a while, flickered in my mind.

"If I'm going to talk about my own secrets, then I want to talk about her first. The order doesn't particularly matter, and I don't know what she thinks of me nowadays, but I just thought it made more sense to talk about her." (Velt)

Even if I say so myself, I really do have a troublesome personality. But there's no helping it.

If I'm going to talk about things other than Asakura Ryuuma, my old friends and sensei, I wanted to talk about Fornia first.

Ura looks the other way, as if slightly sulking, and Farga is being silent with his arms crossed, so I don't know what he's thinking about, but at the very least, I still didn't want to tell these two yet.

And as for Musashi, she's unexpectedly listening to my story with a serious face.

"About that person....." (Musashi)

"Ah?" (Velt)

"Where is she right now? Is she waiting for your return in the country?" (Musashi)

"No. She has a great cause and enough talent, that I'm no match for someone like her. Right now, she's fighting in the Divine Being Continent war. I haven't

met her for so long.” (Velt)

“Then, you don’t even know when you will meet her, no, for a person you don’t even know if you will even meet again, you have continued being faithful!”

(Musashi)

“No, it’s not love or anything, so it’s not about being faithful.” (Velt)

She’s getting her teeth into this awfully strongly.

Did some part of this get on her mind or something?

“Velt. Can you vow?” (Musashi)

“Vow what?” (Velt)

“That you will by no means cause harm to grandfather, even if you meet him.”

(Musashi)

“Hmm, you’re that worried, huh. But sure~, I can perform seppuku or something if I break my promise. If you want, I could make a blood oath, or even kinchou (oath on the sword), like your style.” (Velt)

“Wha, what! To think you even know about kinchou!” (Musashi)

Ooh, she looks quite happy and enthusiastic.

It’s an amazing change from when we first met.

“Yes, I understand! This Musashi will believe you! I will let you meet grandfather.” (Musashi)

“Ohh! I’m grateful for that. By all means, please.” (Velt)

“Umu. In that case, I want us to go to the Demi-human Continent together like this. Grandfather is away right now because of a top secret mission, but I will hide you until he comes back.” (Musashi)

I made a triumphant pose in my mind.

I can meet him.

He’s not Kamino, but I can meet with a guy that knows my “real” self in this world.

“So, around how long will it take for me to meet him?” (Velt)

“It won’t be that long. He should finish the top secret mission by today, so it’s when that ends. Of course, I came to the Humanity Continent to participate in the top secret mission too, but I was asked for help by Ushiwaka, so I separated from the force and came here.” (Musashi)

“Ho~. So what’s this top secret mission you’re on about?” (Velt)

“Ah, sorry! I can’t say that! That is the one thing I cannot say!” (Musashi)

“Kuhaha, well, I guess that makes sense. It’s an absolute secret among the demi-humans after all.” (Velt)

“Umu, sorry. It is a top secret mission, so I cannot tell you that the Shinsengumi is going to attack Shiromu to release their brethren that were captured as slaves.” (Musashi)

..... Hmm?

I feel like all the races in the ship became firm.

“O, onee.” (Jubei)

“Mu, Musashi-sama.....!” (Ushiwaka)

“You, you really are.....” (Benkei)

The midget trio looks shocked too.

“The Shinsengumi is attacking Shiromu to release the slaves? Eh, isn’t that what the top secret mission issss!” (Velt)

“Aaaaaaaaah, wha, what have I doooooooooone!” (Musashi)

This isn’t good. She’s an outrageous fool.

“Yo, you, doesn’t that mean that the demi-human army is invading the Humanity Continent!?” (Velt)

“N, no, it is not something so big like war, and they are only attacking the slave market city Shiromu, so as a military staff, grandfather is.....”
(Musashi)

“Like I said, stop talking so indiscreetly! Like, don’t we need to hurry up and report it to Shiromu as a human, if that’s the case?” (Velt)

“Nuoooo, Ve, Velt, dono, Velt-dono! I beg you, I beg you, make it so you did not hear the contents of that mission right now! The lives of my brethren are on the line, so please overlook it!” (Musashi)

“You fool! If I know that a lot of humans are going to die, there’s no way even I could say it doesn’t concern me and feign ignorance!” (Velt)

As expected, not just me, but Ura and Farga are sweating from their faces since they weren't expecting that.

"Tch, how stupid of me. Thinking about it carefully, those damn midget demi-humans who escaped and went to you to get help and come back to the ship were quite fast. By ship, the Demi-human Continent would have taken several months, and yet, I was careless. So you were near the Humanity Continent to attack Shiromu in the first place, huh." (Farga)

"How could this happen. If that's true, then the war between demi-humans and humans will only intensify." (Ura)

This has certainly turned into a bad situation.
To be honest, I don't plan on getting involved in war, and if they're strangers, I don't care how many people die.
However, as far as I know beforehand that lots of humans will die, I'm not so cold that I can't just say that it doesn't concern me.
I might need to do the minimum amount of things, but.....

"Wa, wait! No matter how skilled you guys are, you will lose your life if you get involved in this case! I beg you, I want you to please be silent and endure it." (Musashi)

"E, even if you tell me that~, like, is the Shinsengumi strong? Are they large in number? To be honest, I've never heard of them before. Ura and Farga don't know them either, right?" (Velt)

"We, well, their name is not well known, since their main occupation was to subjugate riots in the Demi-human, instead of being dispatched to the Divine Being Continent, but their strength is the real thing." (Musashi)

"Tch, a battle force that the world doesn't know, huh. Well, they'd be just right for an assault. By the way, how many are there?" (Farga)

"A, around, fifty thousand." (Musashi)

No good, she doesn't get it.

"Fifty thousand, huh. It's not enough to take down a country, but it's plenty to attack one town with a surprise attack. Not to mention, Shiromu isn't a country that's strong enough to go to war. Damn it." (Farga)

“Umu. Furthermore, the current Humanity Continent’s leading fighting power, is in the empire or the Divine Being Continent, as part of humanity’s great allied forces. I do not know the strength of the Shinsengumi or whatever, but because of the general leading them, it might be an instant killing.” (Ura)

If Farga and Ura are saying that with serious faces, it’s surely true.
Damn, this is way too hopeless.

“Oi, you damn demi-human. Who’s leading the Shinsengumi or whatever? When push comes to shove, I’ll break his head and do something.” (Farga)

“I don’t want you to ask that! No, you can’t ask that! If I tell you that much, even I will have to sepuuku! Even you are definitely no match for him!”
(Musashi)

“What did you say? I’m no match for him?” (Farga)

Well, I guess there’s no way she would even tell us the person that’s commanding the top secret mission.
But like, Farga is no match for him? Does a person like that exist in this world?

“Yes, even you are no match for one of the『Four Heavenly Demi-human Beasts』, and the new chief of the Shinsengumi,『Esamu Kondou』.” (Musashi)

..... Someone..... silence her.
She went and said it, the word that I didn’t want to hear.....

“Fu~, stupid younger brother, I don’t know about the Shinsengumi or whatever, but I do know the name of that chief well..... ha~, my head hurts like shit.” (Farga)

“Ha~, Velt, I do not know of the Shinsengumi or whatever, but I do know that chief’s name alone..... uu~, how could this happen.” (Ura)

Relax Farga, Ura, even I know that name well.
But like~, an absurdly amazing name came up.
By the way, it’s not like we aren’t raising any voices that much because we got surprised.
It’s just that we became speechless from getting too surprised.

Chapter 47: It can't be helped

As I always stayed in the Elfarshia Kingdom, without participating in war, my knowledge about the outside world was poor. However, even someone like me knows something about demons and demi-humans.

That is, the titles called the『World Big Three Titles』,『Seven Great Demon Kings』,『Four Heavenly Beast Demi-humans』, and『Ten Heroes of Light』.

Seven great countries stand at the summit of the huge Demon Continent. The titles that are given to the demon kings who govern those countries, are given the title『Seven Great Demon Kings』.

In contrast with that, no one properly understands how many countries there are in the Demi-human Continent, where there are a great diversity of races as there are stars in the sky. However, in that kind of society, there's a title given only to the demi-humans that specialize in fighting. That is, the『Four Heavenly Beast Demi-humans』.

The『Ten Heroes of Light』title isn't measured by plain fighting ability. There are cases when that title is given to people by taking the amount of global contributions and achievements that person has. That basically means that there were people who weren't good at fighting, but were chosen because of an invention or because of their achievements as a strategist.

However, the『Four Heavenly Beast Demi-humans』is different. Who is the strongest? It's a simple title given to the four people considered that are considered the strongest.

It truly is a simple, beast-like title, about survival of the fittest.

“Good grief, seriously just give me a break. Getting involved with the four heavenly beasts a few days after leaving the country, like, you're fucking kidding me.” (Velt)

“I have not met one of the Four Heavenly Beast Demi-humans either, but father did always say to his subordinates that you definitely shouldn't fight any of

them alone.” (Ura)

“Damn it. It’s not worth it.” (Farga)

We’re sitting down on the deck of the ship, with our moods sinking
To be honest, I don’t want to get involved with something like that. However, I would feel guilty if I just abandon this.

“If possible, I want you to not get involved with them. You people are my benefactors, and I cannot let my benefactors to head towards almost certain death.” (Musashi)

“Musashi. Are you going to meet up with the Shinsengumi now?” (Velt)

“Hmm? No, I separated from them because I prioritized this more, and I do not plan to return yet.” (Musashi)

Almost certain death, huh. Well I guess that makes sense. To be honest, I feel like I became a bit stronger, but I knew there was no way I could win against those kinds of monsters by seeing Samejima and Gyanza’s strength five years ago.

“We finished preparing our ship.” (Benkei)

“We’re going home.” (Ushiwaka)

From the ship next to us, the midget trio said they’re going to send the released demi-humans to their home.

For the time being, we’re going to split up with these guys here, but then, what will we do?

“Even if we hurry from now, it will take around a week to get to Shiromu. Around the same amount of time to send a letter too. We can’t make it in time anymore. We might as well just tell the neighbouring countries and ask for them to dispatch reinforcements.” (Farga)

“Right. It’s not a situation where we can do something with just three of us. Rather, that is about the only thing we can do.” (Ura)

“Well, I guess so.” (Velt)

Certainly, just as Ura and Farga said, that’s the limit of what we can do. However, before we decided that, voices of grief was raised.

“Wait, please wait!” (Jiel)

They came from Jiel, whose inside a pen, and the other staff members of the auction.

“Um, if that’s true, then does that mean the Four Heavenly Beast Demi-humans are going to attack Shiromu, and drag the country into war?” (Jiel)

Well yeah, probably. We made a small nod.

Then, the colours of Jiel and the auction staff members’ eyes changed, and they let out cries.

“Wait, please wait! In the country, in the country, my wife and son are still there!” (Jiel)

“My girlfriend lives in the castle town, but is that place going to be aimed at too?” (Auction Staff)

“My mum lives in the slums. She’s living on just my allowance, but is that place going to be fine?” (Auction Staff)

Even these guys are humans. Of course, if a person was brought up, then that means they have important people and family.
It’s an obvious fact.

“No, no way, ple, please! Please turn this ship to Shiromu right now! We need to notify them of this truth right away!” (Jiel)

Jiel is panicking, but to be honest, there’s nothing we can do about this situation.

“It’s impossible. According to the damn demi-humans, the Shinsengumi’s attack will be in three days from now. No matter how fast we go from here to Shiromu, it will take one week.” (Farga)

“Even so, even so, I can’t just silently do nothing! You people have a country and family to return to, don’t you! Please understand our feelings!” (Jiel)

At that moment, we honestly had quite complicated feelings.
That’s not because we could understand their feelings.
It’s because,

“Do, don’t selfishly, don’t selfishly ask something like that!” (Musashi)

We were thinking what Musashi just shouted out.

“How many demi-humans have you humans hurt like that! The demi-humans you people kidnapped, sold off, and continued disgracing, also should have had countries and families! Have you people heard those screams?” (Musashi)

Well, it’s understandable for Musashi to think that way. This is ultimately retribution, but the words from Jiel and the others are selfish.

“Even if you say something like that to us, we were just ordered to do that!” (Auction Staff)

“Tha, that’s right! We just had no choice but to do it to survive!” (Auction Staff)

“Rather, we were giving jobs to the demi-humans that should have been executed on the spot!” (Auction Staff)

Uwao. They’re becoming defiant.

No, or rather..... they’ve been like that since before.

“Just stop, Musashi. There’s no point talking to these guys.” (Velt)

“Velt-dono!” (Musashi)

“After all, these guys don’t think making demi-humans into slaves or selling them is a bad thing. It can’t be helped, since the human culture and laws are like that.” (Velt)

A person has no money, so they reluctantly dye their hands in crime. People know killing people is bad, but for war, and to stop criminals, they reluctantly kill.

Those sorts of stories where they “reluctantly” do it, happens often.

However, these guys have been like that since before.

Since they grew up in a country where slavery is obvious, they aren’t actually aware of whether that’s a good thing or a bad thing.

So, it means that there’s no point telling them.

In Asakura Ryuuma’s age, there were people in high positions that wanted all humans to be equal, but there still seemed to be countries where deeply rooted class systems still remained.

“However! However, I cannot just end it here! Rather, on top of not being self-aware, they are asking for their families to be saved? There should be a limit to insulting demi-humans!” (Musashi)

Of course there’s no way she could consent with that.

Then, what was in the wrong? Humans? Demi-humans? Demons? War? There's no way we would know something like that. It's because not only me, but everyone in this world has their own say.

So, they need to come to a clear solution somewhere.

But, they can't. And by repeating that, this current age was created.

"That's true. It really is." (Velt)

"Velt-dono?" (Musashi)

"I wonder what Samejima and Miyamoto were holding in their arms in this world, and what they were trying to change in their lives." (Velt)

It really is just as she said.

As of now, I think stimulus should just eat shit. What are we, who lived peace complacent, stupid, but fun high school days, supposed to do in this world. I can't do anything. And like, I'm not interested either.

Despite that, Samejima and Miyamoto both tried to change something.

"Happily reuniting and reminiscing together. It might not turn out to be such a too good to be true story. My expectations might have been too naive." (Velt)

"Velt-dono?" (Musashi)

"Hey, Musashi. Tell me one thing. What does your grandfather think about humans?" (Velt)

Samejima was reborn as a demon king, and lived as a demon king. Miyamoto was also reborn, into a demi-human though, and lived as a demi-human.

However, the fact that they used to be human can't be forgotten.

"That is, of course, he does not have good feelings towards them. Grandfather's son, in other words, my father, and the lord they had been serving for generations was killed by humans." (Musashi)

"Fu~nn....." (Velt)

"Just....." (Musashi)

"Hmm? Just?" (Velt)

"Umu, uh, this might just be my wrong impression, but although we hate the humans, grandfather has never spoken about his hatred to humans even once. He felt sadness, but seemed somewhat pained. That is the impression I had." (Musashi)

I see. He might be worrying and suffering.
After all, he can't consult to anyone.

"So you can't honestly speak of your hatred to humans, huh. Well of course you can't, since you're a human too. There's no way you could say that." (Velt)

He hates humans, but on the other hand, he was one of the humans in question in his past life.

"It can't be helped. I guess we'll go to Shiromu." (Velt)

Thinking that, I naturally said that.

"Wha?" (Farga)

"Velt, are you insane!?" (Ura)

"Velt-dono!" (Musashi)

Yeah, even I know it's a stupid thought.
But,

"I'm not sure of it, but I feel like I'll regret it if I don't go now. There might not be anything I can do, but I feel like I can't stay like this." (Velt)

If I don't go, I won't see anything, and I won't know anything either.

"Oi, I'm just going to say this, but I am absolutely not going for your guys' sake. So, when we reach Shiromu, it's not my fault no matter what happened to your families, okay?" (Velt)

Just to be sure, I reminded Jiel and the others who had deep emotions.

"Oi, stupid younger brother. Are you serious? If you make a mistake, you'll die without a doubt." (Farga)

"Velt, I don't know what happened, but wouldn't it be better to calm yourself a bit more?" (Ura)

I know how stupid what I'm trying to do is.
But it can't be helped, since I've already decided.

"It's not like I'm going to war or anything, and I'm not going to save Shiromu. Just, there's a guy I want to meet with. However, just like you two said, this time is seriously dangerous. So..... I would be happy if you guys could come with me since it's scary." (Velt)

““.....”” (Ura and Farga)

Then, the two smiled wryly as if amazed.

“Hmph, you know our personalities well, stupid younger brother.” (Farga)
“Umu. If you said we didn’t need to come since it’s dangerous, I would have sent you flying beyond the horizon.” (Ura)

They had cool faces as they patted my shoulder after saying that.

“Wha, what are you, Velt-dono, are you really fine with that?” (Musashi)
“Yeah. Musashi, what are you gonna do? I don’t mind if you come, but if you’re going home, then jump off the ship quickly. We don’t seem to have much time after all.” (Velt)
“Ho, however!” (Musashi)

Sorry Musashi. I have no time to argue over every single thing with you anymore.

If I decide that I’m doing something, I’ll do it of my own accord.

“Now, here I go! Fuwa fuwa sora fune (airship).” (Velt)

I change the direction of travel.
It’s pointing to Shiromu.

“Kuhahahaha, it’ll take one week to get to Shiromu? That’s by sea, right? However, how about by sky?” (Velt)

I’ll show it to you. My seriousness.

“S, stupid younger brother, when did you!” (Farga)
“Oh, oooh, Velt, you can do this much!” (Ura)
“Wha, wha wha wha wha, what happened! The, the ship is flying in the sky!” (Musashi)
“Wha, what is this!” (Demi-human?)
“Hii, hiiii, mum!” (Auction Staff?)

Regardless of race, the deck was making a commotion.
The midget swordswomen and captured demi-humans that are on the ship heading to the Demi-human Continent by sea, hardened up and stared in wonder.

That reaction is nice~. It was worth going through the trouble.

“Now, let’s go; by group air travel, that no one in this world has accomplished before.” (Velt)

Chapter 48: My clear distinction

Farga said that Shiromu was the world leading mercantile country. To satisfy their desires, wealthy people throughout the world visit it, and scatter money.

In public, it's said to hold developed culture with luxurious and gorgeous scenery, beautiful sculpture-like townscape, where dressed up ladies walk through.

However, behind the scenes in the slums, violence and crimes are everyday events, and it's overflowing with women working as prostitutes.

There are humans that grow fat without doing anything, and there are also humans that became skin and bones as the time of their next meal is beyond their control.

Also, although it's a country inside the Humanity Continent, it's a country that allows the existence of the various races that exist in this world.

Of course, only their existence is allowed, and the races other than humans have no rights given to them, just treated as objects.

A country that consists of this world's heaven and hell. That is, Shiromu..... is what I heard.

"O, oi, what the hell is going on!" (Velt)

It's been 5 days since I crossed over the sea. Since I've been making it fly quite fast, I was able to reasonably shorten the time.

In our eyes, after finally reaching it, was a shocking scene.

"We were too late, huh. How, however....." (Ura)
"Shiromu is definitely not a country that's strong in battle. However, I heard that just the harbour defences are rigid, as there have been repeated occurrences of pirates attacking trade ships as they entered the harbour."
(Farga)

Farga, don't say something like that after seeing this scene.

I felt unnecessarily terrified.

Blazing up flames, and numbers of completely destroyed buildings.
Even though we're quite distant from the harbour, it still feels painful to breath.
It's filled with the smell of blood and a sea of blood.
I don't even want to see it, but I ended up seeing it; the human corpses floating above sea.

"Farga. Wha, what part of this, was heaven and hell? It's all just hell." (Velt)
"....." (Farga)
"The, the port city fell." (Velt)

There are only human corpses floating above sea. In a way, that means that it was a one-sided massacre.

"Shit, if we enter the harbour like this, those damn demi-humans will notice and attack us. Stupid younger brother, let's go flying with your magic." (Farga)
"Ri, right." (Velt)
"Velt, concentrate. Don't worry, I will protect your life." (Ura)

No, that's not it. The fact that I'm scared and shocked isn't wrong, but what did I come here to do?
Why did we come here and even land, to do?
No good. My head isn't working, and and my heart is wavering.

"I will accompany you. If I am here, even if you encounter the Shinsengumi, we should be able to talk with them." (Musashi)

Musashi patted my shoulder and said that.
Wait, that reminds me, why did she remain with us again?

Ah, oh yeah. The midget trio went home together with the other fishermen to escort them, but just this girl remained.

To be honest, she's a comrade of those damn demi-humans who created this disastrous scene, so she's basically an enemy, and yet, I obediently obeyed her. Pathetic. It's because I wanted as many people together with me as possible.

"Fuwa fuwa aviation." (Velt)

Including Jiel and the others, we all flew in the sky at once, slowly rising up

the harbour's wharf while careful to the maximum degree.

However, I don't sense any presences. The demi-humans have probably already gone far away.

However,

“Uu-!” (Velt)

“Don't look, Velt. You had better not get used to this.” (Ura)

“Tch, damn it.” (Farga)

“.....” (Velt)

I couldn't believe it. They had made a mountain. In the centre of the port city, a mountain made up of piled up humans.

Not a single person was alive.

“Kuh!” (Jiel)

“Oi, Jiel! Where are you assholes going!” (Farga)

“Of course, to our family! We are fine here.” (Jiel)

Jiel and the others jumped out with changed facial expressions. I will definitely not like them, but I at least understood their current mental states.

“Oooi! Anyone, is anyone hereee!” (Jiel)

“Mum! Mum!” (Auction Staff)

Without stopping Jiel and the others, we let them do what they want.

“Everyone was killed. No one remained. Exac, exactly how many people were.....” (Velt)

“Damn it. Even the women and children weren't spared. Oi, you damn demi-human, what part of this is rescuing your brethren. No matter how you look at, this is a war of aggression.” (Farga)

“We, well.” (Musashi)

This is crazy. Like, why am I in a place like this.
What did I come here to do?

“Farga, there is no use criticizing Musashi right now. This is also war.” (Ura)

“Hou, the damn demon is awfully siding with the damn demi-human. Isn't it the same thing as when you assholes destroyed Bolbardie?” (Farga)

“Wha, what did you say! Bastard, there are things you can and can’t say!” (Ura)

“It’s the truth though. Your nerves that make you side with demi-humans in front of this scene is also shit.” (Farga)

“What are you saying! You probably don’t know about war because you are a Hunter, but this kind of disgrace is performed by humans when they invade too!” (Ura)

That being said, it’s full of corpses, and no one’s here. Why? Looters that take advantage of fires could..... no, I guess not.

“Farga..... is the area for wealthy people further in the back?” (Velt)

“Ah?” (Farga)

“If there are no enemies here, then that means they’re aiming for even better places, right?” (Velt)

“..... Probably, yeah. By the way, the slave market and auction venue is past the harbour and in the royal capital.” (Farga)

Which means that scenes like this is going to continue forever, and let alone that, it also means that this moment is going to repeat itself.

“We have to chase after them.” (Velt)

“V, Velt! However, going any further is dangerous.” (Ura)

“Yeah, I know something like that. However, even though I don’t know what I can do even after chasing them, no matter what, something like this definitely shouldn’t happen.” (Velt)

This is war..... Forna..... why did you plunge yourself into a world like this.

“Also, Farga, Ura, you guys better not be fighting too. Who’s going to protect me if you guys fight?” (Velt)

“Tch.....” (Farga)

“Nn, ye, yeah..... sorry.” (Ura)

After getting dragged into the cleaning up fight of Vesparda against humanity’s great allied forces five years ago, I felt like I understood war to a certain extent.

However, this is completely wrong. I can sense the fear in my skin. Is this the feeling of getting invaded?

To be frank, even though I always kept it at a distance because I thought I was unrelated, why did I get involved with it myself?

“Velt-dono.” (Musashi)

“Yeah?” (Velt)

“It is already too late for this country. Even if we chase after them anymore, all it will do is just expose your life to danger.” (Musashi)

“I already know something like that. But still.” (Velt)

“Of course, if you were a knight of this country, someone of humanity’s allied forces, or possible even a warrior that touts justice, then I will not stop you. However, you are none of those, right?” (Musashi)

Musashi asked something that I personally wanted to know about myself. That’s right. Even though I’m not a champion of justice, what am I doing?

“..... Stupid younger brother..... what that damn demi-human is saying has a point. To be honest, even I don’t think I can do something about this situation. Waiting for reinforcements from the empire of the neighbouring countries is smarter.” (Farga)

Yeah, that’s right.

“Velt, I am of the same opinion. We should run away for now. It is not something we should involve ourselves in.” (Ura)

Even I know that that’s the best option.
And yet, what am I doing?
While passing through the mountain of corpses and the mountain of completely broken debris, I asked myself that multiple times.
Then, at that moment.

“Guhahahahahahahahahahahahaha!”

“Hyooooo!”

“Gaooooo!”

“Hiiii!”

“Kyaaaaaa!”

“Hyaaaaaaaaaaaaa!”

The scene I saw after passing through the port city and arriving at the entrance of the castle town, is one I’ll definitely never forget forever.

A world of pandemonium, where screams and laughter interweave.

Not war, but trampling, is occurring.

Demi-humans with similar appearances to Musashi are swinging their katanas to cut up nonresistant humans, stealing, lighting things on fire, and assaulting women.

It was such an aberrant scene that I just became speechless, and I was reflexively about to shout to my heart's content.

However,

“What are you people doing!” (Musashi)

Before I said something, Musashi shouted first.

“Ahh?”

“Who’s that young one~?”

“Oi, which unit are you from! This is our, third unit’s, hunting ground!”

Hunting ground, huh. They’ve completely ignored the original objective.

“Don’t mess around, for the proud Shinsengumi to do such trampling acts, you should be ashamed of yourselves!” (Musashi)

Musashi, it seems you were more of an overly serious lump of justice than I thought.

“Hohou, this wolf race samurai has some nerve to say that to Haajimu Saitou.” (Haajimu)

That means that she’s a rarer type of demi-human among them. Then, are the people laughing in front of us normal demi-humans?

“Heh, don’t act brave, youngster! This isn’t just a brethren rescuing operation! This is revenge! To clear away our resentment by making those damn humans taste it!” (Haajimu)

“Wha, what are you saying!” (Musashi)

“Youngster, you should know. If I remember correctly, you’re Musashi, right? Adviser Varnand’s granddaughter. Even you should have resentment to the humans for your parents and the mythical beast races!” (Haajimu)

“Don, don’t be foolish! What connection does that have to do with this. Are you saying you have no compassion to nonresistant people that have lost their

fighting spirit!? Then, this is just a simple massacre!” (Musashi)

“Exactly. We’re just doing the same thing that the humans did to us! This is the best condolence to cleanse the souls of our lost brethren!” (Haajimu)

Ahh, I see. So the humans did the same thing, huh.

In other words, it’s that.

Humans, demi-humans, and even demons, are all to blame.

“I’ve finally figured it out. So that’s how it is, huh.” (Velt)

“V, Velt-dono?” (Musashi)

“I know why I’m here now.....” (Velt)

There’s no end to it.

“There’s no way I would know what humans, demons, or demi-humans are, what’s justice, what’s evil, or how war is, so there’s no way I could give an answer, no matter how long I think. Even geniuses and champions and heroes around the world don’t know, which is why the war is still going on.” (Velt)

As I thought, I’m not interested in that stuff.

There are people who do these things they’re doing among humans, and it’s the same for demi-humans and demons too.

But among those races, there are people that don’t.

I just coincidentally had a lot of people like that in my surroundings until now, but to me, it’s fine like that.

Therefore, there’s no need to lump the demi-humans together and say they’re all the same, just from looking at the scene in front of me.

That’s why, my objective is different.

“Wait, you! Musashi, isn’t that a human next to you!” (Haajimu)

“Why are you acting together with a human! Did you betray?”

They’re making a racket from screaming so much. It’s too noisy, so I will.

“Fuwa fuwa concert! Shut up for a while.” (Velt)

I floated all the demi-humans I can see, other than Musashi, in the air, and moved them in all directions with my conducting.

“Wha, what is this, my, my body is!”

“Guooo, it, it’s, it’s not stopping!”

“Sto, stop iiit, end iiit!”

“Gueeee, uoeeee.”

An improvised concert in a blazing town. They couldn't make any good sounds, but it was alright.

“Finale. Splendid, right?” (Velt)

After finishing the concert, I could see the blank looking humans and fainted demi-humans in front of me.

I lightly did one bow.

“Ve, Velt-dono, what in the world are you.” (Musashi)

“Stupid younger brother. You were quite angry today, but are you fine now?”
(Farga)

“Velt, you haven't pushed yourself too hard, right?” (Ura)

Yeah, don't worry. I've already realized what I need to do after all.

“Musashi, your grandfather is participating in this, right?” (Velt)

“Ye, yes, but..... of course, grandfather would definitely not forgive this kind of massacre!” (Musashi)

“It's fine. To be honest, I don't really care either way. It's enough for me if I can just know if he came to this country.” (Velt)

“Wha, what do you mean by that?” (Musashi)

Five years ago, I couldn't do anything.

“When my old man and mum were killed, I vowed, that I would live in a way that I won't regret anything. But you know, even so, I've been doing nothing but regretting.” (Velt)

The first regret was of dying, and even in my second life, I regretted the time when my old man and mum died.

Ever since that day, I've been living so that I don't regret something for a third time. But just when I vowed that, that incident occurred.

“Ura, Farga, do you remember? The words I said when we took in Ura five years ago.” (Velt)

“Eh?” (Ura)

“Five years ago? Stupid younger brother, what are you.....” (Farga)

“Until just before, I lost my head and forgot about it.” (Velt)

I finally remembered the words I said at that time.

——I couldn’t do anything! Without being able to listen to what problems he had or what suffering he went through, I didn’t even find out what he thought as he lived! Since I wouldn’t understand even if I listened..... with that kind of reason, I dodged it.

I couldn’t do anything to my close friend that I finally reunited with. And now, it’s been five years since that day. I already decided that the time has come, and went out into the world.

Why did I think the time was right? It’s because I thought I had grown enough to not regret for the third time.

I had completely forgotten that from seeing this gruesome scene for the first time.

“Miyamoto. If you’re here right now, I’ll go meet you right now. If you’re suffering somehow, then I’ll listen to you. If you want me to stop you, I can punch you until you stop. If you want me to save you, then I’ll save you! That’s the reason I’m here. Demi-humans and samurai and war isn’t related to it. That’s my clear distinction, that I couldn’t make when I met Samejima!” (Velt)

That’s the thought I’ve been cultivating for these five years.
Kamino. It seems it’ll take much more time until the day I meet you.

Chapter 49: Taken aback

I didn't come here to save this country.
That's why my eyes didn't get sunk in despair from the scenes I saw on the way.
I simply moved away the swarming demi-humans in front of me.
In the seemingly beautiful townscape engulfed in flames, I just continued running.

"Fuwa fuwa Moses!" (Velt)
"Evening Shower!" (Farga)
"Calamity Roundhouse Kick!" (Ura)

Out of the way, don't stand in front of us right now.
I'm not interested in the demi-humans that became looters who take advantages of fires.
The one I have business with, is adviser-sama who leads these guys.

"What's up with these guys!"
"Get them! We'll show you the power of Shinsengumi's fifth unit!"
"We'll arrest you! And then, sentence you to decapitation!"

Wolf, dog, horse, sheep and other therianthropes who possess characteristic parts of animals while having human bodies, draw and swing their katanas.
However, it was strange.
It felt like even I could win against them, as warriors on a battlefield.

"Fuwa fuwa confiscation!" (Velt)
Fuwa fuwa confiscation. A technique to forcefully float the enemy's weapon, making them let go of it.

"Wha, what is this? My ka, katana, katana suddenly!"
"It's ge, getting pulled up with unbelievable power, guooo!"

A samurai without a sword is powerless.
I'll leave the rest to you two!

"Really, Velt's assist is always accurate." (Ura)

“Hmph, it seems that damn demi-human called Musashi or whatever was one of the strongest people among you guys. So damn fragile.” (Farga)

Well, even with katanas, I still don’t think they can win against Ura and Farga though.

“You know, I thought these Shinsengumi guys were going to be gathered together more, but guess not” (Velt)

“It means they’re scattered about the town. However, in a way, that’s convenient, since the more they’re separated, the less annoying each damn obstacle is.” (Farga)

“So that each unit can steal money and goods or massacre, they must be trying to not overlap with the other units. I guess that means they already have total control over the castle town.” (Ura)

It’s ironic. To think that them beating everyone one up so one sidedly that they’ve already gained total control, is actually more convenient for us.

“Damn it, don’t interrupt us while we’re specially having fun! My great self, the boss of the fourth unit, will kill you!”

“Ahh, shit. Another guy trying to interrupt us.”

“Oh, there’s a woman! There’s a woman too! Guhahahaha, alright, decapitate the men, rape the woman! This is why I can’t get enough of war!”

“You low life!”

“All we’ve been doing is boring subjugations within the continent, but man, the guys in war are so sly, they’re doing these kinds of fun things by themselves after all!”

A boss-like man assaults us with a sword.
To be honest, I just want to tell him to shut up.
However,

“Miyamoto Kendo, Ranran Rangiri!” (Musashi) (TL Note: Blazing Revolt Slice.)

The one tiger, that got ahead and ran through us, pulverised the demi-human rushing on us.

“You are a disgrace of the Shinsengumi!” (Musashi)

That person, is Musashi.

With an expression that shows anger and tears mixed together, she defeated the demi-humans, her brethren and people that are affiliated to the same organization as her.

“Bo, boss!”

“Oi, wait, she’s Musashi!”

“What! The granddaughter of adviser Varnand, and the assistant chief of the first unit?”

“Wait a minute, why is she slicing her allies! Even if she’s the adviser’s granddaughter, that’s still a serious crime!”

“Furthermore, why is she with a human!”

Musashi’s acts got severe criticism from her comrades. Everyone’s voices got together, asking why she’s doing this. However, Musashi’s anger wasn’t settling down.

“Don’t mess around! The outcome of this battle has already been decided! Any more acts of trampling is clearly a violation of rules! Stop it at once!”
(Musashi)

Now what? Hearing Musashi’s words, the guys from the Shinsengumi had blank faces for a moment, and then made obviously unpleasant faces. I know that face.

That, is the unamused, ‘oi, read the mood’ face.

“You’re fucking joking, young girl! That’s a rule used against rebellions among fellow demi-humans, and obviously, it doesn’t apply to humans!”

That’s an irrational argument, but I’m not going to say that. Humans treat demi-human slaves like objects after all.

“It’s fine already. Shut your mouth.” (Musashi)

Except for this woman, that is.

“Fool who has forgotten bushido!” (Musashi)

“!”

“Miyamoto Kendo, Ranken Ranbu!” (Musashi) (TL Note: Revolt Sword Boisterous Dance)

Without even needing us to move them, Musashi, who couldn’t stand it

anymore, made the guys from the Shinsengumi dance in the air, with her revolt sword of anger.

“Are you fine with this? They were your comrades, right?” (Velt)

“Fuuu, fuuu! Fuuu!” (Musashi)

“Hmm, well, I’m not interested, and it doesn’t concern me anyways.” (Velt)

She must have mixed feelings. To this serious, hot blooded woman, samurai and the Shinsengumi are probably her pride. That pride was disgraced by her comrades before her eyes. She’s a woman that can’t stand those kinds of things, huh.

That must be because she was raised splendidly by her parents, and by her teacher.

“Why! Was this not a holy war to release our captured brethren!? Why, why do I have to see a sight like this!” (Musashi)

Now that I’m understanding Musashi a bit more, I can’t help but think that she shouldn’t come here.

I’m the same, since although pathetic, I really do feel glad that I didn’t go to war together with my classmates.

That’s exactly why I want to hear it. Hear what feelings Miyamoto had as he came to a clean decision.

“I need to stop them as fast as possible. I have to tell the truth to grandfather and chief!” (Musashi)

Each of our thoughts are different, but our destination was the same. For now, we’re just running towards the same place, disregarding our races. And then, I saw it. The town square, that seems to be in the centre of the town. Below a broken bronze statue that seemed to be pointing a sword to the sky, there’s a huge tent, and around twenty Shinsengumi members surrounding it.

Next to the tent, a demi-human is sleeping while sitting on a chair, not budging at all, as if he’s a statue, and instead of a kimono, he’s wearing a navy blue, fancy *jinbei. His limbs are thin like withered branches, his eyes are closed, and he has no hair. The only hair I can see is from the tiger ears and tail.

(TL Note: <https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Jinbei>)

No matter how I look at him, he’s a exhausted, old demi-human man.

However, I don't know why, but I intuitively knew.

This guy, is 'him'.

“Oi, isn't that Musashi?”

“It is! What are you doing in a place like this, weren't you going to rescue Jubei?”

Seeing Musashi's figure, the Shinsengumi's eyes pointed at us.

However, I felt like these guys are different to the Shinsengumi people I've met up till now.

They're calm. I got that kind of impression.

“Musashi, what's wrong? Changing your expression like that.”

One demi-human approached her.

He's young, and he has such a medieval face, that I thought he was a woman for a moment before hearing his voice.

“Boss Sorushi Ouki! Jubei, as well as the captured fishermen were all safely rescued, and are returning to the home country together with Ushiwaka and Benkei!” (Musashi)

“Hohou. As expected of you, Musashi. I'm glad your younger sister was safe too.” (Sorushi)

Boss? And then, I suddenly realized. The flag of the Shinsengumi guys here, have a crest and a number written on it.

In this world, that number is 'one'. That means that everyone here is in the same first unit as Musashi.

And, this gentle-looking Sorushi guy, is the boss of the first unit.

“Kukukuku, kuhahahahahaha.” (Velt)

However, I didn't really care about something like that right now.

“Oya, humans? That's surprising. Did you take the surviving humans under your custody?” (Sorushi)

“Ah, that is, they have there circumstances.....” (Musashi)

I unintentionally laughed.

Sorushi, who noticed me, tilted his head, but to be honest, something like that

isn't on my mind.

I just couldn't not laugh from seeing the character written on the Shinsengumi's flag.

"Kuhahahahaha, samurai gathered under the 'sincerity' flag, huh. Do all of you understand the meaning of that?" (Velt)

At that moment, all the races in this place became surprised.

"Oi, stupid younger brother. What does it mean?" (Farga)

"Velt, do you understand what that design-like thing written on that flag means?" (Ura)

"Velt-dono, why do you know the meaning of that flag!" (Musashi)

Why do I know? It's not that I know, I can read it.

After all, 'sincerity' is written in 'kanji' after all.

"Did you design it? Isn't that a complete rip off, Varnand Gabbana-san? No, would it be better if I called you Miyamoto?" (Velt)

At that moment, the old man who was sitting like an ornament and hadn't shown any interest to the fact that we appeared, opened his eyes widely and looked at me.

"You really are young. Who are you?" (Varnand)

His voice that I finally heard, was awfully hoarse and frail.

That small back, and exhausted voice. What kind of outrageous and tiring life have you been living?

"Who..... no, that has already been answered." (Varnand)

"Ahh?" (Velt)

"There are only a limited amount of people that could call me by that name." (Varnand)

An old person's tone. He's gotten so used to it, that it doesn't sound forced at all.

This guy is without a doubt, Miyamoto. But he has already become a demi-human called Varnand.

However, there's one out of place feeling.

That feeling, is because he isn't that surprised.

“I am happy you came to meet me like this.” (Varnand)

“Oi, you aren’t that surprised, huh.” (Velt)

“I am surprised. Just, I don’t feel that this is..... unbelievable, after all. Because, I knew that the people other than myself who died at that field trip, were also born into this world.” (Varnand)

“..... What..... did you say?” (Velt)

He knew? What does that mean? Samejima cried enough to break his demon king character, and yet he knows? Why?

At that moment, I suddenly understood.

That’s right, there could only be one reason why he knew.

“You, have you..... already reunited with other classmates!” (Velt)

To my question, Miyamoto slowly nodded.

“You are the third classmate I have reunited with.” (Varnand)

That’s right, he has already reunited with guys other than me.

That’s why he knew; that we were reborn into this world after dying in that accident.

“Well, what is your name?” (Varnand)

“Asakura Ryuuma.” (Velt)

“..... Ahh..... Asakura-kun..... you, huh, that is nostalgic, eh.....?”
(Varnand)

Good grief, I thought he would be more surprised, but that was disappointing..... is what I thought, but his expression suddenly changed.

“Ahn?” (Velt)

“Asakura, kun? That mischievous guy?” (Varnand)

“Mischievous, huh, that’s quite a lot, oi.” (Velt)

“Ehhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhh! Are you really Asakura-kun?” (Varnand)

“You-, is that the part you’re surprised about!?” (Velt)

“No, like, eh, no way? I thought you hadn’t died, so I completely hadn’t expected you to come!” (Varnand)

“Sorry about that. I died, okay.” (Velt)

“Ah, yeah, um, s, or, sorry.” (Varnand)

“Oi, why did you suddenly become a timid poor talker again! Haven’t you

become someone really amazing right now!” (Velt)

“U, um, yes, umu, um, sorry. Since I was bad with you since the past, I suddenly remembered.” (Varnand)

I thought he was calm, but then his character suddenly broke.

He suddenly stood up from his chair and drew near me.

His eyes that I wasn't sure if they were open or closed, in currently open wide.

“Master? What does this mean? Musashi, he is?” (Sorushi)

“Well, boss. I don't know what is what, um, but grandfather is Velt-dono's acquaintance! I wonder how many years it has been since grandfather became this excited!” (Musashi)

“Mu~, Velt! Talk to us too! What's going on!” (Ura)

“Stupid younger brother, what the hell are you?” (Farga)

Everyone is surprised, but I'm surprised in a different way.

Even though I was thinking of a different reunion, what's up with this exhausted feeling.

Well, there's no helping it since we weren't that close, but it's too subtle.

How subtle is it?

That's..... well, it's enough for our reunion to get overshadowed because what happened afterwards was too shocking.

“Higyuuuuuuuuuuuuuuuuuuuuuu!”

It was too abrupt. In the town square, we heard the high pitched voice of a woman.

We look around us. Then, we realized that source was the huge tent in the centre.

“Higyuu, th, thtop it~!”

“Thtop it alreadyyyy!”

“Th, thish ish my first timeeee! I don't care what happens anymore~!”

It was heavy breathing of multiple women getting excited, seeming to be on the verge of climaxing.

We couldn't close our opened mouths.

And then, we saw; the intense shaking of the huge tent.

And then,

“““““Ahhhhhhh! Esamu-samaaaaaaaa!!”””””

Together with that last cry, it suddenly fell silent, and the creaking tent calmed down.

What? No I mean, I can kinda imagine what was going on inside, but like, seriously, what?

“Gaaahahhahhahhahhahhah! Now I’ve finished treating all the demi-humans that had become prisoners!” (Esamu)

A deep, hearty laughter resounded.

“Uoooooi, is Sorushi thereee! I’ve done all of them nooow!” (Esamu)

While we were staring in puzzlement from suddenly hearing that hearty voice, only Sorushi was able to calmly answer.

“No. From the basement of a noble’s mansion, we discovered around eight slaves, that were from the fish race and dog race. Their hearts are terribly suffering.” (Sorushi)

“Whuaaat, this is why I cannot forgive humans. Bring them to my tent right away! To treat emotional scars, wrapping them up in more love than their trauma is the most effective! I don’t mind whether they are male or female, I will embrace them and give them love!” (Esamu)

“Is that fine? You have already done over thirty people, you know?” (Sorushi)

“I don’t mind! My love is infinite! Ah! Also, I’ll make the four girls I was embracing right now into my wives, so make sure to do the procedures! All of them easily nodded after I proposed to them!” (Esamu)

“Is that fine? How many wives does that make now?” (Sorushi)

“What, I only have six hundred and twenty six! My love will not fade from just this many!” (Esamu)

What is..... this conversation.....

“Hmm? Sniff-sniff. Oooi, Sorushiiii, I smell two male humans and one female demon nearby, but what does that mean!” (Esamu)

Fur, furthermore, he’s kinda amazing!

“Demon? Well, a human acquaintance of master has come right now.”
(Sorushi)

“Whuaaat? An acquaintance of Var? Then, he’s basically a friend to me! I need to greet him!” (Esamu)

In the next moment, the tent was vigorously opened.
And then, the person that came out, was a demi-human with two times the build as mine, whose equipped with steel-like muscles.
His splendid, lion-like mane is fluttering in the air, and there are countless scars on his body and face.
He’s quite old, but he doesn’t look like he’s weakening.
A strong old man that doesn’t know of weakening. That’s the impression I have of him.

However, what I was more curious about, was the smell of women, sweat, and fish that was let out the moment he opened the tent..... not,

“li, kya, kyaaaaaaaaaaa, Ve, Velt!” (Ura)
“Ah~, there there, it must have been scary.” (Velt)
“Wha wha wha wha wha, what is, that, what is that! Uuuuuu~,
*gakugakupurupuru.” (Ura) (TL Note: *Trembling/shivering from fear.)

It was Ura, that reflexively hid behind me with a pale face.....

“Hohou. A girl with a promising future, a lady killer like me, and a youngster with the kind of cheeky eyes I like.” (Esamu)

He greeted me with an imposing pose and a loud voice, but this old man.....

“I am the chief of the Shinsengumi, Esamu Kondou!” (Esamu)

“Wear some cloooooothes!” (Velt)

“Hmm? Ohh, forgot about that. Gaaahahhahhahhahhahhah!” (Esamu)

We were all taken aback from seeing a huge old demi-human’s super full nude.

“Velt-dono, take care. Chief is a personage that goes both ways, male and female.” (Musashi)

Musashi, I didn’t want to hear that kind of information. That’s too scary.

Chapter 50: Reparation for being cheeky

At this moment, my mind might have become weird from being affected by the air and heat on the battlefield.

I couldn't hide my confusion.

"This guy, this guy is!" (Velt)

The inhuman demi-human that created this massacre, after gaining total control over Shiromu.

The nude, perverted demi-human that appeared after relentlessly having sex with females on the battlefield.

And yet, why?

More than how much I felt that I didn't care about anything, I saw this demi-human as a 'man among men,' rather than a 'man'.

"Uhohooooi, Musashi~, what's wrong? Did you bring these guys here?" (Esamu)

He gave the impression of hearty leader of a pack of kids, that became an old geezer, just like that.

That's what I felt towards Esamu, one of the four heavenly beast demi-humans,

"Yes! I am sincerely sorry for causing you trouble by leaving the unit midway." (Musashi)

"Ah~, it's fine, it's fine. Family is important after all. From the looks of it, it seems Jubei was safe." (Esamu)

"Yes, I am grateful for your words!" (Musashi)

Esamu looked at Musashi's appearance, and showed a smile that the neighborhood uncle would show.

"Well, I am aware of the complicated reasons, but because it is a state of emergency, I would like you to listen to my story first." (Musashi)

"Ooh, what's wrong, Musashi! You are basically my grandchild, so I can listen to whatever you want!" (Esamu)

While we had become speechless, Musashi gave a proposal to Esamu with her head lowered.

“I saw that we have already gained total control, and have reached our original objective of releasing our brethren. However, some units are rampaging, and going too far with trampling down on non resisting humans. I would like to directly borrow your power as the chief, and stop it.” (Musashi)

“Eh~, I don’t want to.” (Esamu)

“Yes sir! This Musashi will guide..... heh?” (Musashi)

“Uooooi, Sorushi~, quickly bring the next people that need love!” (Esamu)

Musashi’s eyes turned into dots.

The other Shinsengumi members were uninterested, as if expecting it.

“Chi, chief!” (Musashi)

“What is it, Musashi, do you want me to embrace you because you’re frustrated?” (Esamu)

“Hah? I did, I did not say a single word about something like that! Or rather, chief! Were you listening to me!?” (Musashi)

“Yeah, I was listening~. Rather, I know. Several units are still rampaging, going along with their instincts.” (Esamu)

Because of Esamu’s words that basically said, ‘what about it,’ Musashi became extremely flustered.

“Wha, no, no way, wh, why, we are, the pro, ud, Shinsengumi, so.” (Musashi)

“Yeah, that’s right. We are people that keep bushido within our chests, that hold unwavering belief and pride, like samurai swords, and gather under the flag of sincerity.” (Esamu)

“! The, then, why! Going too far in trampling down, is a violation of our rules! Don’t tell me chief also thinks that that rule doesn’t apply to humans!?” (Musashi)

If you know that much, then why?

Then, Esamu released an intense, intimidating air that overwhelmed the whole place.

“Don’t look down on me, Musashi!” (Esamu)

“!” (Musashi)

“Do you think that I am such an intolerant male?” (Esamu)

It was strange for us too.

Esamu is without a doubt a demi-human, an enemy of humanity, but I did feel that he was tolerant.

Even though he’s a different race, I didn’t think he was the type of guy to do such worthless things.

So then, why? Musashi’s question was a question I wanted to ask too.

Then,

“However, Musashi. This country does not have the slightest worth to be given compassion.” (Esamu)

“Wha, eh?” (Musashi)

“I trembled in fear after coming to this country. Enough to make me think that we have to destroy this country, even if we go mad, that is.” (Esamu)

I sensed feelings of grief from the heavy words Esamu said.

“There were around forty demi-humans that I healed, but from calculating the other demi-humans that were rescued, there were around six hundred.” (Esamu)

“Six hundred? Six hundred, you say. That is a quite the number.....” (Musashi)

“Thinking about this country and the scale of the auction, there should have been a few thousand. If not, we wouldn’t have moved our army towards the Humanity Continent. However, in reality, we could only protect that many. Do you understand the reason for that?” (Esamu)

Reason? Even though they thought there would be a few thousand, the numbers of their brethren didn’t match.

That’s a question that doesn’t even need to be answered.

It’s simple; it’s because they were already gone from this world.

“I didn’t say that all of humanity doesn’t need to be treated compassion. However, I didn’t say we should treat them all with compassion either. This country was their deathbed. This country abused young, demi-human children that had innocent eyes, and wasn’t self-aware that that’s bad. This country

didn't even understand why they resented the demi-humans. That was how wrong they were! Against demi-humans, it's fine to kick them, punch them, kill them, shred them, rape them and play with them. 'Why are we getting killed by demi-humans, even though they're supposed to be that kind of existence?' Every single one of them were making that kind of face!" (Esamu)

Those words made us think about something.

"A country of humanity that's missing something, which was made by reckless thoughts. That is, Shiromu." (Esamu)

It made us think about Jiel and the others from the auction organization. Esamu felt the exact same feelings we had towards them.

"I became convicted. With a lukewarm method of only rescuing our brethren, the humans of this country will definitely repeat the same thing. The ones that will pay that bill, are our future brethren. For this reason, it was necessary to cut off the whole root of evil right now." (Esamu)

"Th, that, how, however, what does that have to do with this meaningless massacre!" (Musashi)

"Since there will be reinforcements from other countries in several days time, even we can't eradicate all the humans in this country. Therefore, we changed our method. We will change the feelings humans have towards demi-humans. Only fear can make them not do something so foolish again." (Esamu)

So that they don't get looked down on again, they etched the consequences onto the bodies and hearts of this country's humans, about what will happen if they get involved with the demi-humans.

I don't know how many rampaging demi-humans in this country are thinking that, but there isn't a single tremor in Esamu's expression.

"Miyamoto. Do you think the same way?" (Velt)

"Asakura-kun." (Varnand)

"Is that the answer you came up with in your second life, before becoming a weak old geezer?" (Velt)

I'm not going to criticize, nor endorse it.

I just wanted to know the thoughts of an old friend who used to grow up in the

same world and in the same environments as me.

Then, with the same weak looking old man's face, Miyamoto hung his head down.

"That's right, Asakura-kun. Are you going to scorn me for that? It seems you were reborn as a human in this world, after all." (Varnand)

"There's no way I would do something like that. I'm not that much of a praiseworthy human to make opinions on others." (Velt)

Miyamoto has the same thoughts as Esamu. Just, the only difference is that Miyamoto clearly looked like it was an opinion he got after suffering and squeezing it out.

Therefore, I couldn't deny this guy who let out an answer after going through that much.

"Before reuniting with you, I met Samejima." (Velt)

"Samejima? Ah, Samejima-kun?" (Varnand)

"Yeah. Demon king Sharkryu. That was his second life." (Velt)

"Sharkryu! Tha, that's one of the Seven Great Demon Kings! Ah, but five years ago, Sharkryu already....." (Varnand)

"That's right. I was the one that watched over his last moments. And, he entrusted his daughter to me, who's right here." (Velt)

"! I, I see, that girl is Samejima-kun's..... I see..... to think he was Sharkryu of all people." (Varnand)

Samejima and Miyamoto are the same.

Even though they understand what it means to kill a human, they couldn't hold it in anymore.

While living a heavy, painful life that's unimaginable to me, they worried, and then gave out an answer after thinking about it.

"Miyamoto. I was living in a lukewarm world far off war. So, to be frank, I don't really know about the unsightliness of humans, demi-humans and demons. As far as I'm concerned, if they just understand each other, different races can be like family to each other, like Ura is to me. I have that kind of peaceful thoughts. By the way, my parents in this world were killed by demi-humans. Obviously, I do want to kill the demi-human that killed them, but it's not like I've thought about anything extreme, about all of the demi-humans in

this world or whatever.” (Velt)

“..... I..... see.....” (Varnand)

“So, Miyamoto. I want to just make this clear. If you make enemies of all humans and as a result, make me lose my important people, you’re my enemy. If that happens, I’m going to mercilessly kill you. But you know, say you’re helplessly suffering, then I’ll hear you out. I’ll do anything that I can. That’s my kind of atonement, since I couldn’t do anything for Samejima.” (Velt)

As always, my position isn’t being made clear.
I go this way and that way, and it’s still unsteady.
It’s just, I want to do what I can.
He currently looks like he’s suffering so much, that it’s painful to watch.

“Since the past, you never tried to get involved with anyone. However, I feel like you have mellowed a bit.” (Varnand)

“H, hmph. A lot of things happened in my lukewarm life, that’s all.” (Velt)

“I see..... I see..... this didn’t become a solution, but I feel like I was slightly saved.” (Varnand)

I feel like Miyamoto smiled just a bit.

“Now. Who are these guys? Did Musashi bring them?” (Esamu)

Then, noticing our conversation, Esamu, who turned his back to Musashi’s entreaty, looked at us.

“Hohou, I haven’t seen your face before, but I’m surprised.” (Esamu)

Looking at us while nude, Esamu first looked at Farga and smiled.

“I know most of the faces and names of humanity’s champion candidates, but to think there was an outstanding talent like you hiding behind the shadows of humanity’s great allied forces and the Ten Heroes of Light.” (Esamu)

He showed an extremely belligerent smile.
With just that, I felt like hot wind struck against my face.
And, he saw through Farga’s power at first sight.

“And then, that beautiful silver haired demon. U~mu, your current power is still at a passing mark, but your talent is bottomless. However, it’s a waste that

you're a virgin. Guwaaahahaha, I would have embraced you if only you weren't the same age as my daughter!" (Esamu)

With sexual harassment at full throttle, he saw through Ura as well. Ura's heart probably broke completely, as she hid behind my back like a small animal.

And then, finally, Esamu looked at me.

However,

"Mmm mmm! U~nn, you're boring." (Esamu)

"Wha!" (Velt)

"Well, all three of you are boring. I thought your combination was interesting though." (Esamu)

Like, he let out a sigh while looking tired. He's making a unbelievably boring face!

"So, Musashi, who are they?" (Esamu)

"Yes sir! They are Velt, Ura, and Farga, who released the demi-humans captured by the slave merchants." (Musashi)

"Hou. Humans and demi-humans are a strange combination, but you're saying they saved demi-humans?" (Esamu)

"Yes! Also, Velt over here is acquainted with grandfather, and wanted to meet him no matter what." (Musashi)

"Hm~m, the most useless looking youngster in this trio did?" (Esamu)

Wha, wai, wait a minute!

"U, uh, since before, you've been calling me worthlessness, but worth, worthlessness doesn't particularly matter, oi!" (Velt)

"Yeah! Worthlessness doesn't matter!" (Esamu)

"Hah?" (Velt)

Before I realized it, I had shouted, but that shout had been drowned out in an instant.

"No matter how worthless a guy is, what's important to a male, is their infinity instinct! People that carry on with life without lying to themselves about strife, sexual desire and ambition, have raging lights in the depths of their eyes! However, youngster, you, no, you three don't have that!" (Esamu)

For some reason, Farga, and Ura, a woman, who were highly praised just before, are both being called worthless.

“I basically have a retired body, but the strong people of the current Divine Being Continent who are in history, all had it, their instinct of definitely not yielding their beliefs, regardless of whether they were enemies or allies! However, no matter how strong you are in battle, no matter how full of talent you are, you guys who don’t have that, stand in a different path to mine after all. Therefore, I’m not interested.” (Esamu)

Why are we suddenly being called worthless by this old geezer we’re meeting for the first time?

“To be acquainted with such a worthless youngster, what does this mean, Var?” (Esamu)

“He is..... an old friend from far, far in the past.” (Varnand)

“Hm~m, a friend, huh? You seem to have lived a past I don’t quite understand too.” (Esamu)

But like, why?

“..... Tch, damn it.” (Farga)

“Tsu-, kuh, ununu.” (Ura)

We couldn’t make a single objection.

Even though we want to pour as much bitter words to him as we can, no words are coming out.

Esamu is bringing about an intimidating air that shows he doesn’t allow us to say anything.

If I were to put it in one word, it might be ‘charisma’.

“However, worthless youngster.” (Esamu)

“Y, you said worthless again!” (Velt)

“Are you dissatisfied?” (Esamu)

“O, obviously! Why do I have to be called worthless by an old, nude geezer that I’m meeting for the first time!” (Velt)

I talked back to him in a tone with my best show of courage.

It would be uncool if my flusteredness was exposed. To try and make myself look big, I cheekily stuck out my opinion.

“Velt-dono! Wha, what have you done!” (Musashi)

“Oh no, that boy. How foolish.”

Starting with Musashi, everyone looked at me as if looking at a fool.

To be honest, I was slightly regretting it too.

However, there’s no way I could back down at this point in time.

I don’t want to be looked down on, and then thought of as a coward, even if it costs my life.

Then,

“Gaaahahhahhahhah! Good, good! Males need to be at least that cheeky!”

(Esamu)

‘.....’ (Velt)

“However, you have some good guts. I thought there were no longer any people that would talk to me so cheekily like that in this world after all.

Normally, you would have died from that, though.” (Esamu)

For some reason, Esamu suddenly broke out into explosive laughter.

Regardless of whether I’m safe or not, my heart is racing.

“Well, you’re Var’s friend. I wouldn’t be so intolerant, to kill you over something like this.” (Esamu)

However, at that moment.

“S, stop it, Esamu!” (Varnand)

Miyamoto suddenly shouted with a changed facial expression.

Why exactly would he.....

“..... Eh.....?” (Velt)

Just for an instant, I felt like wind passed by.

In front of me, Esamu was in a posture that looked like he had swung his hand.

“Ah.....?” (Velt)

At that moment, something reflected in my field of view.

That was.....

“Stu, stupid younger brotheeeeeeeer!” (Farga)

“Ve, Veeeeeeeeeeeeeeelt!” (Ura)

“Velt-donooooooooooooo!” (Musashi)

Ah, these are two arms? Two arms from the elbow fluttered about in the air.
These are.....

“Ah, uwaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaa!” (Velt)

My arms! They were cut off! My arms! My arms! Both my arms!

“Guwaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaa!” (Velt)

Pain pain pain pain pain pain pain pain pain pain pain pain pain pain pain!
Pain pain pain pain pain pain pain pain pain pain pain pain pain pain pain!

“Guwaaahhahhahha! Therefore, I will forgive you with just two arms!” (Esamu)

Pain pain pain pain pain pain pain pain pain pain pain pain pain pain pain
pain!
Pain pain pain pain pain pain pain pain pain pain pain pain pain pain pain!

“Stupid younger brother..... you piece of shit! I, I’ll kill you!” (Farga)
“You bastaaaaaaaaard!” (Ura)

Pain pain pain pain pain pain pain pain pain pain pain pain pain pain pain!

“Guwaaahhahhahhahhahha, now, don’t make such an angry face. Someone of
my skill can.....” (Esamu)

“Do, don’t get close to Velt! I’ll tear you apart!” (Ura)

“Don’t worry, see, if I connect the amputated arms to the openings of the
wounds like this..... see, it’s just like before!” (Esamu)

“! Thi, this is! Res, restore cutting! A miracle caused by cutting the fibres of the
cut end without destroying them..... and that’s with bare hands!” (Ura)

“How is it, have you fallen for me? Oh, gaaahhahhahhahha! Oops! I mixed up his
right and left arm!” (Esamu)

“O..... oi..... bastard.....” (Ura)

“There’s no helping it, I guess I will cut it and stick it together again! There!”
(Esamu)

—————!!!!

“Ahhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhh!” (Velt)

“Guwaaahhahhahhahha, well, I probably won’t hear from his cheeky mouth

anymore.” (Esamu)

—————Pa…… in……

“I willl, I will kill you, you demi-human! How dare you, how dare you do that to Velt!” (Ura)

“I’ll fucking kill you! Die right now!” (Farga)

Stop it…… Ura…… Farga…… you’ll be kill……
ed……

“Hou, you’re coming, huh. Well, that’s fine. I guess I can play with you.”
(Esamu)

No good…… I can’t think…… about anything……

Chapter 51: A first in the history of the world

Going beyond pain, my mind gradually became able to think about things other than the pain.

“Even Farga-dono and Ura..... this is one of the Four Heavenly Beast Demi-humans..... the chief’s strength.” (Musashi)

To punish a brat that got too cocky. Would you cut off my arms because of that?

No, this is just that kind of world; the world that I had always kept at a distance.

“Astral Vortex!” (Farga)

“Gaaahahhahhaha! Ooh, nice thrust!” (Esamu)

“Wha! My astral vortex was, with his bare hands!” (Farga)

“That was better than I thought, youngster. It has been several years since I met a spear user of your caliber. Therefore, it’s disappointing! Once you make unyielding feelings to hit me with, you may come again!” (Esamu)

Is he not a samurai? Farga, who’s said to be one of the strongest in humanity, was sent flying by one kick from a old, nude geezer.

Ura, the daughter of the demon king, became unconscious in one hit, and the outcome was decided in an instant.

“How about it, you little greenhorns. Do you give up?” (Esamu)

No, it wasn’t even a match in the first place.

Miyamoto muttered while on his knees next to me, treating me as I writhe in intense pain.

“Even among the big three titles, Four Heavenly Beast Demi-human is the strongest title. Even if the Ten Heroes of Light all band together, they might not even be able to take them on.” (Varnand)

This is reality. We, who lived in the Elfارشia Kingdom where there were no enemies in the outskirts, are completely unable to compete with him. Even humanity’s strongest Hunter, that consigned a dragon to oblivion, or the

thoroughbred that descends from the demon king.

“Buried ten thousand enemies, overcame ten thousand wars, and has innumerable karma. His name became famous throughout the world and all races. Asakura-kun, that’s the scene you just saw.” (Varnand)

“Mi..... ya..... moto.....” (Velt)

“This isn’t Japan anymore. If you always stay in your high school period mood, then no matter how many souls you have, it still won’t be enough.” (Varnand)

Miyamoto, even if you don’t say it in such a persuading way, I already understand it enough.

I’ve understood something like that since five years ago.

It’s just that right now, my own expectations and power was too inadequate.

“Well then, Sorushi~! It’s time for love! Bring the brethren that need healing to my bedroom!” (Esamu)

He’s not delivering the final blow. No, is he saying that we aren’t even worthy of getting that?

Before, he said that we’re standing in a different path, and so he isn’t interested in us.

Even if he kills us or not, it doesn’t really matter to him.

Ah, I see..... we are..... small fry!

“Kuh, chief! Chief! P, please reconsider! Please, reconsider it!” (Musashi)

“Oh, Musashi. Did you get angry that I teased those youngsters?” (Esamu)

“That’s, no, um, for now, for now, I want you to stop the acts of infringement in this town as fast as possible! With just one word from you, chief, the rampaging units will stop.” (Musashi)

While being concerned about us, Musashi desperately lowers her head to stop the Shinsengumi from rampaging.

But you know, Musashi. Even I can understand.

This old geezer isn’t the type of guy to change his opinion because you lower your head to him.

“Fu~, Musashi. Var made the Shinsengumi, and it’s a proud organization that your parents supported. It’s not like I don’t understand how painful it is for it to be disgraced.” (Esamu)

“The, then!” (Musashi)

“However, just understand, that the one that’s in the most pain, is Var. Even if he has to dirty his own pride, he had to do what he must, to make sure nothing irreversible will happen again.” (Esamu)

Pride might be able to be regained.

However, the lives of your lost brethren will definitely not come back.
For Esamu and for Miyamoto, that must be what’s important.

“No way! For samurai, pride is more important than your life! I cannot endure the Shinsengumi that father and mother loved, being disgraced as brutish! Grandfather! Grandfather!” (Musashi)

This guy, no, these guys, chose the future of their brethren, over pride.
You aren’t wrong. Miyamoto, your choice isn’t wrong at all.
So, don’t make such a painful looking face.

“This, this just makes us, who loathe humans..... the exact same as them! Grandfather!” (Musashi)

“That’s right, even if we become like ‘that’, we realized we have to fight.”
(Esamu)

“No, no way.....” (Musashi)

It must be really tough for even your granddaughter to show an expression of despair.

You probably didn’t want to do something like this either.

But, you can’t stop it anymore.

You came to a place that you can’t turn back from.

That’s how it is, right?

Then,

“Miyamoto.....” (Velt)

“Asakura-kun?” (Varnand)

“You can’t stop anymore. However, I don’t really care about what happens to the future of the demi-humans. So..... I’ll stop it.” (Velt)

“Asakura-kun!” (Varnand)

“If you can’t stop it, then I’ll stop it.” (Velt)

It’s not my problem about what kind of tragic fate the demi-humans will get

as a result from that.

“Musashi, leave it at that!” (Velt)

“V, Velt-dono!” (Musashi)

So, I will stand. Demi-human? Human? Future? Not my problem.
You guys are all people that just think ahead, but I’m a guy that doesn’t think before or ahead after all.

“Hohou, I thought you wouldn’t have been able to stand from the intense pain, but you seem to at least have some guts.” (Esamu)

“Shut up, you old geezer in heat.” (Velt)

“Mu-.” (Esamu)

Ahh, I said something cheeky again.
But this time, I don’t regret it.
I said what I wanted to say.
Therefore, I’ll do what I want to do this time.

“Oi, Musashi. No matter how much you plead with words or lower your head, his opinion won’t change. Your grandfather and this damn old geezer didn’t just give a half hearted answer after all.” (Velt)

“Velt-dono, however!” (Musashi)

“But! If you want to stop the acts of infringement in this town, there’s still another methods, you know?” (Velt)

That’s right, I’ll stop it, Miyamoto.
I’ll crush the future that you were painfully forced to choose.

“A method to stop it? Is that true!” (Musashi)
“Yeah, think about it carefully. The first method to stop it, is to knock down every single person rampaging in this town. However, this isn’t realistic.” (Velt)
“U, umu.” (Musashi)
“Next, is to tell Esamu to make them stop it. However, this is already impossible.” (Velt)
“Indeed! So, what else would there be other than that.....” (Musashi)
“There’s just one more method.” (Velt)
“Wha, what?” (Musashi)

That’s right, in a way, this method is the closest to being impossible to realize,

but this is the option I chose.

“Fuwa fuwa Velt(world)!” (Velt)

Float!

“Hou.” (Esamu)

Float everything!

“Velt-dono!” (Musashi)

“Asakura-kun.” (Miyamoto)

“What kind of spell is this!” (Sorushi?)

The bronze statue, the rubble of the broken buildings, the ruins, and even the houses, are all matter that are reflected in my eyes.

Float the whole world!

And once it floats, send the whole world flying towards Esamu!

“Wha! All of the floating things are going to the chief!” (Shinsengumi Member)

“Please run away, chief!” (Shinsengumi Member)

“This human brat, what is he!” (Shinsengumi Member)

Using anything I could see, I pointed it all to Esamu and fired it at him.

Well, it won't go so smoothly that he gets defeated so easily.

With just his hand, Esamu knocks down everything.

However, his expression isn't the same as before.

“Youngster.....” (Esamu)

Because of my sudden action, he's making a 'what happened?' face.

“Musashi! Do you get it?” (Velt)

“Velt-dono.....” (Musashi)

“You don't tell Esamu to stop it..... you make him stop it with force.” (Velt)

“Wha!” (Musashi)

“Beat him up until he cries, and then make him listen to you by force. It's the simplest method, isn't it?” (Velt)

That's right. That's the kind of guy I am.

It's not like I came here to have an arguing contest.

Beat up the different opinion and make him obey you!

“Musashi! If you’re also a samurai, then talk with your katana, not with words! Going through with it even if it results in having to seppuku, is what you call resolve, right!” (Velt)

“!” (Musashi)

“I’ll also resolve myself!” (Velt)

As if I could endure losing to this world.

“Do you want to seriously compete with me, not just play? Do you think I wouldn’t kill Var’s old friend? You will die, you know?” (Esamu)

“An old geezer that’s never died once before, shouldn’t be talking to me about dying!” (Velt)

Sticking out my arms that were just stuck together, I showed him.

“Listen, no matter how many of my arms you cut off, my heart won’t break at all!” (Velt)

The action I took to show my current feelings, is one that no one in this world knows the meaning of. Fuck you.

“Musashi, I’m going to brawl. What are you going to do?” (Velt)

“Ee!” (Musashi)

Kuhahahaha, as expected, it would be pitiful to ask her now. She’s making an incredible, flustered face.

However, I don’t really mind.

Even if I’m alone.....

“Wa, wait..... even if it’s a god or a devil..... Velt’s enemy, is my enemy.....” (Ura)

No, I wasn’t alone. It seems both of them woke up.

“Damn it..... it’s been quite a while since..... I wanted to kill someone this much.” (Farga)

Ura and Farga’s hearts still haven’t broken at all yet.

“Why..... why are you doing this! There’s no way you people could match chief! Why would you do something so foolish!” (Musashi)

That's right, that's how I am. It might be a way of life that you samurai wouldn't understand, though.

"Good grief. You damn foolish brats. Even though I let it end with just my fists, you are still going to rebel until the bitter end?" (Esamu)

"That's right, there seems to be various races in this world, like humans, demons and demi-humans, but even among them, I'm the most foolish and idiotic race, a delinquent. Remember that!" (Velt)

"Hou." (Esamu)

"Rebelling against common sense, is my identity after all." (Velt)

So, I'll stick to my opinion even now. I choose the options that people think are stupid.

Miyamoto. You changed.

I wanted to change in this world too.

But you know, as expected, just my roots didn't change.

This is my unchanging self, from now, the past, and my past life.

"Hm~m, from rebellious eyes..... to the eyes of a rebel. I see. Certainly, that's slightly dangerous..... and letting you live here is a bit..." (Esamu)

The air changed.

This is the same feeling of inferiority when I was with Samejima and Gyanza.

No, if I had to say in roughness, this guy is more brutal.

"Nuu, nuuuuu! Uuuuuuuuuuuuuuuuuuu!" (Musashi)

At that moment, Musashi raised a strange voice filled with anguish.

Holding her head in agony, she finally fell to her knees on the ground and struck the ground many times with her forehead.

"Musashi?" (Velt)

Did she break? We were surprised by her strange behavior, but Musashi.....

"Grandfather! Boss! And also, chief! I am, very sorry! I..... I cannot lie to my own feelings!" (Musashi)

After striking her head enough for her forehead to rip, Musashi had become bloody, but her eyes had become clear, as if she had come up with an answer.

It seems you've found your own answer.

"Even if I get charged of treason, I cannot overlook the Shinsengumi getting disgraced!" (Musashi)

"Wha! What are you trying to do, Musashi!" (Esamu?)

"O, o, oi! Musashi!" (Sorushi?)

Musashi drew her two wooden swords, and then stood besides us.
I can understand even if we don't exchange words. We nod at each other.

"What! This is!" (Esamu?)

A joint struggle.

"Alright, let's go! The enemy is the Shinsengumi chief, Esamu of the Four Heavenly Beast Demi-humans!" (Velt)

""Ooohh!"" (Ura, Farga, Musashi)

Probably because Musashi's action was unexpected, Esamu opened his eyes widely.

"Asakura-kun, what are you..... what have you done....." (Varnand)

Sorry, Miyamoto. I dragged in your granddaughter in the confusion.

"You don't understand. You don't understand how absurd what you just did is. To think I would see this kind of scene in my life....." (Varnand)

Not my problem! Without thinking about the consequences, I'm going to kill this damn old geezer right now!

"Let's go oi!" (Velt)

"Velt, support us!" (Ura)

"I'll take the front. Damn demon and damn demi-human, you two disturb him from both sides." (Farga)

"Your will!" (Musashi)

Against us who are attacking from all directions, Esamu isn't budging at all.
Is he still surprised that Musashi betrayed?

No, it doesn't look like just that.

However, I'm not interested in something like that. If he's full of openings,

we'll just crush him mercilessly.

Then, at that moment.

“I have seen various people struggling with the world as the stage over many years, but..... this is the first scene that has excited me this much.” (Esamu)

Our hands won't stop. However, without even looking like he cares about that, Esamu let out words of deep emotion.

“This is probably a first for the history of this world. Human, demon and demi-human. To think I would see different races combining their powers together.” (Esamu)

Together with those words, Esamu received us four's attack, head on.

Chapter 52: Something like that isn't my problem

Miyamoto muttered something, but I couldn't hear it well.

"Why, why, Asakura-kun. Why didn't you appear faster, and show me this scene. Making a scene like this that none of us could, and so easily too."
(Varnand)

I'll listen to him later.

Because for now, I'm just going to send this old, monster geezer flying.

"Fuwa fuwa..... ah!" (Velt)

I realized something problematic here.

My tactic, 'fuwa fuwa time,' is using levitation (floating) in an effective way. Everyday for those five years, I diligently continued using it all day everyday, which remarkably raised my proficiency, speed, and mana saving. However, I can't change the principle of it; the principle of the magic called levitation (floating). That principle, is that it's unable to float living things. In other words, when I float or spin around enemies, I do it by applying magic on their clothes or weapons. Therefore, this situation was a first.

"Crap, if the opponent is completely nude without any weapons, I have no way of attacking them." (Velt)

That's how it is. Esamu wasn't aiming for it, and he was just coincidentally doing something or another with a female without wearing clothes, but that's the worst development for me.

"Tch, then, I'll use this! Fuwa fuwa complete reversal!" (Velt)

"Hmm? Ooh!" (Esamu)

If I can't do anything about Esamu, then I'll do something about his surroundings.

I forcefully floated one part of the ground Esamu is standing on.

“What, it floated!” (Esamu)

I forcefully floated one part of the ground, breaking it. Rather than simply floating something, this uses quite a lot of power.

However, I at least broke his posture.

“Get him!” (Velt)

The three that jumped at him, were people that would certainly become famous throughout the world if they joined the war.

“Elfarshia Style Spearmanship, Rain Storm!” (Farga)

From the front, Farga thrusts wildly.

Unlike his usual refined and beautiful thrusts, they were violent thrusts that try to turn the enemy into pieces.

“Ho~, hohooo!” (Esamu)

However, Esamu sees through everything, evades, and handles it.

Twisting his body, he sweeps the spear to the side with his hand, flowing it away while seeing the trajectory of the spear before his eyes.

Is this guy really an old geezer?

However, Farga didn’t just let them be avoided.

Together with the wildness, he even raised the speed of it.

That speed eventually thinly teared Esamu’s skin.

“Damn, die.” (Farga)

“Ho~.” (Esamu)

However, let alone being surprised, Esamu was more impressed.

“Fumu, your thrusts are better than before. I’m surprised.” (Esamu)

“So damn noisy. Shut up and die!” (Farga)

“Even among the spear users I have met until now, you surpass the rest.”
(Esamu)

Composure? No, that’s wrong. He probably just honestly thinks that. The guys from the Shinsengumi that were originally looking at this with composure, now became knocked out of their wits by Farga’s movements.

“Musashi, little tricks are useless.” (Ura)

“Umu, we are at a disadvantage if it becomes a drawn out battle. Let us decide it in a brief battle.” (Musashi)

However, this isn’t a situation to act composed, you know? This isn’t one to one after all.

From both sides, the world class shrews jump in.

“Makyokushin Karate, Maseiken!” (Ura)

“Miyamoto Kendo, Tsubame Gaeshi!” (Musashi)

Wait, Musashi. Even though you specially have such a good name, you can’t just use that technique name, is what I was about to retort.

Esamu isn’t dodging it.

She defeated him!

No,

“S, seriously!” (Velt)

That was instinct.

“Fuwa fuwa collection plus fuwa fuwa withdrawal!” (Velt)

Something happened. The moment I thought that, I reflexively pulled the three towards me with magic.

No, that’s not all. Including myself, everyone tried to take distance from Esamu and lost themselves in going away.

“Nunu!” (Shinsengumi Member)

“Wai-, chief! We’re here too!” (Shinsengumi Member)

“All members, evacuate!” (Shinsengumi Member)

And then,

“Miyamoto Kendo, Tenkuu Yakou Hiten Ouryuu Zan Maken! (Luminous Sky Great Emperor Dragon Decapitation Magic Sword) ” (Esamu)

In the next moment, because of something incredible, something incredible happened.

He just swung a punch down onto the ground below him.

“Fumu, this is good enough I guess. I did slightly hold back so that it wouldn’t drag in allies though.” (Esamu)

A huge explosion that seems like a volcano eruption occurred, and a huge smoke cloud whirled up to the skies of the town square.

“Wha-.....” (Ura)

“Ee!” (Musashi)

“Damn it.....” (Farga)

“O, oi, leaving aside the naming, like, you’re kidding me.” (Velt)

We doubted our eyes.

By the time the smoke cloud had cleared away, there was nothing in the town square.

It wasn’t destruction.

It had just completely vanished from this world, and only a huge crater in wasteland was made right in the middle of the developing castle town.

“Good grief, that technique..... doesn’t exist in Miyamoto Kendo.”
(Varnand)

As Miyamoto muttered that after withdrawing like us, Esamu laughed loudly from the middle of the wasteland.

“Gaaahahhahhahha! It’s my original technique that I invented. I just tried to line up cool sounding words.” (Esamu)

Without even holding a sword, a samurai is being such an irregular monster. Ahh, that’s right. This is a world class monster that we picked a fight with.

“We, we survived..... Velt, thank you.” (Ura)

“Tch, this damn monster.” (Farga)

“Musashi, can you do that?” (Velt)

“It is impossible!” (Musashi)

We might be able to win if all four of us attack him? We were scattered away enough, that not even a single speck of that naive thought remained. Furthermore, the rubble and even houses were all erased. If it’s like this, the power of my fuwa fuwa time is halved.

“Now, what’s wrong? Your hearts better not have broken already. Make me more excited!” (Esamu)

Good grief, making shining eyes as if he’s a brat playing around like that.

“What’s up with that! I thought you weren’t interested in us at all?” (Velt)
“Gaaahahhahhahha! I have already forgotten something so in the past like that! Suddenly falling in love with someone you didn’t even care about yesterday; it’s the same as love.” (Esamu)

“I deny you from falling in love with me. But I would be even happier if you could get defeated from the shock of your broken heart.” (Velt)

“What are you saying! If it’s for the person I fell in love with, I would make them turn to look at me no matter what trick I have to use!” (Esamu)

I’m begging you, so don’t say something like that nude.

On top of a building away from the town square, we’re non stop sweating from our backs.

“So, what should we do? If we don’t have a strategy, I’ll deal with that damn old geezer by myself.” (Farga)

“Don’t carelessly jump in, Farga. If we combine our powers, we can overcome this dilemma.” (Ura)

“Velt-dono, do you have any bright ideas?” (Musashi)

Why are you asking me. That being said, I was the first person to say something, so I have no choice but to do something.

No matter what trick I have to use, I’ll defeat this old geezer.

However, this guy can’t pull his punches when it comes to fighting. If he strikes back at us, he probably won’t even go easy on Musashi.

In reality, he was trying to kill her with that punch before. She was just lucky to survive.

Which means that a suicide attack strategy of taking a chance and going for broke, won’t work.

“Musashi.” (Velt)

“What is it?” (Musashi)

“Your weapon is a wooden sword, but can you use it to cut too?” (Velt)

“Tha, that is, yes, my specialty is pulverizing by using strength, but if I try to, I can use slashing attacks too.” (Musashi)

“That’s plenty.” (Velt)

The only strategy that would work, is to cut through flesh and sever the bone.

“Musashi. My current self is exceeding adrenaline full throttle, and a part of my sense of pain are numbed.” (Velt)

“Adoreeenarin?” (Musashi)

“So, I’m counting on you to do it while my senses are still crazy.” (Velt)

“Velt-dono, what are you trying to do?” (Musashi)

“What, as long as that old geezer doesn’t do anything unpredictable, we can get through this.” (Velt)

I don’t actually want to do something like this, but there’s no helping it. See look, Ura is super flustered, and she’s trying to stop me.

However, I know that I won’t get off unhurt if I’m fighting a monster like that, since I’m not just fighting for show.

“What is it? Is this a friendly strategy meeting? Interesting. Work out a strategy to your heart’s content. And then, show me. What will be born after all races join forces!” (Esamu)

I don’t know why you’re waiting with such excited eyes, but that’s great.

“Sure, while making it interesting, we’ll also make you regret it!” (Velt)

We jumped down from the roof, and once again faced Esamu. Like I thought, first is Farga.

“Haaaaaaaaa!” (Farga)

“Fumu, as expected, it’s you. Well, it’s just you, and you still can’t fight me properly.” (Esamu)

A battle with Farga’s spear again. However, probably because Farga showed too much in the offense and defense from before, he can already see through almost everything.

“Oooo, amazing amazing. However, that is not enough to get me!” (Esamu)

It’s not even grazing him.
However, that was within expectations.
The problem is.....

“Now, time to counterattack!” (Esamu)

That he became used to the attacks and started counterattacking.

Farga instantaneously twisted his body and evaded, but his fluttering mantle got pierced.

“Hoho, so close.” (Esamu)

No,

“No, it’s all according to our damn plan.” (Farga)

“What?” (Esamu)

That’s fine. The ripped mantle is around Esamu’s hand. I manipulate that cloth.

“Fuwa fuwa bind!” (Velt)

“Nu-! Wha, what! The mantle, twisted around, o, ooooooh!” (Esamu)

With the mantle, I forcefully pinned down his whole body, but how long will it last? One second is my limit.

However, that’s plenty.

“Die, oi!” (Farga)

“Prepare yourself!” (Ura)

“Let’s go!” (Musashi)

In that one second, the three jumped on him.

However,

“Nuuu, so insolent!” (Esamu)

Esamu beat through the mantle twisted around his body with force, and then,

“Gaaahahhahhahhah! In the end, it’s the same development as before, how boring! Boring! Just become garbage!” (Esamu)

Yeah, it’s the same development as before.

However, there’s just one difference.

Exactly because it’s the same development as before, you’re taking the same actions as before.

Because we know those actions, we can make countermeasures.

“Miyamoto Kendo, Tenkuu Yakou Hiten Ouryuu Zan Maken! (Luminous Sky Great Emperor Dragon Decapitation Magic Sword) ” (Esamu)

Although he says sword, in the end, it's just a punch to the ground, right? Sure, go punch the ground as hard as you want, and then knocked out of your wits.

"Nuuuuu-!" (Esamu)

This is the first time Esamu has shown it. His surprised voice in the middle of a battle, that is.

Well, it's understandable.

"Take this! Counter!" (Velt)

The moment he looked right below him to punch the ground, a human's arm from the elbow down, was before Esamu's eyes as if hitting an uppercut, after all.

"Fuwa fuwa rocket punch cross counter!" (Velt)

By countering the power of your tenkuu whatever, I'll return it right back to you!

"Heguhaegui!" (Esamu)

A direct hit to the jaw. It might have even broken. The bone of my left arm, that is.

However, in return, I get you!

"Now's the time!" (Farga)

"Ooh!" (Ura)

"We cannot let this chance of winning escape!" (Musashi)

He's the strongest, but he was careless, and I hit an unexpected counter punch.

"Thi, this..... youngster." (Esamu)

It should be effective.

This time for sure, we'll all beat him down.

"Asakura-kun, what have you..... to make Esamu show this opening..... you made Musashi cut off your own left arm!" (Varnand)

That's correct, Miyamoto. My magic can't float living things.

However, if it's a cut off arm, I can move it as an object.

Until the moment he tried to deal with all of us jumping at him after he ripped Farga's mantle and I binded him with it, I had been secretly making my severed left arm come closer.

You probably didn't even imagine that a severed arm would secretly get closer, right?

"I'll smash your head in! Hundred kg baton!" (Velt)

With my remaining right hand, I threw a hundred kg baton at Esamu's head.

"Makyokushin Karate, Devil Sky Axe Kick!" (Ura)

Following that, as expected, Ura's axe kick went to Esamu's head.

"Miyamoto Kendo, Crimson Head Destruction!" (Musashi)

And Musashi's finishing blow, is of course hitting his head.

Our strikes didn't break it, but we were able to smash it!

"Oh, ooh....." (Esamu)

Bright red blood projected out of Esamu like a water fountain.

We can do this!

"Nu-, sto, stop it, you bastards!" (Shinsengumi Member)

"Chi, chief!" (Shinsengumi Member)

"A, Asakura-kun!" (Varnand)

As if we would stop. This is an ultra, once in a lifetime chance.

This time with Farga, without even letting him counterattack, we'll all.....

"Gaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaa!" (Esamu)

We'll all..... we were blown away to the distance by a beast's roar.

We rolled around on the ruined ground after getting violently sent flying.

And then, we saw it.

"You damn novices....." (Esamu)

The overwhelming murderous intent from a wounded beast.

"Tch, thi, this guy." (Velt)

"Mo, monster....." (Ura)

“Damn it.” (Farga)

“Thi, this much is.....” (Musashi)

Ahh, it feels like we became animal feed or something.

“Surely, surely you don’t think..... that with the resolve of cutting off just one arm and that strategy..... by just slightly smashing my head..... something will happen..... surely, against me, for even a moment, against me who is one of the Four Heavenly Beast Demi-humans that reign over the grand Demi-human Continent from the summit, that you won against me for even a minute!” (Esamu)

A sense of intimidation that made us feel crushed.
It was enough fear for my heart to feel like it was being held tightly, and could break at any time.

“Listen! The Four Heavenly Beast Demi-humans, Ten Heroes of Light, and the Seven Great Demon Kings! They are the geniuses, prodigies, monsters, super humans and champions of this whole world, who hold passionate feelings in their chests! The place where only that people that ate ten thousands of spirits, flesh and blood, and then overcame battles where they muster their desperate effort and spirits, is where I am at! Don’t think you have won against me for even a moment!” (Esamu)

Ahh, this is that sensation.
The sensation of stepping on a tiger’s tail, like when I fought Gyanza.

“You have looked down on me, you damn novices!” (Esamu)
No, this anger is even more overwhelming than that time.
It seems the fact that we thought we could win for even a moment, irritated him.
Good grief, this world really does have nothing but scary people.

“Tch, you romancist.” (Velt)
Therefore, I think.
Although I was careless, I wasn’t particularly looking down on him.
So,

“So noisy..... is that really that great?” (Velt)

“What was that?” (Esamu)

I fully understand that you’re an amazing guy, but you know, it’s unreasonable for you to make a fuss and lecture me because of that.

“We’re just brawling with you. Even if we show respect for the opponent or make fun of them, as long as we’re fighting, it doesn’t mean anything.” (Velt)

“What?” (Esamu)

“It’s about who’s stronger. This is a simple thing, you just try to win by using any trick you can!” (Velt)

That’s right. We’re not fighting for an amazing title or anything. In a fight, something like that doesn’t matter.

“In the first place, no matter how much you talk to me about war or the heroic saga you walked, it doesn’t really resound in my chest. Do you know why?” (Velt)

“.....” (Esamu)

“That’s because, no matter how much murderous intent I have or how much I want to kill someone, I’ve never actually killed someone. Not even a single time!” (Velt)

So, it’s just as Esamu said at the start.
From the start, we’re walking different paths.

“You have never..... killed someone, you say?” (Esamu)

At that moment, his overwhelming sense of intimidation hid itself, and it felt like the air in the town square softened in an instant.

“Worthless youngster, you said your name was Velt, right?” (Esamu)

“Ye, yeah. Wait, you’re still calling me worthless!” (Velt)

“Answer my question.” (Esamu)

And then, Esamu, who hid his murderous intent, asked me a question.

“You said you have never killed before. While having such rebellious eyes, you haven’t killed a demi-human or a demon. Can you say that that will stay the same from now on?” (Esamu)

“Haa? What’s up with that question. Which idiot would be asked, ‘do you think that in the future, you will kill someone,’ and say ‘yes, I will kill,’ or something.”

(Velt)

“Even if your important people are unreasonably taken away from you, will you still be able to say the same thing? That you won’t kill them?” (Esamu)

“Of course not, like, my old man and mum were killed by a demi-human, and I want to kill that demi-human someday. Well, all I can think of is beating him up repeatedly no matter how many times he cries though.” (Velt)

“Will you feel satisfied with that?” (Esamu)

“As if I would know if I would feel satisfied or not. If I don’t feel satisfied from punching him, I’ll kick and trample him. That will settle the problem in it’s own way. I’ll do it until he regrets his sins.” (Velt)

What’s up with these questions? What am I being asked right now?

No, on the contrary, what is this?

Everyone is looking at me as if time has stopped.

Miyamoto, the Shinsengumi, Farga, Ura, and Musashi too.

“This is the last thing I want to ask. Will you be satisfied with just punishing the demi-human that killed your parents? Will you be satisfied from just punishing your own enemy? Have you not thought of trying to change this world?” (Esamu)

Like I said, what’s up with these questions.

“Haa? I don’t get it. Will I be satisfied if I just punish my own enemy? Isn’t my own enemy the real enemy that I should defeat! Why do I have to go against people other than my enemy!” (Velt)

If I punish enemies other than my own, I’ll either go to court or the police. Like, seriously though, what’s happening?

“I see.....” (Esamu)

No, wait a minute. Looking at him carefully, isn’t he full of openings right now!

“Fuwa fuwa surprise attack rocket punch!” (Velt)

“!” (Esamu)

Esamu’s reaction was slow. My left arm’s rocket punch got a direct hit on his chin again.

“O, ooh.”

“What!”

“Wai-, Velt-dono, please wait!” (Musashi)

His movements don't really have sharpness to it. It feels like he's perplexed by something..... No, this isn't the time to be caring about that, it's a chance!

“Here I come, Esamu! I'll take you down to the end!” (Velt)

At that moment, against me who jumped at him, Esamu looked at us with eyes of an old person that lost his fire.

“I see. Why you people could so easily create a scene that we couldn't see..... I feel like I understand it a bit.” (Esamu)

Muttering just that brief comment, in the next moment, Esamu raised a gigantic voice that felt like it could split the world.

“Announcement to the whole army! This is the end! We are returning to our country!” (Esamu)

That roar was enough to shake the atmosphere, but for a moment, the agonizing cries covering the country disappeared for a moment.

“This battle, is over now!” (Esamu)

The intensity of that, was enough of a shock for Musashi, that had been aiming for that, and me, who had gotten cocky, to unintentionally lose power in our legs and sit down.

Chapter 53: Each of our reunions

A general's withdrawal order signifies the end of the war itself, no matter what the war situation is.

In other words, the hellish scenes will end, and we won..... is how I'm supposed to take it?

"Why are you all idling!" (Sorushi)

The boss of the first unit, Sorushi Ouki, who had been contemplating the battle all along, straddles his horse and informs his group members.

"The chief's order has been given! We are going to immediately contact the scattered units in the town to make them withdraw. Withdraw before Shiromu's military authorities or reinforcements from other countries start moving." (Sorushi)

"Alright! We will go stop them at once!" (Shinsengumi Member)

"Ora, how long are you assholes gonna keep doing vulgar things, hurry up and leave behind what you're holding, and obey the order." (Shinsengumi Member)

The first unit's actions were fast. They moved promptly, as if they had been waiting for 'that order' the whole time, spreading chief Esamu's words to the whole army.

"Boss Sorushi....." (Musashi)

"Musashi, well done stopping the chief. Leave the rest to us." (Sorushi)

"N, no way, boss, did you!" (Musashi)

"No, we didn't try to stop him, since it's not like we didn't understand the chief and the advisor's thoughts. But still, it broke my heart to see the Shinsengumi be disgraced." (Sorushi)

Sorushi, the first unit boss, patted her shoulder and smiled to thank her. The other group members here also showed smiles to Musashi. Smiling, saying well done, and leave the rest to us.

"I see. There were guys who took pleasure in violating people and guys who

suffered from them doing that, huh.” (Velt)

These guys just couldn’t become as stupid as Musashi was, to do it. That’s all it is.

In exchange, they ran off faster than anyone the moment the chief gave the order to stop the acts of infringement.

Well, it doesn’t really matter to me anymore though.

“It’s your win, Asakura-kun.” (Varnand)

“Miyamoto.” (Velt)

This time, Miyamoto patted my shoulder to thank me.

My win. Hearing that gave me an extreme feeling of exhaustion, and I was assaulted by the pounding in my heart and the unbelievably intense pain.

“Guoooooooo, o, ouch, my aaaaarm!” (Velt)

That’s right, I lost one of my arms! Shit, it seriously hurts!

“Good grief, you must be crazy to keep cutting, attaching, cutting and attaching your arm this much.” (Varnand)

“Ooh, Mi, Miyamoto, m, my arm.” (Velt)

“It’s okay. It will go back to normal if I use my restore cut. Since Esamu and Musashi severed it so cleanly without any waste, no extra nerves have been damaged.” (Varnand)

“I, I see, I, I’m seriously, glad.” (Velt)

While my consciousness was becoming distant from the intense pain, the cut end of my severed left arm became hot, and I could feel my sense of pain gradually calm down.

It’s a warm light.

“Stupid younger brother, you pushed yourself too damn hard again.” (Farga)

“Uoooo, Ve, Velt~, old man, can Velt’s arm be attached again? Uuuu~, my Velt~” (Ura)

“Ooh, Farga, Ura, good work.” (Velt)

After all that, us three survived without a single victim.

Against one of the Four Heavenly Beast Demi-humans, you could say this is quite a brilliant achievement.

“Velt-dono. How is it?” (Musashi)

“Ooh, Musashi~, how do you feel?” (Velt)

“All sorts, or rather, I don’t feel like I can think about anything right now.”
(Musashi)

“Then, me too.” (Velt)

That’s right. In the end, I fought on emotions, and as a result, I might have done something outrageous.

Even for humans and demi-humans, we might have done something that would change history.

Well, I don’t regret it as of now though.

“Asakura-kun.” (Varnand)

“What is it, Miyamoto.” (Velt)

“You became softer than before, but your brutal looking eyes, and the part where people gather around you somehow..... you really haven’t changed.”
(Varnand)

I recognized the expression Miyamoto had while saying that.

That was a memory from long ago, in my past life.

“Yes, you splendidly did it, yes, it was splendid. It really was splendid.”
(Varnand)

We were laughing or something.

“Kuhahahahahahaaahahahahahahahaha! What’s up with that!” (Velt)

“Fufu, kukuku, ahahahahahahaha!” (Varnand)

We’re probably thinking about the same thing.

I am a human called Velt Jeeha, and Miyamoto is a demi-human called Varnand Gabbana.

But, without a doubt, we spent a period of time as Asakura Ryuuma and Miyamoto.

“Grandfather..... Velt-dono.” (Musashi)

“Stupid younger brother.” (Farga)

“Velt.....?” (Ura)

None of them understand, but just forgive me for now.

I fought for this moment, after all.

“How could you interfere like that. However, yes, that, yes, but, I should probably say thank you for stopping it.” (Varnand)

“I see. Seems like someone like me was able to do something. I couldn’t do anything for Samejima after all.” (Velt)

“I don’t think so. If Samejima-kun lived as a demon king, then he should have had complicated feelings as a demon, similarly to me. And yet, he left his daughter to you, his old friend, even though you’re a human, and that daughter loves you dearly. I think Samejima-kun was happy.” (Varnand)

“I wonder. No one would know how a dead guy feels. Even if he reincarnates or whatever, if you dies, that’s it after all.” (Velt)

“You think? I can somewhat understand Samejima-kun’s feelings though.” (Varnand)

Miyamoto said the words, ‘thank you’. I don’t know what the actions I took will do.

But even so, he said he was saved right now.

Hearing that, I felt like the uneasiness I had in these five years became somewhat lighter.

“Asakura-kun.” (Varnand)

“Yeah?” (Velt)

“Until now, ‘who’ have you reunited with?” (Varnand)

Miyamoto’s sudden words. That ‘who’ he said, is about the guys that only we would know.

“Samejima and..... Kobayakawa..... sensei.” (Velt)

“Eh..... se, sensei?” (Varnand)

“Yeah. Sensei is running a ramen restaurant in the Elfarshia Kingdom with his family. We reunited five years ago. He took in Ura and I, who had no relatives, and we were living together until just the other day.” (Velt)

“I, I see, Kobayakawa-sensei, huh..... that’s nostalgic.” (Varnand)

Next is my turn. I’ll return the question I was asked.

“Who have you reunited with?” (Velt)

To that question, Miyamoto answered with distant eyes.

“Ayase-san, and Kagami-kun.” (Varnand)

“.....! Ahh, that managing woman and the playboy.” (Velt)

“Hah, that’s a harsh way of calling them.” (Varnand)

“But, I see. Those two, huh.” (Velt)

“..... Are you disappointed since it’s not Kamino-san?” (Varnand)

“Bah! Wh, why even you! Both Samejima and sensei, why do all of you know!”
(Velt)

“It was so obvious after all. Anyways, I see. Even if our races and times are different in this vast world from when we reincarnated, we might have been made to be drawn to each other and reunite.” (Varnand)

I see, I remember those two. I did have some connection to them after all.
It seems he hasn’t met Kamino though.
But like, I feel really embarrassed to have that pointed out.
Was I really that obvious?

“I reunited with Ayase-san in the war at the Divine Being Continent. Reacting to my Miyamoto Kendo, she noticed my identity and then named herself of her own accord.” (Varnand)

“War? Wait a minute, is she also at war? Is she a demon?” (Velt)

“No, she reincarnated as a human. I think it was around two years ago that I reunited with her? Just, we couldn’t have a slow conversation because of our positions..... since we both went too far down a path that we can’t return to the past after all.” (Varnand)

“Ayase became a..... human?” (Velt)

“You know about the Ten Heroes of Light in humanity’s great allied forces, right?” (Varnand)

“Ye, yeah.” (Velt)

“She’s one of them.” (Varnand)

“Wha, what!?” (Velt)

Ten Heroes of Light. It’s a title I’ve heard of since I was a brat, that’s given to humanity’s strongest fighting power like Forna, or other famous heroes.
And, that woman is one of them?

However, I could understand what Miyamoto said.

Because of their positions, they couldn't have a slow talk, and they didn't live such half hearted lives that they could return to the past.

"I see..... every single one of them..... are so tiresome." (Velt)

Samejima, Miyamoto, and Ayase.

Like, aren't the only ones freely enjoying this world unexpectedly just sensei and I?

"And above all, you should be careful around Kagami-kun. He's a human too. I reunited with him ten years ago, but..... he's no longer his past self."

(Varnand)

"Kagami? How did that playboy from the basketball club change?" (Velt)

"Do you know about『Love and Money』?" (Varnand)

Hmm? I feel like I've heard『Love and Money』somewhere..... ah! It's Shiromu's auction organization that Jiel and the others were in.

"Their base is here, in Shiromu, but the organization itself had spread underground throughout the world." (Varnand)

"What about it?" (Velt)

"Well, the boss of the organization called『Love and Money』, is Kagami-kun." (Varnand)

"Ha..... haa-?" (Velt)

"He looks down on demi-humans, demons, and even human lives so much..... his spirit must have suffered damage from coming to this world, since he might already be mad." (Varnand)

That was quite a shock for me too.

Well, I was surprised from the fact that Ayase is in humanity's great allied forces, but even more so about Kagami.

"My real objective today was to deal with him here. However, I received information that he already escaped....." (Varnand)

"Kagami is..... no way. That frivolous, talkative guy..." (Velt)

Became mad. No, that might not be weird.

In this world, lives are too light. Depending on just a bit of luck, you don't know when you might die.

It's the same for this country too. They were lacking something, and that might have created a tragedy.

Certainly, if you suddenly saw nothing but the tragedies of this world after your memories return, it might be inevitable for your spirit to break.

We were those peace complacent high schoolers from Japan after all.

“I really was lucky.” (Velt)

I thought that from the bottom of my heart.

However, for that reason, I feel uneasy.

That's because it might not just be Kagami who changed.

No, Miyamoto, Ayase, and even Samejima advanced down a path they can't return from.

For this reason, 'she' might have changed too. As soon as I thought about that, my heart was assaulted by unease.

Then, at that moment.

“Ooh, that's right, that's right! I had forgotten!” (Esamu)

As if breaking my depressed mood, a lively old geezer's voice forced its way through.

Esamu. He finally put on clothes from his nude state, which imitate a haori and a hakama. On his waist, there's a huge katana.

“Before we withdraw, I need you to properly pay the debt. Isn't that right, Velt.” (Esamu)

Geh..... I thought we would just vaguely part and leave, but he's approaching me with a super scary face.

Chapter 54: Debt payment

He said pay the debt, but what am I going to be made to do?
My arm probably won't get cut off again or anything, but since I don't know this guy's standards, I'm worried about the decision.

"You damn old geezer." (Farga)

"Don't approach Velt!" (Ura)

"Chief, wha, what exactly do you mean by paying the debt!" (Musashi)

Farga, Ura and Musashi stood in front of me right away.
However, Esamu looked at us and happily laughed.

"Gaaahahhahhaha, how nice~, being so close like that. However, don't jump to a conclusion like that. I won't endanger him." (Esamu)

Then, what are you going to do? It's really scary.
Then, from his happy smile, Esamu suddenly showed a strict face.

"Musaaashi!" (Esamu)

"Ye, yes!" (Musashi)

"First, is your payment." (Esamu)

Strict words towards Musashi.
Musashi's probably resolving herself, because she lowered her head while grasping her fist strongly.

"Musashi, you were always serious and straightforward, but you did something quite bold." (Esamu)

"Yes." (Musashi)

"All you do is respect your pride, and even though you have the resolve to be injured or dye your hands in blood, you didn't have the resolve to disgrace your pride. In the end, this world is about how many battles you win. Being too much of a slave to your pride and losing important things, is foolish." (Esamu)

Esamu thoroughly talked to her, showing the way, like a parent to his child, or a mentor to his pupil.

Musashi just nodded while listening word by word with her head down.

“As the chief of an army and an organization, as expected, I cannot leave an individual like that alone.” (Esamu)

“Yes.” (Musashi)

“However, Musashi. As an old man that has been watching over you since you were young, rather than the Shinsengumi, you are my pride.” (Esamu)

“Ye..... yes..... your words are wasted on me.” (Musashi)

I can't see Musashi's trembling expression. However, I can tell without even looking at her face.

Is she crying? That's probably because she understood the words that are going to come out of Esamu's mouth next.

“Musashi. From today, I banish you from the Shinsengumi for eternity. From now on, you are by no means allowed to name yourself as one of the Shinsengumi!” (Esamu)

She knew what would happen. Even so, she did it. She probably doesn't have any regrets.

However, as expected, when reality is thrust before her, something probably fills her heart, because without letting out a voice, Musashi just cried.

“Musashi. Normally, you would deserve sepuuuku for assaulting a superior officer. Think of this as the most I can compromise. However, I will not allow you to take your own life because of that.” (Esamu)

While just prostrating on the ground, Musashi didn't raise her face. The Shinsengumi was something her grandfather made, her parents loved, and was Musashi's everything.

To protect the pride of it, she has to be banished from the Shinsengumi. Although I dragged her in, it still does slightly pain my heart.

“Well then, you said your name was Velt, right?” (Esamu)

“Eh?” (Velt)

“It's your turn next.” (Esamu)

Ah, of course he remembers that, huh.
But what is he planning to do to me?

“Velt. You have almost no understanding of war. I presume that while having the power and courage to fight, you will watch over the flow of this world without participating in wars or advancing down the path of a champion, correct?” (Esamu)

It started again. What has this old geezer been trying to tell me since before.

“War? Of course there’s no way I would participate in that, it’s dangerous after all. Rather, every single one of you can sanctify war all you want, but don’t look down on people that don’t participate, it’s irritating.” (Velt)

I said my honest thoughts. Come on, I said what I really think, you have a problem with that?

Then, Esamu once again,

“Gaaahahhahhahha, did you hear that Var! This guy, even though he has such a stupid face, he readily put the tradition of warring states that unfolds for eternity, beneath his contempt! Gaaahahhahhah!” (Esamu)

Heartily laughed in a good mood.

What’s up with this. What point does he get angry about, and what points does he roar in laughter about.

“No, that’s not bad, youngster. After all, you have the qualifications to make fun of war.” (Esamu)

“Haa? I don’t have qualifications or anything. I just don’t want to participate in war.” (Velt)

“No, by the point where you think it’s foolish to die in war, you are making fun of it. And you certainly do have the qualifications.” (Esamu)

Qualifications? Why? Why do I, who has never participated in war, have those qualifications?

“Velt. Why do you think war continues in this world?” (Esamu)

“Is it a history lesson this time!? I don’t know, isn’t it because of the turf war in the Divine Being Continent and also because they’re on bad terms?” (Velt)

“Gaaahahhahhah! Spot on!” (Esamu)

I got it. Rather, let alone Farga and Ura, even Musashi is befuddled, looking like she doesn’t understand what’s happening anymore.

“Of course, they have reasons other than just liking battle, such as the fetters of the past, politics, problems within races, concession, fear, justice, righteousness, belief and aspiration, but at the very core, it’s because the species are on bad terms with each other. In the end, without sweeping the past under the carpet, they aren’t able to peacefully discuss nor find a way out of the problem, and all they have is just the option to shed blood. That is why conflict still continues.” (Esamu)

Yeah, that’s exactly right. In the end, they’re all people that can’t understand each other, so the war doesn’t end.

To end it, there’s probably no choice but for two of the three races to perish.

“They are on bad terms. The people that continue war without ending it because of that, are foolish, right Velt?” (Esamu)

“Haa? Why! I haven’t said a single word about that!” (Velt)

“No, you do think that. From your perspective, you, who can clasp hands with the differing races, humans, demons, and demi-humans, without any problem, can only see this current world as foolish!” (Esamu)

.....?

“Ah.....!” (Velt)

That reminds me, I’ve never really been conscious about it.

“Oh yeah, ah~, come to think of it, Musashi! You’re a demi-human, aren’t you! On the way, my mind just thought of you as Miyamoto’s grandchild!” (Velt)

“Wha, what are you saying now at this point in time, Velt-dono!” (Musashi)

That’s right. Now that he mentions it, I realized that the three races in this world are all gathered in this moment.

We exchange glances with each other, and make faces that say ‘I just realized’.

“Musashi. Even you, who thought of humans as filthy, had forgotten that view towards Velt, right?” (Esamu)

“That is, uh, cer, certainly.” (Musashi)

“Demon girl. Even though Velt is a human, you are madly in love with him, right?” (Esamu)

“Mu-, wha, what are you saying at this point in time. Velt and I were lo, lovey

dovey with each other since five years ago.” (Ura)

“Spear user. While having such a scary face, you treat Velt as important as family.” (Esamu)

“He’s my stupid younger brother.” (Farga)

As if checking each person, Esamu esquires each of them. It was kinda embarrassing.

I think it was just a coincidence that I met these guys though.

“Velt. You probably aren’t self conscious of it, but these three did not gather around you by chance, but it was because you were there. And by the time they realized, they had already forgotten the walls of races. Do you know why?” (Esamu)

“I don’t know, don’t they just call it natural virtue or charisma or something? That’s kinda lame, you know?” (Velt)

“They gather around you, because you have no fixation to different races.” (Esamu)

No, it’s not because I have no fixation, but it’s because I just don’t really understand it.

“It’s like a farce. It feels like you are making a farce out of tradition. This youngster that doesn’t seem like he can do anything, crossed over the walls of different races that no one could ever do before.” (Esamu)

“Oi, decide whether you’re going to mock me or give me corny praise! Like, what have you been wanting to say since before anyways.” (Velt)

He’s going off in too much of a tangent. After telling me I have to pay the debt, in the end, what’s he going to make me do?

“Stay that way without changing! From now on, no matter what happens from now on, cross over the world as you are now!” (Esamu)

“..... Hah?” (Velt)

“Bastard, from now on, no matter what you see or feel, stay as you are now and don’t change. If you cross over the world and become a mundane human, you will atone for it by death at that time!” (Esamu)

The..... there.....

“There, there’s a limit to being unreasonable! Telling me to not change, like,

why should you decide how I end up!” (Velt)

“Silence! Be grateful that I have not already killed you!” (Esamu)

“You, you, asshole.....” (Velt)

“Musashi! You will have the role of observing him! As an observer, you will move together with Velt and the others from now on!” (Esamu)

“Eh, eh! Wait a minute you old geezer, why her too!” (Velt)

“If you feel that Velt has changed, cut him down! I will not allow refusal!” (Esamu)

Oi oi oi oi, even Musashi is dumbfounded.

Farga’s holding his head in his arms, and Ura’s become speechless.

Oi oi, Miyamoto! Why are you chuckling as if you’re the only one who understands the situation or something!

Like, isn’t Musashi your granddaughter!

“Understood? I wish you the fortunes of war. If you haven’t changed the next time I see you, I’ll let my daughter marry you as a reward.” (Esamu)

After saying everything he wanted to say, Esamu turned his back to us. Like, there’s no way I could consent to that.

“You’re fucking joking! In the first place, you tell me to change or not to change or whatever, but what do you even know about me!” (Velt)

“Oi, take this damn demi-human back home.” (Farga)

“Rather, why led to such course of events! State your reason! And, what do you mean wife!? How can you so unhesitatingly say that in front of me!” (Ura)

“Chief! Why exactly did it turn out like this? Even grandfather is laughing about something!” (Musashi)

We poured Esamu with jeers, but he’s showing no concern at all. He didn’t even budge.

Let alone that,

“Ah, Velt. While I’m at it, I have something to tell you.” (Esamu)

“What is it this time!” (Velt)

“After this, I will take the Shinsengumi with me and『retreat』. You should try to fully understand the meaning of that.” (Esamu)

The meaning of retreating? I thought it was just your whim.

“I will obviously have to report when I return to my country. With the complete destruction of Shiromu before our eyes, I had to retreat. This information will spread throughout the world in a flash, regardless of races. Even more so, as I am a very famous person in war.” (Esamu)

“S, so, what about it.” (Velt)

“In other words, you made Esamu, one of the Four Heavenly Beast Demi-humans, retreat. The existence of your four man group that accomplished this exploit, will most likely spread throughout the world by tomorrow.” (Esamu)

.....!

““““Haaaaaaaaaaaaa?””””” (Velt, Ura, Farga, and Musashi)

Eh..... hah? You’re, you’re joking, right?

“While gathering the attention of the whole words, stay the way you bastards are! Well then, I will be taking my leave!” (Esamu)

After throwing a great bomb at the very end, Esamu of the Four Heavenly Beast Demi-humans disappeared along with the Shinsengumi. At the end, Miyamoto left behind the words, ‘take care of my granddaughter,’ and disappeared.

In the end, the castle town of Shiromu basically collapsed, and the slaves are almost all gone, but it didn’t go as far as the destruction of the country.

I don’t know what happened to the auction organization afterwards. We didn’t meet Jiel and the others, because we immediately left Shiromu as if escaping from it. The thing about Kagami is still a mystery, but I decided to forget about that already.

Anyways, a whole lot of things happened, yeah..... I’m a bit tired today.....

TL Note: So, after reading all the comments on last chapter, I was thinking, but isn’t Kamino going to turn out to be Forna? Because like, the title is about reuniting with Kamino, but he’s currently going on a long journey where he will of course eventually reunite with Forna... Well, it would completely break Forna’s character if that happens but I think it makes sense at least~

Chapter 55: Gaining fame

In the fight with Esamu, to be honest, I almost died multiple times, and I strained a lot more mana than usual, so my whole body is screaming in pain. Light shines through the worn out curtain filled with holes, and I feel depressed because it's already morning.

Even Ura and I, who have gotten into the habit of waking up early, just wanted to spend today lazing around in bed.

However,

“Lord! It is morning. I have already prepared breakfast!” (Musashi)

I don't know why she's energetic, but either way, the tiger girl vigorously opened the window and forcefully woke us up.

“Wai, sto, stop, Musashi.” (Velt)

“Now, lord. It is troubling if you sleep for so long. The morning is the beginning of a day, and neglecting that beginning will start your road to laziness. Now, please wake up, lord!” (Musashi)

“U~nu~.” (Ura)

“Ura-dono, you should wake up soon too. Farga-dono is already swinging his spear outside for morning training, you know?” (Musashi)

“Don't lump me in with that battle enthusiast! Like, just let me sleep more.” (Velt)

“You mustn't! Now, please stop your futile resistance.” (Musashi)

Strange. Musashi, who was only just recently moping as if she had died, is all lively.

To be honest, she's looking after me so much it's annoying.

As expected, is it that? Was it not a good idea to pick up an abandoned wild cat out of pity?

I was concerned for her as Miyamoto's granddaughter, since she got banished from the Shinsengumi and was at a loss, but because of that, she suddenly started calling me 'lord'.

“Look, Musashi. Stop with the ‘lord’. It’s like, really embarrassing.” (Velt)
“No, while having a human body, you fought with your life on the line to protect our Shinsengumi’s pride, and even had the courage to oppose Esamu-sama of the Four Heavenly Beast Demi-humans without hesitation. This Musashi, has admiration for lord to cross over the walls of races.” (Musashi)

“No, you guys fought with me too.” (Velt)

“In addition, you lent a hand to me, who had was at a loss after being banished from my same race and had no other path but suicide. This Musashi! Will never forget this debt of gratitude! Please allow me to walk together with you for life, and devote this blade and spirit to you!” (Musashi)

Strange. Is she that kind of person? A natural airhead with quite intense assumptions?

Even if you devote your life to me with shining eyes like that, to be honest, it’s just troubling.

“Now, lord, I will prepare your clothing.” (Musashi)

“Ah~, fine. Look, I’ll get changed, so go outside.” (Velt)

“You mustn’t! I cannot let your hand to be troubled! I do not mean to be rude, but please let me do it!” (Musashi)

“Hah?” (Velt)

My half awake head awakened in an instant.

Without any hesitation, Musashi started taking off my clothes.

Wai-,

“Bastard!” (Ura)

Before I told to wait a minute, the Sleeping Beauty in the bed next to me woke up.

“Tiger girl. Bastard, what are you doing to Velt in front of me!” (Ura)

“Yes! I am currently changing his clothes!” (Musashi)

“What need is there for you to do that. Only his family is allowed to see Velt naked!” (Ura)

“What are you saying! For my vow as a warrior, I should be next to lord whenever. Even if you are his wife, I cannot abandon that duty!” (Musashi)

“Per, perverted stuff is obviously not allowed! In the first place, you are a demi-

human of marriageable age too! What are we going to do if you get the urge to breed by seeing Velt!” (Ura)

Damn, this is more troublesome than Forna and Ura’s fights. Like, the most troublesome part is how Musashi is deadly serious about everything. How do I put it, she’s overflowing with a sense of duty, and she’s serious. The floorboards are creaking, and it feels like a hole will open anytime soon.

“Oi, you shits. The ceiling’s shaking and it’s so damn noisy. What are you making a racket about.” (Farga)

Farga, who’s naked above the waist, slowly opens the creaking, almost broken door while wiping his sweat, as he finished his morning training. Seeing a catfight between women straight after coming back made him sigh deeply.

“Damn stupid. You suspicious looking races in heat. You’re treating him as your property just because you’ve spent a few years or a few days with my stupid younger brother? Annoying.” (Farga)

Wait, you, you’re going too far.

“Farga, you’re at fault too! In the first place, this journey was a journey with Velt and I! Then, I would have like, made a decisive difference with that woman to me, become one with our swelling up love, flirted, and done all sorts of things that we couldn’t do in the Elfarshia Kingdom since Melma-san, Hanabi and Lallana-san were at home! I had been enduring for five years, you know!” (Ura)

“Until I met lord, I was only seeing a small world. I am proud of the fact that my devotion to lord who showed me the wide, deep world and saved my pride and life, is not so weak to be inferior to something like a love affair! The amount of time spent together is irrelevant!” (Musashi)

“This is damn stupid, you shits. In the first place, it was decided from ten years ago in the country that my stupid younger brother’s spouse would be my stupid younger sister. Just because she isn’t here, you vulgar female apes shouldn’t screech without knowing your place.” (Farga)

How much do these guys like me.
Like, are these guys messing around?

“Foolish. I can’t go along with this. I’m gonna sleep. Don’t break the inn.”
(Velt)

In the end, after I woke up for the second time, Ura and Musashi were in seiza while being wrapped up in rope, and were weeping in frustration, saying, “how dare you”, and, “failure”.

Seems like Farga is the sole winner.

The sun was already right above us by the time we started eating brunch.

After running recklessly north from Shiromu yesterday, we arrived at a small village in the foot of a mountain district, rented a cheap, confined room in an inn, and slept together.

We took along different races like demons and demi-humans, but since it’s nearby Shiromu, the villagers thought we were taking them along as slaves, and didn’t show an excessive reaction.

Rather, looking at Farga and I, one of them said, “you’re bringing along quite nice slaves, how are they?” with a low life smile, but since it was troublesome, I ignored it.

“Look, there’s an article about Shiromu.” (Farga)
“Hee~, it’s just as that old geezer said. Show us, does it have anything written about us?” (Velt)

While filling my mouth with sunny side up fried eggs and crispy bacon on the balcony, I opened the front page of the morning newspaper Farga handed to me.

There, the demi-humans’ assault on Shiromu was written in a big way, and furthermore, Esamu of the Four Heavenly Beast Demi-humans name made the seriousness of the incident unnecessarily more conspicuous.

“Hou. Due to the Shinsengumi’s assault led by Esamu of the Four Heavenly Beast Demi-humans, there was great damage to Shiromu’s commercial district and the port city. The Shinsengumi battled against people other than the Shiromu national army, and retreated before the destruction of the capital. According to information from the survivors, it was a mysterious four man

group that made Esamu retreat, but the authenticity is not definite. Hmm, is this all?" (Velt)

However, after actually reading the newspaper, I felt a bit let down. That's because although Esamu said our names will immediately spread throughout the world, our names nor details weren't written at all on the newspaper.

"Fumu, there doesn't seem to be anything written about us." (Ura)
"Well, of course. Regardless of Esamu-sama's expectations, the demi-human side must not have wanted to make the information public." (Musashi)

Personally, my heart was beating kinda fast, but why did it turn out like this?

"Lord, please think about it. In this world where wars continue this much, which demi-human would be happy about the existence of champions who are unknown to the world, and have the power to make one of the Four Heavenly Beast Demi-humans retreat?" (Musashi)

Now that she mentions it, that's right.

If the demi-human side makes Farga and my existence public because of this, it would become hope for the human side, but drop the rank of the Four Heavenly Beast Demi-humans, a title of absolute power, for the demi-human side, and create great anxiety.

If they know of the fact that Musashi, the granddaughter of the Shinsengumi's founder, betrayed them, and the existence of the demon princess from a ruined country, it won't just be for humans, but it will be good news for the demons too.

In other words, there's no merit to making our existence public for the demi-human side.

Since the guys in Shiromu didn't know about our existence, the mysterious champions are better off being mysterious for them. That's how it is.

"What's up with that. It's a bit of a let down. I don't want to self advertise myself, but I was looking forward to my name naturally becoming famous." (Velt)

I throw the newspaper, and lean against the back of a chair.
Coming forward and saying that I'm the one who made Esamu retreat from

Shiromu would be shameful, but it would be a lie if I said I wasn't actually looking forward to my name secretly becoming famous.
I feel a bit let down.

"That's surprising, stupid younger brother." (Farga)
"Ahn?" (Velt)

Then, seeing my appearance, Farga curious talked to me.

"Well, you're a guy that has basically no interest in war. Because of that, I thought you were a guy that doesn't like having your name spread across the world either." (Farga)

"Ah, I was thinking that too, Velt. I thought you were the type that wasn't interested in such things." (Ura)

Ahh, so I was thought of like that, huh.
Sure, it's understandable for Farga and Ura to think that, but I'm a man too.

"Look, I'm not interested in war, but I'm not particularly a pacifist either. It's not that I'm interested in this, but rather, it's more like my instinct as a delinquent." (Velt)

"Instinct? What do you mean?" (Farga)

"It's simple. I'm dumb, and I don't have a talent to make people like me. The only thing I could boast of to people was my brawling skill. Even though I was such an idiot, people recognized me for my strength. That was my purpose in life, and my everything. There was a period when I thought like that." (Velt)

"A period like that? Did you have one?" (Farga)

"Well yeah. That was my middle school period~ ah~, basically, in the past, there was a period when I wasn't recognized by anyone, so I spent all my time brawling, and making people recognize me was my purpose in life. Well, nowadays, I don't do those kinds of things of my own accord anymore." (Velt)

From Farga's perspective, it's understandable for him to think, "what period is he talking about," since he's known me since I was 5 years old.

Even Ura met me when I was 10 years old.

That being said, my middle school period sure is nostalgic. I was around the same age as Velt Jeeha is now.

At that time, I really couldn't forgive people stronger than me. I did cringey

stuff, like becoming the strongest and making people recognize me. Even though making people recognize you because of your brawling skill was only something brats would think of.

“Then, why? You don’t feel like trying to gain fame of your own accord, but then, why were you still hoping for fame?” (Farga)

“It’s not that great of a reason. Just, no matter how many years pass, delinquents can get relapses of their cringey chuunibyou. For me, becoming famous like that doesn’t feel bad.” (Velt)

Basically, it doesn’t feel bad to get recognized.

“I see. I thought you hated standing out a damn lot.” (Farga)

“I hate getting pampered because of stupid stuff, but it doesn’t feel that bad standing out because I do something to be proud of. Becoming a champion or a hero is a different story though.” (Velt)

Well, you could say I’m quite a worldly-minded person too.

“You won’t participate in war, but want to gain fame, huh. Well, it wouldn’t be fun if Velt becomes popular, but it doesn’t feel bad for you to be recognized.” (Ura)

“Looord-! I understand, I understand your feelings well! Gaining fame by yourself is what a second rate or third rate person would do. Saying they have no interest in gaining fame, is what a mature old person would say. True warriors have their names become famous throughout the world without naming themselves!” (Musashi)

The whole world is a bit, you know~.

When I was a middle school student, I fought to be the number one in a small town after all.

Then, probably thinking of something about my way of thinking, Farga showed a small smile.

This is Farga when he’s in a good mood.

Then,

“In that case, stupid younger brother. Do you want to try making your name famous?” (Farga)

“Hah?” (Velt)

“Even now, I don’t really know what you’re searching for in this journey, but at the very least, if you’re searching for someone, then making your name famous isn’t bad.” (Farga)

What is he trying to say? As I thought that, Farga turned over the newspaper, and showed me a certain page.

“Ah~, let’s see~, from the auction organization in Shiromu, there was an eyewitness report of the『Device Dragon』? that was not found in the abandoned town, but flew away to the mountain district in the north~, wait, what?” (Velt)

What’s up with that? This is my first time hearing of a dragon like that. Since it’s a dragon, doesn’t it roughly classify as a demi-human? But Musashi shook her head sideways, so she doesn’t seem to know.

“I’ve only heard a few damn rumors too. It’s unknown whether it’s something made by magic, an object containing a demi-human deity, or if it’s artificially made. However, a few of these dragons made by materials seems to have been seen in the Divine Being Continent before.” (Farga)

“Made by materials? That’s like a machine or something~, no, is that why it’s called a device? Does something like that actually exist?” (Velt)

“Among the Hunters, especially between the dragon slayers, apparently it’s as rare as the jewel dragons or the dragon kings. To be honest, I’m damn interested in it too.” (Farga)

In the mountain district to the north of Shiromu, huh. Yeah, it’s here. I see! That’s why he was in a good mood, this damn dragon maniac! Farga, who always glares with scary eyes, has awfully sparkling eyes.

“Well, I am interested.” (Farga)

“Ah, ah?” (Velt)

Damn, Farga’s so scary it’s terrifying right now. Normally, he’s a brocon that pampers me in the end, but today, he’s serious. If I refuse, he seems like he would send me flying.

“We, well, if it’s just for a bit.” (Velt)

“That’s damn right.” (Farga)

“U~mu, however, a dragon, huh~, I don’t really want to.” (Ura)

“Do not worry! I will protect you, my lord!” (Musashi)

However, although it has a questionable name, it is more or less a dragon. I wanted the day after meeting one of the Four Heavenly Beast Demi-humans to be a bit more mild.

TL Note: Haven't been posting daily recently since I've been busy and translating kaifuku jutsushi started feeling like a chore, which made me procrastinate... (I've been translating the same kaifuku chapter for like 3 days already and I still haven't finished. Oh my.) but anyways, I'll try to get back to posting daily.

Chapter 56: Hunter Guild

In the Humanity Continent, there's an organization called the『Hunter Guild』. To be honest, I don't know about it in detail, but there are people that call Hunters, 'adventurers for eternity', and 'jack of all trades with no specialties'. Various types of jobs are in that work, like subjugating or capturing monsters and people with bounties, excavating or protecting ruins and treasures, investigating unknown lands, and so on.

Anyone can register since there's no particular exam or anything, so there are all sorts of different-natured Hunters.

There are hoodlums who are troubled with jobs and actually powerful people who are charmed with exploring in freedom.

No matter how small of a village or hamlet it is, there are facilities with counters to convert completed jobs into money, and bulletin boards that provide jobs, as long as the country is affiliated to the Humanity Continent. In large cities or towns, some of those facilities are placed side by side to large taverns or recreational facilities.

In this『Yourumichi Village』that we're in right now, there aren't much people, and although the scenery is pretty, it's a pitiful village that's surrounded by mountains, forest, and streams. Because of that, the conversion counter was as small as a hut, but it looks a bit weird.

It's because there are armed men and women travelers making a line in front of the small hut.

“Oi oi, there are so many people there.” (Velt)

“Not all of them seem that respectable. In addition, there are some capable people here and there. Are they Hunters?” (Ura)

“Hohou, so they are the Hunters. Until now, I only saw them as a kidnapping commerce guild, but, I see. So these people are Hunters.” (Musashi)

I thought this was a peaceful village that doesn't have much people, but there are awfully a lot of outsiders.

That being said, why are these guys all carrying weapons like huge long swords, bows and big axes?

“Damn it. Seems they’re jumping in because of the newspaper article.”
(Farga)

“What do you mean, Farga.” (Velt)

“They’re the same as us. Hearing the rumor about the device dragon, these pieces of shits probably came jumping in.” (Farga)

“Eh, seriously? Wasn’t that a morning newspaper from today? It was fine for us since we coincidentally came to this village, but.” (Velt)

“Hmph, don’t look down on Hunters, stupid younger brother. Only ordinary second rate, third rate shits start moving after it goes on the newspaper.”
(Farga)

I see. There are guys that look like hoodlums, but these guys are more or less pros too.

Certainly, there’s no point if they gain news that goes on the newspaper for the general public, at the same time ordinary people do.

The speed you gain information about jobs regarding treasure and criminals is the most important thing.

I don’t know what route they used, but all of them gained information that the device dragon might be near here yesterday, and came flying in, huh.

“Oi, stupid younger brother. For now, just wait here. I’ll go buy anything that seems necessary at the general shop. Once your turn comes, just register as a Hunter.” (Farga)

After he said that, us three were left alone among the gathering of hunters, but obviously, I feel out of place.

Like, isn’t everyone in their twenties or thirties? There isn’t a single person in the same generation.

It’s kinda making me nervous.

“Ohh? What’s this~? Doesn’t it smell like a beast and a filthy demon?”
(Hunter)

“Really? No way, where’s it coming from?” (Hunter)

The crowd of Hunters suddenly became noisy.

Ura pulled her white hat deep over her head in a panic, and Musashi wore a braided hat on her head, trying to cover their beast and demon ears. Wait, Musashi, since when did you have that braided hat?

However, the others are professionals. The deception..... or rather, because Musashi hid her head without hiding her tail, her tiger tail was immediately exposed.

“Oi, there’s a demi-human!” (Hunter)

“It’s true. Hee~, oi, kid, is she your slave? Using a demi-human for a Hunter job, you really get it, don’t you.” (Hunter)

“Yup yup, their sense of smell surpass humans, and their movement abilities are superhuman. Besides, when it gets dangerous, you can use them as decoys or sacrificial pieces.” (Hunter)

They’re praising me with natural faces for some reason. These guys are middle-aged men in their thirties, right?

From seeing their fairly trained bodies and jackets that look like they’re accustomed to traveling, I can tell they’re veterans.

Just, the only thing I thought, ‘seriously?’ about, is that I thought people who say that kind of stuff to demi-humans had rotten eyes, but they said that without making particularly shady eyes.

So, I was strangely perplexed on how to answer.

“Ah~, ah~..... she’s cute, right?” (Velt)

“L, lord!” (Musashi)

It’s no use getting angry at people who think demi-human slaves are commonplace, so I decided to say that.

I just wanted to say that she’s not my slave but my personal attendant, but Musashi just groaned, saying “u~nn, u~nn’, not knowing whether she should be angry or happy.

“Hahhahaha, what, kid. You aren’t using demi-humans for ‘that sort of stuff’ at that age, right?” (Hunter)

“A man shouldn’t lose his virginity so easily like that. Chase after a woman you seriously fall in love with in your teens and twenties, but if you’re still a virgin in your thirties, you need to plead someone by paying them money.” (Hunter)

“By the way, I haven’t seen your face before, but where do you come from? Are

you a rookie? Either way, since you've come here, does that mean that you're aiming for that dragon?" (Hunter)

Because the conversation was about to become vulgar, Ura smoothly pinches my waist, but just stay quiet for a while. It'll become troublesome after all.

"Ah~, well, I am more or less aiming for that dragon." (Velt)

"Yeah, I get you, it's a man's romance. After all, I heard that if you can actually capture the device dragon, you'll get so much money that you wouldn't even have used it all when you die." (Hunter)

"What? Is it that expensive? Who would buy something like that, though. There probably won't be any auctions in Shiromu for a while after all." (Velt)

"Kid, you don't know anything. Device dragons are an ultra rare species that only lives in the Divine Being Continent, so isn't it obvious? Although it's been confirmed that they live there, only one was captured and sent to the Shiromu Auction. It truly is a legendary dragon." (Hunter)

"Hm~m." (Velt)

"I'm worried~, kid. If you want, you can join us uncles, you know? I don't mind if we split the reward evenly. If we capture it, there would be more money than we could ever use after all." (Hunter)

"No, we need to ask our leader for that." (Hunter)

I see, then of course Hunters would gather around.

"By the way, how much will it be?" (Velt)

"Hm~m, I heard the reserve price is expected to be five billion at Shiromu." (Hunter)

"Haaaaaaaaaaaaaaaa? No way, the digits are completely different to what I thought!" (Velt)

Rather, I wasn't going to do it for the money, but hearing a sum of that much gives me motivation.

Five billion, like, it would even take time just thinking about how to use that much.

It's an amount of money that Ura, who was a princess, would faint from. Like, where did they prepare that much money from in this warring world?

"Ohh, aren't you Raipou from the Bone Ding Hunter! Join us!" (Hunter)

“You have a nice build, how about joining us? There’s an investigation magician that can use Search in our team, you know?” (Hunter)

“Wai-, the big boobed, blond haired bikini armor duo over there! Aren’t you the bewitching duo, Kuri and Risu! You’re the duo that uses their bodies to gain information about hunts. Ku~h, I want you two as my comrades.” (Hunter)

Looking carefully, although the Hunters gathered around here all look separated, they seem to be talking and discussing with each other. Certainly, it won’t hurt to evenly split money that you won’t finish using in your whole life, and it actually raises the chances of capturing it.

“Oi, Velt, look.” (Ura)

“It seems the others are gradually gathering comrades.” (Musashi)

What should we do? Well, there’s no problem in our strength though. As far as I saw from looking around briefly, there are quite talented guys here and there, but they’re inferior to us four. However, when it’s related to searching, I don’t know what we should do since we can’t use that kind of magic.

“Oi, stupid younger brother, have you finished registering?” (Farga)

“Hmm? No, not yet. Did you finish shopping, Farga?” (Velt)

“Yeah. The amount of things I can buy in this damn small village is restricted, but I did get the minimum things.” (Farga)

Seeing Farga shouldering a huge cloth bag and a satchel after he finished shopping, I said his name without caring at all, but in the next moment, the faces of the other Hunters stiffened, and the other guys became noisy the moment they saw Farga’s appearance, finally raising a loud voice.

“““““Sca, scarlet dragon slayer Farga!”“““““ (Hunters)

Ooh, nice commotion.

“Oi oi oi oi, is he that Farga!” (Hunter)

“Of course Farga is participating too.” (Hunter)

“Well, it’s only natural.” (Hunter)

“You’re joking. Now that’s it’s come to this, I have to link up with him.....” (Hunter)

“Idiot. Farga’s famous for not being in a party with anyone, you know? He

would obviously refuse you.” (Hunter)

“O, oi, kid, like, are you Farga’s acquaintance?” (Hunter)

Even the veterans are making super surprised faces.

As I thought, Farga’s famous, huh. Well, he’s called humanity’s strongest hunter, so it’s only obvious.

“Hee~, you’re that famous Farga, huh~, this really is lucky~.” (Hunter)

“Hey~, Farga-sama~, let us~, join your~, party~, hey, let us~.” (Hunter)

“Yup yup, let us join it~, and then you can insert anything into us~.” (Hunter)

“Our combination~, is amazing~, you’ll become addicted to it~, hey~, it’s fine, right~?” (Hunter)

Fast. The bikini armor duo that have been catching my eye since before, leaned against Farga.

Well, to be frank, to catch this time’s dragon, there’s definitely a higher chance to get it if you join Farga.

However, Farga’s expression doesn’t change at all. Far from that, he even grabbed hold of the two girls’ faces.

“Out of my sight, you damn bitches.” (Farga)

Uooooooooooo, he, he’s a mannnnn.

“Tsu-, wha, what are you doing!” (Hunter)

“Geez~, that’s hurt~. If you let us join you, it will be amazing~.” (Hunter)

Well, certainly, it does seem like it would be amazing if they joined you. The other Hunters are looking at him extremely enviously after all. However, Farga just clicked his tongue, and kicked our backs.

“I have a party already. My stupid younger brother, my stupid younger brother’s mistress, and my stupid younger brother’s follower.” (Farga)

“Wa, wait, Farga! What do you mean mistress! They would make a misunderstanding! I am not his mistress, but his. Le. Gal. Wife!” (Ura)

“Farga-dono! Fo, follower sounds, being a follower sounds insignificant! I am, I am!” (Musashi)

Ura and Musashi are screaming away, but the Hunters are making a racket too.

“Wha-, Farga made a party! I’ve never heard of something like that!” (Hunter)
“Farga’s stupid younger brother? Did he have someone like that!?” (Hunter)
“Wai-, younger brother? Then, don’t we just have to drop the younger brother?
I’m going to eat you~.” (Hunter)
“Hm~m, this is my first time having a young virgin~. Damn, I’m getting fired
up~.” (Hunter)
“Oi, kid! Please, let this uncle join you~!” (Hunter)

Wai, wai, they’re even observing and swarming me! The middle aged men are
entreating with serious eyes, the erotic girls are touching my crotch, Ura and
Musashi are kicking them away, and there’s a massive commotion happening
before we even depart.

This might be the first time this village has been this noisy.

However, the commotion in this village settled down with just a few words.

“Hee~, so that’s your rumored younger brother, huh, Farga.” (?)
“Wha-.....!” (Farga)

It was a young woman’s voice. When I turned around, a woman with an even
stranger appearance than the bikini armor was there.
I feel like I’ve seen it on TV in Asakura Ryuuma’s period. The type of clothes a
princess from ancient Rome or Egypt or Greece or somewhere would wear. Was
it called a toga?
It’s really thin and seems like it would easily tear, and I can see her body line
clearly. However, she strangely doesn’t feel erotic.
No, on the contrary, she feels sublime.

“Hello there, little brother. Nice to meet you!” (?)
“Ah, y, yeah, hi.” (Velt)

She has a cute baby face, but she’s probably a bit older than me. On the
borderline of her teens and twenties, maybe around the same as Farga?
The huge pink ribbon tying up her long, beige hair behind her head looks
childish, but she brings about a mysterious atmosphere that seems like it might
make me unintentionally say, ‘oneechan’.

“Oi, Farga, who exactly is this woman.....” (Velt)

The moment I asked who she is, Farga clicked his tongue.

“You’re.....『Monster Master Cleran』.” (Farga)

“It’s been a while, Farga. I thought we would definitely meet if I came here. Geez~, where have you been until now?” (Cleran)

Monster master? Cleran? This is my first time hearing either of them. Like, I didn’t think Farga was acquainted with such a beautiful girl. Furthermore, I didn’t think there would be a woman in this world that would puff out her cheeks towards Farga to show she’s angry. However, normally, I would tease him by saying, “my my Farga-san, I don’t know this person~, please introduce her~”, but I don’t feel like it. That’s because I felt some dark, indescribable thing from this woman.

“..... For the past few years..... I’ve been back at my hometown.” (Farga)
“Eh! Really? I heard you had a fight with your family though..... geez, I was worried about you!” (Cleran)

“Tch, so damn annoying.” (Farga)

“Ah, you can’t say such foul words! But, I’m glad. You seem energetic!” (Cleran)

What’s this strangely uncomfortable feeling I get from her sweet, beautiful and gentle smile?

I’ve felt a similar atmosphere like this before.

“That’s right, Farga. In these five years..... what happened? Did you make a beautiful lover?” (Cleran)

She’s looking uneasily at him with upturned eyes. My, how cute.

“So damn stupid.” (Farga)

“Fufufu, geez, you haven’t changed, have you. But, I’m glad. If there was someone like that, I was about to tear them up into pieces and throw them away in a cesspool after all.” (Cleran)

..... Hmm?

“Ah, also, about those Kuri and Risu people from before. I’ll dissect them and use their brains and entrails as dragon feed, so don’t worry. Despite being toilet woman that are covered in that much cloudy fluid from other men, they clung onto you. I’m a bit jealous, you know?” (Cleran)

Ah~, I remember.

It's my trauma from five years ago.

Just like the perverted carnivorous general Gyanza, she's a woman that's missing a fatal feeling as a human.

It's so shocking that Ura and Musashi mouths are partly open.

And at this time, I just couldn't help but feel sorry for the dragon these members are aiming for.

Chapter 57: Happily hunting with everyone

There are no eyewitness reports of the device dragon crossing the national border.

So, the chance of the dragon still being in this mountain district is high.

The adventurers lost in money and romance rushed into the forest as if saying first come, first served.

“Oi, can you find out where it is by using divination?” (Hunter)

“If there are any huntsmen in this village, then we should get information about the ecosystem of wild beasts and monsters inhabiting the forest.” (Hunter)

“Oi, apparently there aren’t many high-level monsters, but it’s quite wide. Let’s decide on our search range and landmarks.” (Hunter)

“Let’s check up on the forest route and mountain route too.” (Hunter)

Unexpectedly, not everyone was just randomly running in.

They each have their styles and strategies, so the Hunters are all trying to search for the device dragon with their own method.

On the other hand, what about us? Farga is just silently walking in the lead without especially giving us instructions.

“Oi, Farga, are we fine like this?” (Velt)

“Hmph, that sort of magic is what guys that don’t have perception nor intuition learn. I don’t need it.” (Farga)

“No like, even if you talk about intuition like that~.” (Velt)

“After many years of experience, you can sense each breath of the insects and birds make by just walking in the forest calmly. With just that, you’ll be able to see the damn small as, out of place things.” (Farga)

“Ahh, this older brother’s hopeless, he isn’t nice to amateurs. Too much of an instinctive genius.” (Velt)

Isn’t it better if we think of some strategy too? Then, Farga turned around and uninterestedly talked.

“The ecology of the device dragon wasn’t damn clarified. There was only the

information that that type of dragon was seen in the Divine Being Continent. Since the guys that saw it let it go past since they wanted to avoid unnecessary fights, they didn't find out how strong the device dragon is. That's why I was damn surprised when I heard it would be put up for sale at the next auction. I don't know who, how or when they captured it. Honestly, it's useless thinking about this and that against an enemy that's completely unknown. All you can do is believe in your intuition and walk." (Farga)

"In other words, although you don't have any clues, you're just going to walk around randomly, hoping you find it? Can you still call yourself a Hunter like that?" (Velt)

However, that can't be helped either.

Looking at our party again, there's a spear user, martial artist, and a swordswoman, so it's full of attack specializing members.

To be honest, it would be a lot easier if there was an all-purpose magician, and we could have just cooperated with the gathered Hunters, but Farga firmly denied all of them.

Well, he did hate being crowded from when he was a brat after all.

That part of him might be similar to Asakura Ryuuma.

"Farga, what about that woman called Cleran? You called her a monster master, but wouldn't it considerably help if she was here?" (Ura)

"Umu, she was a somewhat scary person, but a monster master is a『Mutant of Life』, who understands all languages of animals and monsters in this world, occasionally making them their comrades. Until now, a few have been confirmed among demons, demi-humans and even humans, but are they not valuable existences that are low in number?" (Musashi)

Monster master.

I don't really understand either, but that's apparently a general term that you call people who have that kind of characteristic, rather than occupation.

That innate characteristic has no relation to race and is one talent.

It might be something like the absolute pitch from Asakura Ryuuma's world.

However, you can't learn that ability through practice, and it seems to be innate.

"Don't get involved with that damn woman. Well, she'll probably be the one

that gets involved with you though.” (Farga)

“Kuhahaha, what, you look quite afraid. Did something happen in the past?”
(Velt)

“That damn woman certainly is a monster master, but her true nature is different.” (Farga)

“True nature?” (Velt)

“In the first place, you guys don’t know shit about what a monster master is. That isn’t something that can just come to a mutual understanding with animals or monsters and make them their comrades.” (Farga)

I asked just out of curiosity.

Then,

“Farga and~ big sis met when we were still beginners.” (Cleran)

When did she! The woman that was somehow walking with her arm around my shoulder, showed a gentle smile.

“T, this damn woman!” (Farga)

“Velt!” (Ura)

“Kuh, you swine! Get away from my lord!” (Musashi)

No one realized.

Therefore, everyone immediately shifted into their attack motion.

However,

“Aha! Geez~, you shouldn’t get angry, grr grr♪.” (Cleran)

I thought Farga’s spear, Ura’s fist and Musashi’s sword caught Cleran, but they all passed through her.

“Tch.” (Farga)

“Wha, it, it slipped through!” (Ura)

“Wha, she, she’s a monster!” (Musashi)

I realized that I couldn’t feel the hand on my shoulder. Does this woman not have substance?

“Ufufu, little bro’s retainer is really cute. Calling me a monster! At any rate, that’s awful of you~, even though I want to be part of your group, you ignored me and kept going forward after all.” (Cleran)

I hear her voice, and I can feel her presence too. Looking up, I see Cleran smiling sweetly while sitting on a tree branch.
What was that, right now?

“Fufu~nn, you’re making a curious face, little bro. Do you want to know? You want to know, right~. Can’t be helped, yup yup. Big sis will teach you!” (Cleran)

I didn’t particularly ask, but since it seems like she’s going to chat about it from herself, I stayed silent.

“Do you know about the monster insect called Miraju? Mirajus are the weakest monster insects since they’re small and have no fighting ability. But you know, in the wild, their survival rate is remarkably higher than other monster insects. That’s because when they get attacked by their natural enemies, Mirajus change their body temperature and create mirages.” (Cleran)

Cleran is explaining like a school teacher, but honestly, how is that connected to this?

Then, before she finished explaining, Farga jumped up.

“Fucking die.” (Farga)

“Geez~, Farga~, I’m in the middle of giving little bro a lecture you know!” (Cleran)

However,

“Ufufu, pyuu!” (Cleran)

“D, damn it!” (Farga)

In the next moment, Cleran spat out something white from inside her mouth.

“Farga!” (Velt)

“Don’t touch it, Velt!” (Ura)

“Wha, what is this! Lord, get behind me!” (Musashi)

Farga avoided it on the spur of the moment, but when that white something landed on the ground, we doubted our eyes.

That was a huge spider web.

“That was an amazing reaction, Farga.” (Cleran)

Why can this woman spit out a spider web from her mouth!

“This is another kind of monster insect, but do you know about the Elephant Spider? It’s a huge and brutal carnivorous spider that only exists in the Demon Continent. Humans would just like~, be swallowed whole in one bite and it’s scary~. But you know, the scariest part about it is that it can make thread from inside their body that’s equipped with mana, and although they excel in flexibility and elasticity, they can’t be cut no matter what with a half-hearted attack.” (Cleran)

Like I said, enough with that, and just move on to why you can do that. The moment I thought that Farga sighed and answered.

“This is the truth about this woman. For a monster master, understanding the voices of living things is just an extra thing. The true nature of them is that they can make the abilities of living things they eat as their own.” (Farga)

E, eat?

“When I say eat, I mean literally eat. Either they fry them after dealing with them, eat them while they’re alive during battle, or dismantle them into pieces, cooking them to eat. Something like that. They’re able to master the abilities and characteristics of all monsters in this world. That’s why it’s called monster master.” (Farga)

Eat isn’t a metaphor for something, much less a perverted meaning either.

“If I stay with Farga, I might be able to meet lo~ts of monsters I haven’t eaten before. The dragon I before was delicious~.” (Cleran)

It genuinely means eating.

“Wait a minute, Farga. I didn’t know that a monster master has that kind of ability! Isn’t a monster master only able to understand animals and monsters?” (Ura)

“That’s right. However, there are other reasons why that ability isn’t known. Most monster masters become votaries of vegetarianism the moment they realize that ability, after all.” (Farga)

Votaries of vegetarianism? Ahh, he’s talking about being vegetarian, huh. (TL Note: Farga literally says vegetarian in kanji, but Velt says vegetarian in katakana, so I just put in some extra jargon to make it sound more

complicated...)

“Can you eat inedible monsters that can even converse?” (Farga)

Ce, certainly.

Ura, Musashi and I accepted it from our minds.

That reminds me, someone from someplace talked about something similar. Something like, would you be able to eat cows or pigs that can converse with you?

“She can. No matter how much the animals scream, she eats them, occasionally dismantling their entrails and searching for the tasty parts, eating it up completely.” (Farga)

“Farga, don’t talk about people like they’re a deviant! That’s a custom in nature of natural selection! Besides, I just think that it’s manners to eat everything from their blood to their bone marrow so that you don’t let the monsters die in vain, you know?” (Cleran)

No, well, I don’t feel like arguing over the cruel cuisine or her way of eating. Humans do anything, like constantly impregnating cows to make cow milk, making ikizukuri of fish, eating live seafood or making methods of producing foie gras, and I eat it happily.

But that isn’t the problem.

Could I do it? Eating a living thing that I can come to a mutual understanding with?

It’s probably impossible. My spirit would break.

Of course, I can understand the feelings of monster masters as they become vegetarian.

And yet, this woman does it.

“I see. I thought you were an innocent lady, but you’re quite wild. Well, leaving that aside, isn’t that smart?” (Velt)

She truly is a literal carnivore. Without even having her spirit broken, she eats meat.

It’s hard to say that this woman is just a deviant.

In my eyes, deviants are the type of guys that say they simply love seeing animals scream or bleed.

Although her senses are somewhat messed up, I feel like it's wrong to say she's abnormal if her only objective is to eat.

She's different to that stupid Gyanza woman who has too extreme assumptions and isn't open to conversation.

Rather, I can't say I don't think that she's a lively woman.

"Ara." (Cleran)

"Oi, stupid younger brother." (Farga)

"No no no no, wait wait, Velt." (Ura)

"Lo lo lo lo lo lo, lord! What are you saying!" (Musashi)

Hmm? What? Let alone Farga and the others, even Cleran is making a surprised face.

Why?

"Lord, are you not scared of this person?" (Musashi)

"Ah? Isn't it fine? If you're going to kill them anyway, isn't it up to her whether she eats it or throws it away? Well, it's a different story if she even eats a human though." (Velt)

"N, no no no, but!" (Musashi)

"Rather than waving around your half-hearted animal rights spirit, isn't it better to live optimistically while making the most of your ability?" (Velt)

"Tha, that is true, but." (Musashi)

"Well, it's an ability I wouldn't want to learn even if I had to die though." (Velt)

Well, it isn't that different from hunting as a hobby or making pelts.

It's just that she can hear the voices of those animals.

Although, it's a lifestyle that I can't pull off.

Furthermore, she's living openly without trying to hide that.

Isn't that fine in its own way?

No, that's not it. It's not wrong, but there's probably more to it.

"No, Musashi. That might not be all it is." (Velt)

"Lord?" (Musashi)

If it was me from a bit before, I probably wouldn't have thought like that. If I had met with this woman before, I probably would have immediately rejected her.

However, my current self is strangely different.

“In these few days, because I saw hideous slave merchants being violated in Shiromu and almost vomited multiple times, actually throwing up too, my senses might have gone mad.” (Velt)

I saw nothing but the repulsing vulgarness of humans and scenes of hell where massacres unfold, so I became to think, ‘isn’t it fine if it’s just eating monsters?’

“Well, she probably isn’t as scary as Esamu and doesn’t seem as stupid as Gyanza, so I don’t care anymore.” (Velt)

Then, going beyond a friendly smile, Cleran showed a smile of satisfaction.

“Nice one, little bro! I can understand why Farga became a brocon~, then, could you ask Farga~? To let big sis join your group~.” (Cleran)

Ah, no, wait a minute.

“No, when I said I don’t care, I meant that I’m not interested in you, and I don’t have any intention to let you join our group.” (Velt)

“Ehh! What’s up with that!” (Cleran)

This and that is different.

“Farga and I are the same, in that we hate being crowded by anything and everything.” (Velt)

“Wai-, whyyy! You say you hate being crowded, but aren’t you crowded right now!?” (Cleran)

“No, I was originally planning to travel alone, but a lot of things happened.” (Velt)

Cleran puffed out her cheeks in anger because of my response, but Ura and the others nodded multiple times in relief.

I mean, I would hate having such a weird lady join our group too.

Then,

“Boo~, little bro you bully~, big sis is a bit angry, you know?” (Cleran)

“Ah? What do you want, what’s going to happen if you get angry?” (Velt)

“I might take some parts of your insides?” (Cleran)

Is she seriously going to do it?
Her face is getting a bit serious.
By the time I realized it, every tree in the forest was shaking, and the birds flew away in a panic.
This situation is a little unpleasant.
However, as the person that picked the fight, I'm wasn't that scared.
That's because I didn't think this woman was as scary as Esamu, like I said before.
However,

“Fufu, just kidding~!” (Cleran)

In the next moment, Cleran jumped up in the air.
Is it a flying ability? At the very least, it isn't magic.

“It's an animal's instinct. I can at least understand the strength of my enemy. Farga is here, and even the demon-chan and demi-human-chan are quite skilled. My『Current self』can't win.” (Cleran)

As I thought, this woman isn't completely mad.
She could even calmly judge her opponent's power.
However, we all froze from the words she said in the next moment.

“That's right, my current self can't win. But I wonder what would happen if I eat the『Device Dragon』~?” (Cleran)
“”””!!”””” (Velt, Farga, Ura, Musashi)

Crap!

“See you later, mean Farga and little bro. If you're still cheeky the next time we meet, I'm going to eat Farga, okay?” (Cleran)

Cleran jumped up to the top of a mountain.
While watching her back, we became surprised.
The power and abilities of the device dragon are unknown, but as expected, it wouldn't be weak, right?
What would happen if that woman gained the abilities of that dragon?

“Damn it!” (Farga)
“Wai-, this isn't good! It's because Velt uselessly provoked her!” (Ura)

“Crap, I got a bit too cocky.” (Velt)

“Uoooo, looord, let’s run after her! If we don’t catch up fast enough, lord will, lord wiiiiill!” (Musashi)

This ended up being quite a troubling development.
Doesn’t seem like we’ll be having fun hunting.

Chapter 58: Actually surprised

We continue walking through the forest, but nothing particularly seems to have changed. The creeks are still quietly streaming.

Even when I concentrate my mind and look at the birds or insects, I don't see any change in their appearances.

Although there's a small village in the foot of this land, the villagers don't get injuries from beasts or monsters either.

It really is a normal forest.

"Oi, Farga~, we can't see it at all. Is a dragon really here? I don't know how big that dragon is, but wouldn't we find it pretty easily if it is here?" (Velt)

Farga is just walking silently without saying a word. To be honest, I'm tired.

"Certainly, although we are just randomly walking, it is suspicious that there are no traces." (Ura)

"Lord, in case you are thirsty, I have a canteen here. How about we take a rest somewhere for once?" (Musashi)

I don't think that woman called Cleran found the dragon and ate it as of now. The other Hunters would have made a clamour if they found it.

I'm kinda tired, bored, and don't have much motivation. In the first place, there wasn't even any proof that the device dragon is near here.

Seeing me take a breather while leaning against a tree, Ura and Musashi stopped walking too. They haven't mentioned it, but I can tell they're subtly bored.

"You damn weaklings. Can't be helped, guess we'll take a break." (Farga)

Seeing our tension, Farga took a break here too.

He threw canteens and sandwiches at us after taking them out of a large bag, and we let out a sigh of relief.

"Good grief. Stupid younger brother, even though we've only been searching for around five hours, you got all worn out." (Farga)

“No no, five hours is quite a lot isn’t it? Furthermore, we aren’t just walking, but we’re also concentrating on our surroundings.” (Velt)

Would it have been different if we fought with a monster? I mean, it’s not like I want to fight or something, but it wouldn’t be weird if you encounter one after walking in the forest this much, and since this place is basically peace itself without any dragons, it’s kinda a letdown.

“Hmph, then remember it. This is basically what Hunters do. It’s not about whether you can catch prey or obtain treasure. You don’t even have proof that that prey is there, but you don’t move because you have proof. It’s the same for treasure. You don’t dig a hole because you have proof that treasure is buried there. Proof isn’t what stimulates Hunters; it’s instinct. As a result, even if it ends in vain, that’s our job.” (Farga)

It was a bit unusual.

I thought Farga became a Hunter when he was a brat because he didn’t want to succeed the throne.

However, the truth might be that he abandoned the throne and left his house to become a Hunter.

Farga has a difficult to understand personality, but I felt that he has quite some attachment to being a Hunter.

“Hunters, huh. It is too complicated for me.” (Musashi)

“Ahh, that reminds me, Hunters killed your parents and the elf they served, right?” (Velt)

“Yes. Ah, er, of course, since then, I thought and understood that resenting all humans and lumping them all together is wrong, but I still have mixed feelings about Hunters.” (Musashi)

That’s right. Too many things happened in Shiromu that I had completely forgotten about her past, but Hunters were the reason behind Musashi’s hate to humans. Hunters overhunted the elves and demi-humans who could be sold at high prices, and her parents that tried to stop that were killed.

Of course that would be complicated for her.

“About that, the pieces of shit that did that were probably the Hunters hired by『Love and Money』. When I was still a beginner, there was a time when large

amounts of elves and mermaids were being traded in Shiromu. Most of them had their prices knocked down though.” (Farga)

Love and Money.

That name strangely bothered me.

“The organization Jiel is in, and the one that Miyamoto, no, Musashi’s grandad tried to destroy, huh.” (Velt)

The words Miyamoto said when we parted in Shiromu; Love and Money’s boss is one of Asakura Ryuuma’s classmates.

“What is it, stupid younger brother. Are you interested in it?” (Farga)

“Nope, not at all.” (Velt)

To be honest, it would be a lie if I said it wasn’t on my mind.

However, do I want to willingly get involved with it and try to do something for Kagami? Not really.

When I got involved with Miyamoto, it was because of the situation there, but as of now, I’m not thinking of doing anything for Kagami.

No matter what he does in this world, as long as it doesn’t affect me, then I don’t feel like acting as a champion of justice.

“So, Musashi. What are you actually going to do? Are you going to completely wash away your resentment towards humans and stick to my back?” (Velt)

“That is, as of now, I cannot say anything. Lord and Farga-dono are special, but I cannot say anything about humans.” (Musashi)

“I guess so. Well, it’s not something you can so easily make a distinction about.” (Velt)

“To be honest, I am perplexed. So, can I ask how you are? Although your parents were killed by a demi-human, were you able to easily make a distinction with me, who is a fellow demi-human?” (Musashi)

Distinction? No, that’s probably a delicate thing for me too.

In reality, I can’t imagine what would happen if I saw the demi-human that killed my old man and mum in front of my eyes.

It feels strange just hearing ‘demi-human’.

However, just because of that, it wouldn’t make me have a strong reaction against Musashi or Miyamoto and the others.

“Rather than saying I made a distinction, I think I was just lucky since I didn’t fall so low that I would go mad with resentment, hatred or grief.” (Velt)

“That is, uh, do you mean that when your parents were killed..... you were not that sad?” (Musashi)

“No. I cried. I regretted it. I wanted to kill demi-humans. But before I went mad, there were people that saved me.” (Velt)

“Saved you?” (Musashi)

That’s right, I was lucky. More than Samejima. More than Miyamoto. I didn’t become a slave to hatred after losing important people to me.

“One person was my teacher. He understood my real self and was a person that I could talk to without hiding anything. The other person..... was a bit of a precocious brat, but despite being a brat, she said she seriously likes me and was someone that would seriously cry for me.” (Velt)

Sensei and Forna. I might have only been able to stay as I am now because they were there for me.

“Stupid younger brother. You’re talking about my stupid younger sister, right? She’ll go so damn mad from joy that you wouldn’t think she’s someone from this world, you know?” (Farga)

“..... Hmph..... if I was in the same situation, I would have definitely.....” (Ura)

Nah, I can’t say that to Forna. If I did, she would get really cocky and probably irritate me.

Also, Ura. There’s no point if you try to compete with her here, so don’t get angry.

“Anyway, as I just said, I was lucky. Right now and in my past life too, for some reason, there was a person that held out their hand to me, so I won’t be of much use with this.” (Velt)

My past life. That’s right, it was the same in Asakura Ryuuma’s time too. I meaninglessly rebelled alone, and yet there was a woman who held her hand out to me.

Of course, Asakura Ryuuma probably wouldn’t have gone on the field trip and died if he hadn’t met that woman.

Well, since Velt Jeeha's life wouldn't be here if it wasn't for that, I can't really say anything.

Well, it's useless just thinking about stuff like that. Making everything more simple is better.

"How about you, Ura-dono?" (Musashi)

"It's a delicate topic for me too. I don't have good feelings towards the crazy human who killed mother or the humans that killed father and everyone who had been close to me since the past, but given that it was a war, I tried to forcefully make a distinction." (Ura)

That's right, Musashi and Ura are both just thinking too much about unimportant things.

"Who cares about making a distinction or whatever. You don't like what you don't like, like what you like, and if you end up liking something, then there's no helping it. It's fine like that." (Velt)

"Lord~, however, you can't simply classify society with what you like and don't like." (Musashi)

"Then for people you can't classify, you don't have to like or dislike them. In other words, they aren't your enemies nor your allies." (Velt)

Musashi, who was making a difficult face, probably thought that thinking about it is foolish, and looked up while leaning against a tree.

I don't know how she felt after hearing my words.

However, rather than a hesitant thinking face, she made a somewhat refreshed face.

The atmosphere became a little relaxed.

However, it was at that time.

"Gyaaaaa, pl, please help meeee!" (?)

At that time, a scream mixed with fear resounded inside the forest.

"N, no, I'll be killed! Eaten! Someone, someone, save meee!" (?)

The voice seems to be coming from one person, but they probably lost themselves in shouting.

I was able to feel the imminent, dreadful threat.

“Oi, Farga, there weren’t any brutal monsters or animals around here, right?”
(Velt)

“At least none that a professional Hunter would be afraid of and escape from.”
(Farga)

“Save for one exception…… that is……” (Musashi)

Tension naturally ran through us.

“Good grief, even though we’re having a serious topic.” (Velt)

“What a boorish guy.” (Ura)

“Indeed.” (Musashi)

For me, this will be my first time seeing a dragon.

Not good, I’m getting quite nervous. Like, it’s going to be okay, right?

I won’t be suddenly eaten, right?

However, this scream clearly said ‘eaten’.

“Hmph, piece of shit. They seem to have come to us.” (Farga)

The corners of Farga’s mouth slanted upwards. The pressure coming from him feels like my whole body is being pierced.

He’s serious.

“Velt, stay back a bit. I’m counting on you for support.” (Ura)

“I will not let it touch lord at all!” (Musashi)

Farga at the vanguard. Ura and Musashi behind him. I’m not standby at the back, to float whatever’s fallen nearby and strike it with them.

“Good grief, you annoying, natural fantasy material! If you’re coming, then just come!” (Velt)

Now, come out. I already resolved myself, so I’ll take you on for as long as you want.

“Nooooo, someone, please save meee!” (?)

And then, we saw the appearance of what pushed its way through the dense thicket.

“Wha!” (Farga)

“What is this!” (Ura)

“No way!” (Musashi)

“Thi, thi, this is the, de, device dragon!” (Velt)

The thing that flew out was flapping both wings, had two horns, two arms, claws and two legs.

If you were to call it a stereotypical, common dragon, it would be, but its skin up to its eyes all looked like grey iron or stainless steel, and I can see joints for each part.

Certainly, rather than a living thing, it looked like a substance was moving.

However, that wasn't what we were surprised about.
We were surprised about two points.

The first one was the size.

“Is, is this right?” (Farga)
“Umu, it's cute?” (Ura)
“No way, it is sma, sma, sma, small.” (Musashi)
“So, so smaaaaaaaaaaaaaall!” (Velt)

That's right, the device dragon that flew out from deep in the thicket was extremely small.
It's like, only as big as a cat or a toy dog.

“Uwaaaaa, I'm going to be killed~!” (?)

And the other part we were surprised about, is this.
We completely thought it was a Hunter that raised a scream while being chased by the device dragon, but we were wrong.

“Stop right thereee! Just obediently let me eat youuuu!” (Cleran)

The one that raised a scream and ran away, was the device dragon.
While crying out, the device dragon, no, while actually crying, it was being chased by Cleran, who became the predator.
That's right,

“Uwaaan, humans are too scaryyyy!” (Device Dragon)

The device dragon was screaming in the human language.

“““““It, it talked!!””””” (Velt, Farga, Ura, Musashi)

Dragons can talk? No, even Farga became speechless.

What exactly should we do about this situation?

Even though we stood ready so that we could immediately start moving if something happened, none of us could move a single step.

Just this time, we couldn't make the decision of whether this thing is an enemy, an ally, or neither.

Chapter 59: Just an enemy now

Neither of them are enemies or allies, but as expected, I don't know what I'm supposed to think of this.

“Uwaaaaan, what, what did I dooo! Please save meeee!” (Device Dragon)
“Ufufu, ufufufufu! This is unexpected, this is completely unexpected! To think the device dragon was so small! I can't wait anymore~, to see what you taste like!” (Cleran)

The super small device dragon trying to escape while crying and shouting, and the woman chasing after it with a full-faced smile.
A dragon about to be eaten by a human chasing after it, like, isn't it usually the other way.

“Nooo! Miss, seriously stop! I'm, I'm, probably not tasty!” (Device Dragon)
Thi, this is the dragon that's called a legend among the Hunters?
“Oi, Farga, what's going on.” (Velt)
“Since no information about the device dragon being sold in Shiromu's auction was disclosed even till just before it went up, we didn't know what kind of body it had.....” (Farga)
“To think it was that small. What should we do? Are we going to defeat her? Or watch it be eaten?” (Ura)
“I would feel guilty doing that after hearing it scream that much.” (Musashi)

Good grief. Give me back my resolve.
Like, I don't know what I should start off being surprised about.
First of all, the device dragon really does seem like it's made of materials.
However, why is it so small? Because it's a child? No, in the first place, can it even be a child or an adult?

“What did I even dooo! I got kidnapped by a strange group, got destroyed and put on fire after being kidnapped, and now I'm about to be eaten by a scary miss, what am I supposed to dooo!” (Device Dragon)

No, rather than that, why can you talk in the human language.
There are way too many things I'm curious about.

Well, for now.

"Fuwa fuwa withdrawal." (Velt)

I tried testing it out.

"O, owaaaa, what is this! My body's getting pulled!" (Device Dragon)
"Ara?" (Cleran)

I tried using my magic on the device dragon that was just about to be eaten by Cleran.

Levitation (floating) magic fundamentally can't be used on living things.
However, when I tried using it, the device dragon was completely caught in my magic, getting pulled towards me.

"Seriously? You're not alive? Even though you're completely showing your character." (Velt)

I caught the device dragon that was pulled towards me.

"Thi, this is the device dragon. As expected, it's a man-made object." (Ura)
"There really are profoundly mysterious beings in this world." (Musashi)

Although it was reasonably heavy, it was to the extent that I could hold in my hand.

Also, its body is hard. It was clearly made from artificial substances.

"Gyaaaa, wh, what is this, even you! Are you going to eat me? Nooo, save meee, goshujinsamaaaa!" (Device Dragon)

It's struggling really hard, and I'm kinda feeling sorry for it when I see it make a fuss so shamefully.

"Was that you right now, otouto-kun? Snatching others' game is common sense for Hunters, but as a person, interrupting someone's meal is a breach of manners, you know?" (Cleran)

Cleran, who was about to bite into the device dragon in just a bit more, showed a slightly scary smile while coming closer.

“Well, I just got a bit curious and just wanted to check it.” (Velt)

“Ara, really? Then, can you give that to oneechan?” (Cleran)

Cleran smiled sweetly and pleaded me while tilting her head, but saying yes now, means that this device dragon will get eaten up completely.

“Nooooooooooo, please stop! I, I don’t want to get eaten! Please save me!”
(Device Dragon)

Well, what should I do?
No, rather than that, what exactly is this thing?

“Ah~, so in the end, what are you? Are you the device dragon that was planned to be on the auction?” (Velt)

“Device dragon? Ahh, the name humans call me by, right? Well, I don’t know. Goshujinsama was the one that made me.” (Device Dragon)

“Haa? Made? A weird thing like you? Like, you say make, but can people make something like you?” (Velt)

“What do you mean strange! I am one of goshujinsama’s masterpieces!”
(Device Dragon)

This is made of materials? It’s such an emotional dragon that I’m hesitating to call it that.

Do these kinds of things exist since it’s a fantasy world? However, I can only see Farga making a face of wonder.

“You called yourself one of the masterpieces, right? Then do other things like you also exist?” (Velt)

“Ye-, yes. I had a senpai with a bigger body than mine. According to goshujinsama, my body is small because it was a miniaturization experiment or economising or something though.” (Device Dragon)

“Maybe the device dragon seen on the Divine Being Continent was made by this thing’s goshujinsama.” (Velt)

The probability of that is probably high.
But like, people really can make things like this in this world, huh. Fantasy is profound too. Well, it’s laughable that the reason why its body is small is for economising though.

“Shit. Well, the truth that disclosed the legend is this..... that’s new.” (Farga)

Farga looks like he's already a little letdown and lost interest.
He's making an indifferent face.

"Hey, come on~, oneechan is starving right now~." (Cleran)

In addition, I don't know what this girl will do if I refuse here, and that would be more troublesome.

"Ah~, yeah it's fine now. It's fantasy after all, so it's not like it would be impossible for it to talk, right? So you can just eat it already." (Velt)

"Ooh! As expected of you, otouto-kun! You sure are an understanding person~." (Cleran)

Guess it doesn't really matter.
I obediently tried to toss the device dragon to Cleran.
However,

"Gyowaaaaaa! Wai-, bro, seriously, please save me! I'm like, really, seriously just going to get destroyed in the stomach even if I'm eaten!" (Device Dragon)

"Seems like it. But since this girl is an omnivore that surpasses a carnivore, it should be okay." (Velt)

"Wai wai wai wai waiiiiit!" (Device Dragon)

"Ahh, hey, Cleran. To be honest, even I'll feel guilty if you eat it right here, so eat it in a place we can't see if you're going to eat it." (Velt)

"Gyaaaa, br, bro! If you're going to feel guilty, this is my once in a lifetime request, so please save meee!" (Device Dragon)

It's struggling really hard and clinging to my arm, not separating from it.
Furthermore, its body is trembling quite a lot. It must really be scared.

"I'm begging you! I, I need to return my goshujinsama, who I was separated with! Please, please turn a blind eye to me!" (Device Dragon)

"Rather, why were you caught by humans. Weren't you in the Divine Being Continent?" (Velt)

"That's, a human suddenly kidnapped me the moment they saw my appearance! It was so sudden, they did it when I was walking around and exploring the outside world after summoning my courage because I usually can't go outside of the residence!" (Device Dragon)

"Residence? Like, if you're living in the Divine Being Continent, then who's your

goshujinsama that made a weird thing like you? A human? A demon? Or else, a demi-human?” (Velt)

“I don’t know! I couldn’t see properly because goshujinsama always wears a mask and a robe! Ah, but since I felt breasts when I was hugged, she’s a woman!” (Device Dragon)

It’s becoming more and more of a mystery.
Besides, it’s really suspicious for this thing’s goshujinsama to be always wearing a mask and a robe.
She feels like a suspicious witch.

“Alright, that’s enouuuugh! Geez~, don’t tease me~. Oneechan is mad you know?” (Cleran)

At that moment, Cleran took away the dragon from my hand, saying that’s enough.

“N, nooooooooo! Someooooone!” (Device Dragon)

The dragon started struggling again. It’s honestly pitiful.

“U~nn, hey, Cleran. You feel sorry for it when it is so frightened, right? Why don’t you let it escape?” (Ura)

“Umu. How about you overlook it here with a generous heart?” (Musashi)

Ura and Musashi who felt sorry for it turned to protect it.
However, Cleran just stayed sweetly smiling.

“Nooope. You two might think that now because you can understand dragon-kun’s words, but cows and pigs scream like that before turning into ingredients, you know? Since I always deliciously eat them while listening to that scream, I can’t allow an exception this time either.” (Cleran)

I see, you certainly have incredible emotional strength.
If it screamed every time I ate them, even I might become vegetarian too.
Either way, Cleran probably doesn’t plan on overlooking it. Well, I guess it can’t be helped.

“Eat it once we go back.” (Velt)
“Velt! Are you fine with that?” (Ura)
“Well, we don’t have a reason to save it anyways.” (Velt)

“U, uuu, i, if lord says so, then I do not wish for anything.” (Musashi)

Well, I do pity it, but making Cleran angry would be bothersome.
I'll end it before I strangely get attached to it.
Farga doesn't particularly have an opinion either and seems like he wouldn't care whether Cleran eats it or not.

“Waaaaait, silver-haired lady, tiger ear lady, try harder! Please persuade bro and save me from miss!” (Device Dragon)

“See ya. Don't get caught in the next world.” (Velt)

I just turned my back on it like that and tried to quickly take my leave so that I don't hear the dragon's death agony.
However, it was at that time.

“Gyaaaaaa, no! I don't like humans anymore! The hell, this is unreasonable! I'm super super mad!” (Device Dragon)

In that moment, my body naturally moved, and I took the device dragon once again from Cleran's hands.

“O, otouto, otouto-kun? What do you mean by this? By this~? Hey? By this~? Oneechan will get mad, you know?” (Cleran)

No, oi, wait a minute.
Why did 'those words' come out from the device dragon?

“Oi, you scrap iron.” (Velt)

“Tha, that's so cruel!” (Device Dragon)

“You, where did you learn the words 'the hell, this is unreasonable?'” (Velt)

“Eh?” (Device Dragon)

“Answer my question. If you don't answer, I'll make that woman eat you.
However, if you answer, I'll think about it.” (Velt)

“I'll, I'll say it! It was from my goshujinsama! Those were words that my goshujinsama said when she was mad one day, and because I kinda liked it, I just imitated her!” (Device Dragon)

Words that its goshujinsama said? In a fantasy world?

“Oi, Ura! Musashi! Do you know what『flip』,『the hell, this is unreasonable』or『super super mad』means?” (Velt)

“.....? What incantation is that?” (Ura)

“I am sorry. I do not know words like that.” (Musashi) (TL Note: The first word was おこ which is slang for angry, so I just did it as flip. The second one is てーや んでーべらんめー and I translated it as ‘the hell, this is unreasonable’, but because it’s from some dialect, no one in this world would get it. The third one is 激おこプンプン丸 which I translated as super super mad since I had no other ideas. It’s slang for being extremely furious, but no one in this world would know.)

They don’t know. These two young girls in their teens don’t know. As a test, I looked at Farga and Cleran, but they shook their heads sideways. In other words, it means they aren’t common words in this world.

“Oi, scrap iron.” (Velt)

“Wai, bro, it’s so cruel how you’ve been calling me scrap iron since before! In the first place, I have a name I got from my goshujinsama, called『Doraemon』 (TL Note: Reference to Doraemon, which was basically my childhood lol.)

..... Oi, at least say that first.

“Oi, Dora-chan.” (Velt)

“Ah, why do you know the nickname goshujinsama called me by a lot!” (Doraemon)

I feel like I’ve heard that name before.

In Asakura Ryuuma’s age, Japanese adults and children who live in Japan knew about it.

“Hey, Ura, Musashi, Farga, do you guys know about the Dora cat-type, heroic robot that came from the future, Doraemon?” (Velt)

There’s no way they would know. Ura and the others unnecessarily tilt their heads.

It’s something that would be impossible to know about in this world. Does this mean something? In short, it should mean that.

“Oi, Dora. Where is your goshujinsama?” (Velt)

“I don’t know. Only the fact that she lives in the Divine Being Continent. Just like I said before, I never went out of the residence, but when I secretly explored outside for the first time, I got caught by humans and was taken along.”

(Doraemon)

The Divine Being Continent, huh. Of all places.

However, this thing's goshujinsama is almost certainly the same existence as Miyamoto and me.

Above all, the people that spoke like out of fashion gyarus in that world is limited.

And, a certain girl classmate has actually said that to me.

——— Asakura-kun, what do you mean you aren't going on the field trip! The hell, this is unreasonable! Come on, everyone's looking forward to it.

Is it you?

"Kamino....." (Velt)

To think that in a place like this, in such a short period of time, I would find a clue.

However, what if it really is her?

"The situation has changed." (Velt)

"Eh?" (Doraemon)

"Dora. I'll save you." (Velt)

In that case, there's only one thing I should do.

"Ehhhhhhhhhh, se, seriously!? Brooooooooo!" (Doraemon)

"Stupid younger brother?" (Farga)

"Velt, what happened all of a sudden!" (Ura)

"Lord! Ah, no, because you decided that, I will cooperate!" (Musashi)

I can't let this thing die right now.

It's not because of pity or kindness. It's just as a clue.

"Otouto-kun, what are you planning? I'm going to get angry, you know?"
(Cleran)

"Yeah. Could you overlook that? I'll let you eat good food later. Maybe even my handmade ramen." (Velt)

"..... I can't..... since before, I have wanted to eat it so badly, that I can't endure it anymore. If you be mean to me anymore..... then I won't forgive

you, even if you are Farga's otouto-kun, you know?" (Cleran)

Well, of course, I didn't think I could somehow save it by having a discussion. However, I got a reason to still save it, no, a reason to save it no matter what.

"Sure, I don't mind. If you want to eat this thing no matter what, then you're just an enemy now. I'll kill you." (Velt)

"Hah? Kill? What's up with that? That's a word that doesn't suit Mr diligent otouto-kun who doesn't even have the smell of blood." (Cleran)

"So what. I'm going to handle this high class, first-rate omnivorous girl." (Velt)

I just can't pull back on this.
Even if the beautiful lady's face in front of me transforms into a scary, oni-like expression, that is.

"Hm~~~~~m." (Cleran)

It seems I came into contact with the hungry beast's imperial wrath.

"Tch, stupid younger brother. You had to go and do something bothersome."
(Farga)

"Geez~, Velt, why do like~, suddenly make actions that I don't understand!"
(Ura)

"Either way, as I respect lord, I will accompany him wherever." (Musashi)

Regardless of my sudden action, Farga and the others stand ready while complaining, confronting Cleran.

In our current state, I honestly don't think we can lose against this woman with these members, no matter who she is.

"Little bro, are you confident because you have four people? Certainly, as I said before, even I wouldn't be able to win against four people..... if it really was just me against four people..... that is." (Cleran)

Dazzling light overflowed from Cleran's body.

"W, what is this light." (Velt)

"Velt, be careful." (Ura)

"I will take her on!" (Musashi)

What is she trying to do?

At that moment, Farga shouted.

“Tch, oi, get down!” (Farga)

Does Farga understand what’s about to happen?

One line of sweat is running down his cheek.

“This is troublesome. It’s a monster master’s third ability.” (Farga)

“Wha-, third? Do monster masters have that many abilities!?” (Velt)

While we became surprised, Cleran showed a smile and began talking while being in the middle of the dazzling light.

“Monster masters have three abilities. First, that they can understand all languages of living things. Second, is that they can master abilities from living things they eat. And the third one is that they can create a living thing they ate before, in exchange for their own mana.” (Cleran)

That’s too much of a disgusting ability.

A pillar of light that pierced the sky was made, and those pillars of light eventually split into three, gradually taking forms of something.

“In the past, Farga and I disposed of them, and I ate them up completely. Ufufufu, we almost died then, didn’t we.” (Cleran)

“Asshole, you damn woman!” (Farga)

“It’s been a while since you saw these children, right Farga?” (Cleran)

This is the genuine, classic example of fantasy.

“Fire dragon! Ice dragon! Wind dragon!” (Cleran)

The dragons among dragons. There were even three of them and they all appeared before us, trampling on the forest.

“Ara, it became four against four, huh.” (Cleran)

This mother really is doing it.

Well, it’s a seed I planted, after all.

Chapter 60: Introduce yourself

From picking countless fights in Asakura Ryuuma's age, I experienced times when the opponent would pull out a knife or a stun gun.

But to think that someone would pull out a dragon, as expected of fantasy. Even though I'm not Farga, I still want to say, piece of shit!

"What the hell did this woman pull out!" (Velt)

Will an oni come out or a snake come out? Something more terrifying came out.

A huge body on par with a ship and gigantic wings that feels like I would be blown away by just a flap.

Just by being gently brushed by its fangs and nails, I would probably be teared up into scraps.

And yet, there are three of them!

"Sorry. If you are going to resent someone, resent otouto-kun who doesn't know the ways of the world, okay? Now, my cute children, get theeem!" (Cleran)

Following Cleran's orders, the three dragons approach. What are we supposed to do?

However, before we could think of how to deal with them, the dragons opened their gigantic mouths and released colossal energy from inside their bodies.

———White hot breath.

The flame dragon covered completely in red skin created a flame breath that burned down the forest.

———Absolute zero breath.

The ice dragon covered completely in transparent looking skin froze the world.

———Tornado breath.

The wind dragon covered completely in white skin created wind that mows down everything.

Irrational existences that surpass common sense. Overwhelming power that surpasses human intellect by far, and makes you feel the end of the world. However, I thought it was strange.

Like, since I only met people with power surpassing human intellect, I'm troubled on how to react.

And above all, the guys with me surpass human intellect too.

"The goddess of light's smile is a light of creation that created heaven and earth. Occasionally becoming a talisman to dispel darkness, occasionally becoming a blade to pierce darkness. Element Lance, Aurora Trident!" (Farga)

The ominous spear turned into a three-pronged spear, wrapping up the flames with mystical, aurora-like light.

"The end of the end. Know that the darkness of despair that puts the world to sleep is an abyss where hope cannot reach! Magic Armament, Black Valkyrie (War Maiden of Darkness)!" (Ura)

The moment the clothes the demon king's daughter was wearing all broke into pieces, the fragments of the broken clothes turned into swirling, thick fog, coiling about the world and the approaching ice.

"See the sky as a path, the path as the sky. The point of the hoisted blade will become peerless! Miyamoto Kendo, Niten Ichi-Ryu Ken!" (Musashi) (TL Note: Two sword style by Miyamoto Musashi.)

The sword blade of the wooden sword broke, and a true, treasured family sword showed itself from inside. The peerless slash cut apart the devastating storm and turned everything to silence.

"What, you guys can do that kind of thing, huh." (Velt)

"Uooooo, amazing! Bro's friends are seriously amazing!" (Doraemon)

Farga evolved his weapon into a shining, three-pronged spear.
Ura clad herself in black shining, metal armour that was created from dark

mana.

Musashi's wooden sword broke, but then the blade inside showed itself.

“Ara ara, amaaazing. Now I can understand why otouto-kun was arrogant~.”
(Cleran)

This is probably their trump cards, that even I'm seeing for the first time. Like, if you can use something like that, you guys should have used it against Esamu.

“Piece of shit. It's been six years since I used this. Since I'm weak at magic, I immediately get damn exhausted, so I don't want to use it that much though.”
(Farga)

Attribute magic is releasing your own mana and the power of naturally existing wind or fire in the atmosphere, but fighting with your own weapon as the intermediary called『Elemental Arms(Spirit Arms)』, is a higher rank magic. Shalt did it in the past too, but it's a technique that only extremely excellent people can learn.

“I was only able to do this just recently. Since I fail sometimes, I thought I wouldn't be able to implement it, but it went well this time..... Velt, um..... don't look too much. I mean, you can look when we are alone together though.” (Ura)

And then,『Magic Armament』, the further evolved version of『Elemental Arms(Spirit Arms)』. A top ranking magic that doesn't use your weapon as an intermediary, but your own body as an intermediary to fight. Forna did it in the past, but only chosen geniuses can learn it, and because there aren't that many users, even the method of it hasn't been clarified. If there was just one thing I could say to Ura right now, it would be that it looks amazing with her putting on that armour of darkness, but it's an indecent armour that only slightly covers her chest and butt, completely exposing her belly button and thighs.

“Uooo, bro, your girlfriend is erotic! She's an erotic, beautiful woman! Damn, the lower half of my body is getting kinda hard! It's throbbing!” (Doraueemon)
“Your whole body is hard. Like, can device dragons even make that kind of joke?” (Velt)

Furthermore, because it's tightened hard on her body, her breasts are bulging, and like, basically it's pretty erotic.

"After coming of age, I had been sealing it until I met a lord that I should truly serve." (Musashi)

Musashi who was that strong with her wooden sword gripped a real sword. Just that makes me shudder.

If it could touch it, it looks like it would even cut up the world.

Every single one of them are so reliable.

"Fufufu, ufufufufufu, in the past, it was said that thousands of knights became victim to one dragon's power. However, one day, that dragon was destroyed by just one human. Therefore, the『Dragon Slayer』title is the most prominent title to Hunters. It's surprising that there were others that had power on par with Farga." (Cleran)

As if she could do nothing but laugh, Cleran honestly complimented them. And then, she asked the three of them.

"Once again, I am『Monster Master Cleran』. What are your names?" (Cleran)

Maybe she felt that this is something respectful, that has surpassed a fight. The gluttonous woman informed us of her name with serious eyes. Therefore, the three of them answered.

"I'm『Scarlet Dragon Slayer, Farga』." (Farga)

"I am『Silver Masenkou, Ura』" (Ura)

"I am『Souken Juuko Musashi』." (Musashi)

Ooh, that's kinda cool. But at the same time, I had an unpleasant premonition.

Just in case, I stayed silent.

However, the three of them and even Cleran looked at me, as if saying, 'hurry up and introduce yourself too.'

"Eh..... me too?" (Velt)

Wait a minute. Do I have to name myself too? After you guys so grandly, or rather, stylishly named yourselves with completely chuunibyou names, I have to

give my name too?

“Bro, it’s your turn.” (Doraemon)

With shining eyes, Dora told me it was my turn in a small voice.

No, I don’t want to say it.

Do I have to say it?

“Otouto-kun?” (Cleran)

“Stupid younger brother.” (Farga)

“Velt.” (Ura)

“Lord.” (Musashi)

Why do I have to say it, damn it!

Shit, I don’t want to say it, I don’t want to say it, I don’t want to say it!

“I, I’m re,『Remote Control Velt』.....” (Velt)

Damn it, it’s lame! I’ve never, never wanted to kill the guy that gave me that name so badly as I do now.

“I see. I will remember that name.” (Cleran)

At least I wasn’t laughed at.

While smiling, Cleran held her hand out to the sky.

“Fights between Hunters are decided by hunting. Isn’t that right, Farga?”
(Cleran)

“That’s right. This is a battle of whether we hunt or get hunted. Damn woman, if you overlook my stupid younger brother and that damn small dragon, we will withdraw too, if you want?” (Farga)

“You must be joking. Pushing your way through the unknown without forgetting the romance of it, is what a Hunter is after all.” (Cleran)

“I see. Then, that’s fine, right?” (Velt)

“Yes, of course. Besides, otouto-kun, it’s now or never for you too.” (Cleran)

Yeah, as if I could stop now.

I’m quite a sinful man too. To let this midget Dora live, I dragged my comrades into a life and death battle after all.

Well, I’ll probably be beaten and called an idiot if I apologize for that, so I definitely won’t apologize.

“Well then.” (Cleran)

“Yeah.” (Farga)

Then, silence ran through the forest and the dragons waited for that signal.

“Here we go!” (Cleran)

“Gaaaaaaaaaaaaa!” (Dragon)

“Shit!” (Farga)

“I will destroy Velt’s enemy!” (Ura)

“I will turn them into the rust of my blade!” (Musashi)

“I’ll kill you oiiiiiii!” (Velt)

One monster master and three dragons.

A human Hunter, a delinquent, a demon and a demi-human.

Quite a variety of races.....

“U-hohhoooi! Go for it, bro! Lady, good luck rumba! Fight!” (Doraueemon) (TL
Note: ガンバルンバ.)

Are fighting with life and death on the line for a thing like this.

Chapter 61: Start the revolution

If it's four against four, the people I can fight against is limited.
My magic doesn't work on the dragons that aren't particularly wearing any clothes, armour or any other material.

“Goaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaa!” (Dragon)
“Shit. It feels awkward disposing of a newborn brat, but I'll have you let me kill you damn instantly.” (Farga)

Farga against the flame dragon.

“Goaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaa!” (Dragon)
“I will show you how darkness outdoes the world.” (Ura)

Ura against the ice dragon.

“Gishaaaaaaaaaaaaa!” (Dragon)
“Before the threat reaches my lord, I will slay you!” (Musashi)

Musashi against the wind dragon.
We didn't particularly arrange it beforehand, but it just naturally became like that.
Then, what about me?
I'm not a leftover, it just became that kind of pairing.
Or rather, this is a fight I picked with you.
So, there's obviously only one person I should go against.

“Here I come, Cleran-oneechan!” (Velt)
“Thank you for the meal, otouto-kun!” (Cleran)

Making a stance with my batons, I look at the surrounding environment and the opponent. While checking how I should make the best use of my power, we strike against each other.

“Dieeeee!” (Velt)

First, I swing both my hundred kilogram batons with a full swing.

The opponent is a woman? So what. If I don't go with the intention of making her beautiful face all crumpled, I'll be eaten.

However,

"I'll show it to you. Transformation, 『Rubber Slime』." (Cleran)

Without showing any sign of trying to dodge the batons I swung with all my power, Cleran caught them normally with her face.

"Geh! Why, why aren't you dodging it!" (Velt)

Furthermore, she didn't just not dodge it. Her face transformed so much that it's terrifying, and there isn't a trace of her former, beautiful face.

"N, no, thi, this is!" (Velt)

I immediately noticed the abnormality. What is this feeling; it doesn't feel like I beat a human.

My hands only felt like they hit soft rubber.

"Although it has the weakest attack power, it's defence power is the strongest class. Rubber Slime. The Rubber Slime's body is completely made up of soft rubber, and no blows or impacts work on it." (Cleran)

I felt the shivers from Cleran gently explaining with her transformed face. And then, the stretched rubber immediately returned back to normal. As if nothing had happened, her transformed face went back to her original face without any injuries.

Furthermore, in the moment I was perplexed, Cleran immediately moved to counterattack.

"Transformation, 『Serpent Man』!" (Cleran)

"Geh, uooooooooh! Fuwa fuwa escape!" (Velt)

Cleran's neck..... extended!

Almost like the long-neck woman monster, just her neck extended, trying to bite me.

I avoided it by instantaneously sending my body flying to the back at high speed with levitation (floating), but a strange, prickling pain remained in my arm.

When I looked at it, I saw blood endlessly flowing out of two fang marks.

“Ouch, wha, what was that right now.” (Velt)

“Hee~, you dodged that well, otouto-kun.” (Cleran)

“Like, making your neck into a snake..... what’s up with that.” (Velt)

“Fufufu, it’s the bipedal snake, Serpent Man. Its characteristic is that it can freely extend and contract its neck. Isn’t that interesting?” (Cleran)

No, my repulsion is at full throttle.

“Otouto-kun’s blood..... was quite delicious.” (Cleran)

Wow, I’m getting goosebumps.

From seeing grotesque sights of humans being crushed into pieces, smashed, killed and violated in the past few days, I gained slight immunity to it, but this is straight out disgusting, and I’m feeling nausea again.

However, it’s not really a problem to vomit at this late hour.

The problem, is that Cleran has too many abilities that I can’t deal with her.

“Ufufufu, otouto-kun! I’m still going to keep coming~” (Cleran)

“Tch, fuwa fuwa flight!” (Velt)

“Chooomp! Chooomp! Chooooooooomp!” (Cleran)

Teeth, fangs, dangerous!

To escape her extending neck that freely twists left and right, I fly about, making use of my flight with all my power.

“Ahahahaha, otouto-kun, so fast! Ruuuun!” (Cleran)

“Keh, idiot! Fuwa fuwa boomerang.” (Velt)

Trying to counter, I throw a baton with a spin. Well, she can twist her neck and easily evade it, but I’m not aiming for her face.

If she’s that separated from her body, she should be late in reacting if something happens to her body.

I further accelerate the baton I threw, and it hits right on target on Cleran’s body.

However,

“Ahahahaha, unluckyyyy!” (Cleran)

“Geh, she turned her body into ru, rubber, and the impact was..... asshole, you could use several abilities at once!?” (Velt)

“Oneechan didn’t say a word about not being able to though~.” (Cleran)

Damn it. I was convinced of my own accord without any basis, that she can't use other abilities while using an ability.

In other words, none of my fuwa fuwa techniques that use blows will work on her.

However, there's a way of handling that too. Basically, rather than an impact caused by a blow, I just have to cause an impact that makes her brain spin round and round, right?

"In that case, I'll make the world turn!" (Velt)

"Un?" (Cleran)

"I'll show it to you; the standard scenery a couple sees on a date." (Velt)

"Hmm? Huh? Huuuh? My body is floating! Why?" (Cleran)

"Fuwa fuwa merry-go-round!" (Velt)

As long as she's wearing clothes, I can just float her real body with it. I float Cleran's body and rotate her on the spot at ultra high speed.

"Uooo, b, bro, amazing! Amazing! That lady, she's wearing a thong!" (Doraemon)

You, this Dora asshole. If it wasn't a clue towards Kamino, normally, I would have just thrown it right into Cleran's mouth.

It's burning the sight underneath Cleran's fluttering toga that lifted up from being rotated into its eyes.

Of course, the person being seen probably doesn't have the composure to worry about that though.

"Alright, one hundred revolutions! How's that, you can see the world differently, right!" (Velt)

It should have been enough rotations to send her consciousness flying. Look around and vomit while staggering..... is what I was going to shout, but.....

"Ah~, that was fun." (Cleran)

"Wha-, what was that!" (Velt)

"Geez~, anyway, otouto-kun! My panties..... you saw them, right?" (Cleran)

It, it didn't have any effect on her? It's as if nothing happened!

“Otouto-kun! Grotesque things are fine, but you can’t do perverted things! I might tell your girlfriend, you know?” (Cleran)

Was the number of rotations lacking? No, that can’t be.
A human should have gotten spinning eyes.
Why?

“Fufuuun, otouto-kun, did you by chance think that my eyes would be spinning?” (Cleran)

“..... Did they not spin?” (Velt)

“Hehe~nn, unluckyyy. That’s only for humans, right? By becoming a monster with superior semicircular canals, it just turned into a fun game.” (Cleran)

It doesn’t work against guys who have non-human type bodies?
That fact was truly thrust before me right now.
Blows and attacks of shaking the brain or the organs, don’t work?

“Transformation, 『Pantherion』!” (Cleran)

“Cra, crap, fuwa fuwa esca-gaaaa!” (Velt)

My reaction was one step too slow.
The strong, explosive power and the claws tore the skin of my chest.

“Tsu-, ahhhh, ouch, damn!” (Velt)

Blood! Damn, the cut is super hot.

“Uooooo, br, broooo! Blood, blood! Ahh, I can’t take blood~!” (Doraueemon)

I couldn’t completely dodge it. However, there was this much power from just grazing me.
Not good.

“U~nn, unlucky. I thought that would definitely take you down though. I was watching since before, but otouto-kun’s movements are weird. Even without using the muscles of your body, your body still moves, as if someone is manipulating it from the outside.” (Cleran)

To make matters worse, she started sensing something about my power.

“Also, otouto-kun. You can’t use attribute magic, right? Normally, against me, people would be scared of my abilities and use magic from a long distance, but

you aren't showing any signs of doing that." (Cleran)

Correct.

"At the start, I thought you were using the fly (flight) magic without chanting, but it seems I was wrong. There's no way you could do something like that without being able to use the basic attribute magic, after all." (Cleran)

That's also correct. All I did was just thoroughly master the basic levitation (floating) magic.

The only one I can use, is that.

That's right, I can only use one. Therefore, I can't use the various methods to fight Cleran like a normal person.

"Otouto-kun, you must hate studying quite a lot~, to neglect school learning, you must be a bad child." (Cleran)

Haa..... she really is a terrifying oneechan. But you know, unfortunately.....

"Unfortunately, that's incorrect." (Velt)

"Hmm?" (Cleran)

"I didn't not study at school because I hate studying." (Velt)

That's right, just that is wrong.

"Everything is because of the path I chose myself!" (Velt)

I didn't neglect it, I cut off my path of retreat!

Because I don't have any talent, I realized that I could only master one thing. It's not that I couldn't learn other magic, it's that I quit trying to learn them!

"I'll teach you one thing, Cleran. Since I can't use attribute magic, I can't fight by thinking up all sorts of counter plans. But you know, putting it in other words, it means that I don't need to go on and on thinking up stuff since there's a limited amount of things that I can do!" (Velt)

If I could use fire or ice or whatever attribute magic, there certainly would be other methods to use, but it can't be helped.

After all, there's a limited amount of things I can do, so I'll fight with just what I can do.

“That’s wrong, otouto-kun. It’s no good if you just do what you can do, you know? You can’t do the things you have to do after all.” (Cleran)

“I’m not interested in that kind of wordplay! Either way, I have no choice but to do it!” (Velt)

If this was inside the town, I would have had a lot of options. However, the things I can use as weapons with my magic is limited. I can float trees and plants with magic if they’ve been taken out from the roots. However, things with growing roots are treated the same way as creatures, so I can’t float them. So, there were only stones and rocks that I could move in nature.

“Fuwa fuwa Velt(world)!” (Velt)

“Oya, otouto-kun! You can use attribute magic after all!” (Cleran)

Stones and rocks assault her from all directions. Her escape route is completely closed up.

“Buuut, it was useless. You already know that those kinds of things aren’t effective against the Rubber Slime’s body.” (Cleran)

I know something like that.

“Fufufu, what are you aiming for? No matter how many times you do it, it won’t damage me, you know?” (Cleran)

But even so, I won’t rest my attacking hand. I’ll hit you over and over again. I won’t even give you a chance to counterattack. If I continue attacking her like this without letting her attack, I should find a means of survival. Then, probably because it became annoying, Cleran transformed.

“Transformation, Tornado Fairy.” (Cleran)

A tornado wrapped up Cleran, smashing all the stones and rocks attacking her into pieces.

“The, the fairy of wind!?” (Velt)

“Ufufufu~, this kid was delicious too. Even now, it’s continuing to live on as my blood and flesh.” (Cleran)

Not good! All the stones and rocks in my vision disappeared.

Right now, in this place, there's nothing I can do!

"These children are also continuing to live here. Transformation,『Needle Cat』!" (Cleran)

"Geh, hair, hair needles!" (Velt)

"That's right. The needle cat's ability is to change its body hair into needles, and it attacks opponents by firing those at them." (Cleran)

Dangerous! It's a technique similar to that old Japanese anime where an eyeball was the father.

I can't defend against them! (TL Note: Probably Gegege no Kitarou, don't remember there being that kind of technique though)

"Ou, ouuuuuch, kuh, youuuuuu!" (Velt)

Although each strand of hair is small, there are too many. Countless needles skewered my body.

The ones that stab my arms and legs extremely easily pass through.

"Damn it. Piercing someone like that." (Velt)

Damn, my senses are gradually becoming all messed up..... this woman..... is way too strong!

"Transformation, Giant Foot!" (Cleran)

Just the arm..... the giant's..... arm.....

"Bad children get the~, fist!" (Cleran)

"Fuwa fuwa es———." (Velt)

Ahh, damn, if my reaction was even just less than a second faster, I could have dodged this huge punch.

However, on the other hand, if I was even just less than a second slower, my body would have broken into small fragments.

"Gebuuuh." (Velt)

I didn't know that if you send a human's body vigorously flying, you can pass through all kinds of trees.

Already, my back, battered whole body, bones, insides and even my head, was completely beaten.

“Brooooooooooooo! Ahh, the blood, the blooooo! Your, your arms and legs are all bent in weird directions, and it’s super dangerous! Someooooone, bro will die!” (Doraemon)

Ahh, even Dora’s voice that’s supposed to be noisy sounds blurred. Could Ura and the others do something about this situation? Well, it’s probably impossible. In a slightly separated place, incredible battles are unfolding, causing earth tremors.

They’re fighting dragons, and probably can’t look towards me.

“Ufufufufu, the match is over, otouto-kun.” (Cleran)

I was able to confirm that Cleran is smiling while looking down on my grovelling self, besides me.

“Hunt or be hunted. That’s a Hunter’s match. But you know, it’s actually different. A battle of a Hunter against a monster is actually a match of eating or being eaten. In other words, there’s no reason why you can win against me who has continued living in that kind of world, constantly fighting wild creatures.” (Cleran)

Eat or be eaten.

It means that even if I continued training, the things she has seen is different to me, who was raised comfortably inside a peaceful human environment.

“You can’t look down on the wild that much, otouto-kun!” (Cleran)

Damn, even if I act brave, in the end, this is all I can do.

What am I doing.

In reality, everything about me is still halfway.

“Bro! Bro! Wake up! Wake uuuup!” (Doraemon)

Ahh, without being able to meet Kamino.....

“As if I could stand that!” (Velt)

“Eh!” (Doraemon)

Of course I can’t just not meet her, damn it!

“Isn’t that right, sensei! Samejimaa! There’s no way I could die! If I died before meeting Kamino, Velt Jeeha’s life wouldn’t have had any meaning to it!”

(Velt)

I will meet Kamino. That's all. I lived with just that as my objective and decided on my way of living.

I quit school. I resolved myself. Even though my classmates and Forna went to the battlefield, I just watched their backs.

"What do you mean the wild, a person that hasn't even died once before, shouldn't talk to me about risking lives!" (Velt)

"Wha-, o, otouto-kun, you are!" (Cleran)

"You're the one that shouldn't look down on humans, or rather, me, Cleran! Sorry, but continuing to rebel is the proof of Asakura Ryuuma and Velt Jeeha's existences!" (Velt)

"No, you, you stood up! Why? Even though both your legs should have broken?" (Cleran)

I didn't stand up. I'm just floating. In my mind, I'm just standing up completely and making a fighting pose.

"Brooooooooooo!" (Doraumon)

Shut up, you shouldn't be crying. Just silently watch me!

"B, but, just because you stood up, what can you do?" (Cleran)

As if I know something like that!

"In that case, how's this!" (Velt)

If stones and rocks don't work, then how about the sand made from the rocks and stones your smashed!

"Kuh, my, my eyes!" (Cleran)

"How's this, fuwa fuwa playing in the sand!" (Velt)

I don't know if it's because she didn't have an ability to protect her eyes or she couldn't use an ability so promptly, but it at least blinded her.

However, it's not like I made a reversal by doing this. Rather, the situation is still the worst, and I don't know when my consciousness might cut short.

I have to do something while I still can.

"Li, ttle, bro, you really are going for it. Manipulating stones, manipulating

sand, you must be able to use earth magic, right?” (Cleran)

I can't. She made another poor misunderstanding..... no..... wait a minute? Earth?

What is this, something's bothering me.

Earth magician? Earth? What's bothering me.....

———Ara? The human world exists because of the land. Isn't the earth attribute a very wonderful attribute, since it truly represents humans themselves?

“Ah.....” (Velt)

I remember now. It was when I was still going to school.

In an attribute magic lesson, it's the words the homeroom teacher told me when I found out my attribute was earth.

The important part isn't that I have the earth attribute. It's that the world exists because of the ground.

“I couldn't float plants. But I could float stones, rocks and sand.” (Velt)

“What are you muttering about? Otouto-kun! Geez, I'm going to give you a finishing blow! I'm going to eat you! Your blood juice, raw meat, insides, and brain pudding as dessert!” (Cleran)

Can I do it?

No, I have to do it.

I can do it.

I will make a miracle for a reversal. I'll literally turn the world upside down!

“I'll show you, that in the end, humans and the wild wouldn't live if the world didn't exist!” (Velt)

Float.

What will float, is everything I can see..... not!

“Fuwa fuwa Velt Revolution(World Revolution)!” (Velt)

What will float, is the world itself that I see right now!

For that sake, I'll bet all my mana, vitality, stamina and even my life!

What will be ahead of that? It's going to be the limit that I have to cross!

“Eh, wha, what? What! The ground, the forest is shaking, is it an earthquake?
No, it’s not, eh, no, no way!” (Cleran)

“Waiiiiiiii, br, br, broooooooooooooo, what is thiiiis!” (Doraemon)

Yes, that face. I wanted to see that face.
That seriously frightened face!

“The ground is, part of the forest is.....the, the land is floating!” (Cleran)
“A sandstorm, fissures in the ground, earth and rock avalanche, no, I might as
well even float magma from the depths of the ground and hit you with it.” (Velt)
“O, otouto-kun..... who..... in the world..... are you!” (Cleran)

Now, it’s time to start the revolution!

Chapter 62: Kill or be killed

“Amazing, bro, you’re amazing! I’m shedding tears from excitement!”
(Doraemon)

I feel like I actually grasped something right now.
In the first place, I wouldn’t have even thought, ‘I might be able to do this,’ or, ‘I have no choice but to do this,’ beforehand if I wasn’t in this situation.
This must be what it really feels like,

“Fuwa fuwa earthquake!” (Velt)

To go past your limit.

“Fuwa fuwa mantle!” (Velt)

Fall into the depths of the ground, deep into the core of the planet!

“No way, this child. Transformation, Giant Foot!” (Cleran)

As if the cracked land had a mind, it dropped Cleran and tried to crush her in between, but Cleran twisted her body violently, escaping from the fissures.

“Transformation, Sky Wing!” (Cleran)

A bird’s wing this time? Growing gigantic wings, she escaped into the sky.
If the land became the enemy trying to attack you, you would obviously escape into the sky.

That’s right, you escaped from me. Right now, you got frightened of my power.
But, unfortunately for you,

“This isn’t sexual harassment, but if you want to get away from me, you have to get naked. Fuwa fuwa withdrawal!” (Velt)

It doesn’t matter where you run to. I’ll pull you over with my power.

“Wha-, my body pulled itself to you of its own accord!” (Cleran)

“Kuhahahaha, unlucky! Remember this, you can’t ignore a prodigy delinquent!”
(Velt)

“What is this? This feeling of my body, no, my clothes being pulled!” (Cleran)

“Fuwa fuwa sandstorm!” (Velt)

“Wai-, why!? You continued standing for this long, and even used non-chanting magic, guh, even a sand tornado!” (Cleran)

Ahh, this is making me feel like I’m ‘in’. (TL Note: Maybe something like, in the zone? Prob something like that.)

It’s strange. Like, I feel like I can do anything, and I don’t think I can lose.

Because I gathered all of the sand on the ground in a whirl in the sky, she thinks I fired a sandstorm.

There’s no significance at all to a bird that can’t freely flap its wings!

“Fuwa fuwa meteor!” (Velt)

I gathered rocks made from the fissures and broken land and then dropped it from right above her.

Until you admit defeat, I won’t let you get away.

I knock down the broken land and then drop more rocks from above it.

Dropping, smashing and crushing.

However,

“Fufu, Rubber Slime.” (Cleran)

“Kuhahaha, rubberizing, huh. If it results in no damage after doing this much, it would be depressing.” (Velt)

By turning her body into a rubber monster, she absorbed all the impact.

However, it doesn’t seem like I can’t deal with it.

“Fufu, ahahahaha, geez, that surprised me. To think you were hiding this kind of trump card.” (Cleran)

“Kuhahaha, sorry about that~, it’s a trump card coming from me that still hasn’t embraced a woman yet, after all.” (Velt)

“Hahaha, you’re funny, otouto-kun. But you know, there are two things I found out from that.” (Cleran)

“Ah?” (Velt)

Although there was no damage, the toga she was wearing tore, and her body is quite dirty.

She’s showing a smile, but at the very least, she must have taken some mental damage.

“Otouto-kun, it seems you being a master of earth attribute magic..... isn’t true. There’s something that’s fundamentally different. Otherwise, you wouldn’t be able to keep using such large-scale magic without chanting, even if you were on the same level as the Ten Heroes of Light.” (Cleran)

Correct. Rather, my mana has unexpectedly not decreased much. Well, I’m just floating heavy things after all.

“Also, it has to be a lie that you were hiding that trump card until you became so worn out. Isn’t it just that you became able to do it just then?” (Cleran)

What, so you actually do know.

“Yeah. When humans try to do something, it surprisingly works out somehow.” (Velt)

Well, just because that was exposed, unlike the land, my current heart won’t sway.

Even though there’s no basis for it, confidence is overflowing from deep inside of me.

“That’s right, these kinds of things that doesn’t happen to wild monsters, happen.” (Cleran)

“Hah?” (Velt)

“Wild monsters excel at making maximum use of their own abilities or traits. But as for humans, they sometimes pull out power that surpasses the limit of their own abilities.” (Cleran)

Seeing my current state, Cleran declared that.

“When people with talent awaken, it’s called『Blooming』. But for kids like you that aren’t geniuses or anything, it’s called『Breaking through your shell』when they awaken.” (Cleran)

“Kuhaha, breaking through my shell, huh. Ain’t that nice! Calling delinquents unusual are compliments for them.” (Velt)

“Fufu, it’s up to you on how far you fly away after breaking through it though!” (Cleran)

“Then, maybe to the ends of the earth? Kuhahahahaha!” (Velt)

“Ufufufu, that’s exactly why it’s such a waste. It would feel really wasteful to just eat you.” (Cleran)

“A waste? It’s the opposite. You wouldn’t be let off with just suffering damage to your health by eating me, who’s all pain, no gain, you know?” (Velt)

“The device dragon is just a secondary thing now! Today’s main dish, is you, otouto-kun! I don’t know what kind of abilities or magic you’re using, but give me your meat!” (Cleran)

“Kuhahahaha, don’t approach me! Fuwa fuwa shock wave!” (Velt)

We clash again.

Rather than a simple fist fight, we’re using each of our abilities freely, and hitting each other with it.

Even though I’m in the middle of this amazing, shocking exchange of techniques, my exhilaration isn’t stopping.

I can do anything, and even in this life-risking situation, I even feel joy.

“Kukuku, ufufufufufu, ufufufufufu! I want it! I want to eat it! I want to eat you, otouto-kun!” (Cleran)

“Haa, haa, haa, you’re such a glutton. If you don’t restrain yourself, men will be put off, you know?” (Velt)

“Women who eat are healthy.” (Cleran)

“Tch, that reminds me, in Asakura Ryuuma’s age, the number of carnivorous women increased since there were too many herbivorous men, but this is going way too far. Just get a full stomach already!” (Velt)

Ahh geez, the terrain of the forest changed.

Even though it was a beautiful forest, there was too much destruction.

The land is ruined and the trees fell, so the habitats of the wildlife living peacefully was completely stolen.

All because of me.

Kuhaha, like I care. I’m not an environmental protector.

I’m not interested in that.

Right now, I just couldn’t care less about anything other than killing this woman!

“Fuwa fuwa flood!” (Velt)

“Wh, what is it this time!” (Cleran)

Nearby, I could properly see a stream flowing.

The flow is slow, but if I gather all that water, how many tonnes of water do you think it would amount to?

“The, the river water is surging, like a flash flood!” (Cleran)

Ahh, I really can do it, huh.

To think it would be possible to freely float liquid.

I float all the water in the river recklessly, gather it, and crush Cleran by using it as walls.

“Tra, transformation, Dolphin Man!” (Cleran)

“Ho~, a fish person, huh. You really can do all sorts of transformations.” (Velt)

Against the pressure and waves of the water, she undoubtedly transforms into a monster that can swim. Even this can't bring her down.

However,

“But don't forget about the sediments from the ruined ground. Since like, what do you think would happen if I put that into this large amount of water!” (Velt)

“Eh, wai-, no way!” (Cleran)

The land violently sways again. This isn't an earthquake.
It's an artificially caused.....

“Fuwa fuwa mudflow! Go see if a fish person can swim through this!” (Velt)

“Thi, this child, who, who is he..... monster.....” (Cleran)

Magic to float things. That's what I stuck to.
I poured all of the capacity I had to learn other magic, into just that.
For five years, ten hours everyday, I poured my everyday life into it.

“You wouldn't understand, right? For a gourmet that just put her hands on all sorts of other abilities, you wouldn't understand the feelings of a cook that continued pursuing just one flavor.” (Velt)

Cleran becomes engulfed by the mudflow. No matter what wild creature it is, they're powerless before the calamities of nature or natural disasters.
I wrapped up her body with sediments, rounded it up into a ball like a dango, and hardened it.

Will I be able to suppress her like this? Or else, will she suffocate?

“Thi, s, transformation, explosion dragon!” (Cleran)

The dango of sediments containing Cleran, suddenly exploded.

“Uo-, this woman, she still had an ability like this!” (Velt)

A dragon that causes explosions. She still had a monster like that, huh.
The land breaks, nature bursts into flames, and caves in.
It feels like I’m seeing the fall of the world.

“Tch, crap…… my stamina, and consciousness…… is almost.” (Velt)

Levitation (floating) magic doesn’t use that much mana. It only uses an extremely small quantity of mana.
However, my current self that’s all in tatters, is seeing the ends of the mana and stamina left.
On the other hand, Cleran is still energetic……

“Fuuu, fuuu, fuuu, I won’t lose, otouto-kun! The predator is me!” (Cleran)

“Damn it, haa, haa, you’re tough.” (Velt)

“I’m standing above all the nourishment from the lives I have eaten until now! If I lose right now and here, it would be an insult to all the lives inside of me! I deeeefinitely can’t lose!” (Cleran)

Ahh, she’s making a desperate face. I can feel her bloodlust and spirit.
I, who could only have been eaten at the start, is now seen as an enemy that is competing against who will eat the other by her.
I’m covered in blood, and Cleran is covered in dirt, but we didn’t get drawn away from each other.
However, I’ll teach her one thing.

“It’s not just…… hunt or be hunted or…… eat or be eaten.” (Velt)

“Haa, haa, haa, then, what is it?” (Cleran)

“It’s kill or be killed!” (Velt)

“Y, you’ve said it now.” (Cleran)

“You’re a Hunter, so being the predator or not doesn’t matter. I’m far past your imaginations, assholes!” (Velt)

We’re just having a life abrading fight now.

“I’ll hunt you, eat you, kill you, and I’ll use that as nourishment to become

even bigger!” (Velt)

And, this is probably the end.

“You’re right…… it’s exactly as you say, otouto-kun…… but the one that’s going to be killing, is me!” (Cleran)

I will keep getting stronger.

Also, Cleran. From the start to the end, you really were a crazy, dangerous, unwavering person!

Chapter 63: Full of amazing women

It's all used up. There's no longer even a trace of it left.
For both of us, that is.

"Ou, t, out of, mana, it's all gone." (Cleran)

It's over.

"Fuu, you finally collapsed. Rather, of course, you would get exhausted first, since you created three dragons to slow Farga and the others." (Velt)

Cleran collapses onto the land that turned into a wasteland.
Without falling, I sit down, unable to stand up anymore.

"Ah..... not good..... I can't move anymore..... you, really, don't give in, do you~." (Cleran)

Thinking about it carefully, she should have exhausted a considerable amount of mana by creating three dreadnaught class dragons before fighting me. Ultimately, neither of us could deal a decisive blow to each other, and it ended with Cleran running out of mana.

That being said, I lost a large amount of blood, broke several bones, and to be frank, my senses are going crazy.

I actually wanted to relaxedly collapse, but to make the outcome clear, I couldn't collapse as long as Cleran has collapsed.

"So, what are you going to do, otouto-kun. Will you eat me?" (Cleran)

Cleran shows a refreshed face, that says she already accepted her defeat. That expression is an expression that shows she resolved herself for no matter what happens now.
She's presenting her body.

"If I was going to be eaten anyway, I wanted to be eaten by Farga, but since it's your win, it can't be helped." (Cleran)

While showing her ripped toga, bewitching thighs and the part before it, she's

smiling as if tempting me.

In front of that attractive temptation, I reflexively gulped my saliva.

“Kuhaha, that’s an attractive temptation. You’re a nice woman when your neck doesn’t extend. If you’re going to be the older woman I lose my virginity to, then it would be the best.” (Velt)

“I see..... yeah..... it’s fine..... you can just, do anything. Here, eat up. Go ahead, until you feel full.” (Cleran)

She really is a handsome woman that’s too gallant.
I almost felt like seriously having my first experience outside.
However, although I’m a delinquent, the sense of reason that still remained in me, stopped it.

“That’s unfortunate. My journey, is a journey to find one certain woman. If I was unfaithful before finding her, my life until now would have gone to waste.” (Velt)

“..... Are you sure?” (Cleran)

“Yeah. Without eating you, I’ll just take the competition I had with you and move forward. During the night, I might as well release my strangely agonizing feelings alone by masturbating.” (Velt)

“Pu-, kukuku, ahahahahahaha, what’s up with that! That’s such a waste~, since I think I taste pretty good~.” (Cleran)

“Yeah. Besides, well, I have a cute girl near me, whose first love was a piece of shit like me after all.” (Velt)

“Hm~m, well, I guess I’ll just leave it as that? Otouto-kun, are you just faithful? Or else, are you incompetent?” (Cleran)

Rising above injuries and pain, I gained a lot of things in this battle.
I learnt that I can do things that I thought I couldn’t do.
And above all, it was my first time winning in a one on one situation, in a real, life abrading battle.

“Uooooo, broooooooooooooo, you’re the best!” (Doraumon)

“Hebuaoa!” (Velt)

Dora..... you..... I’ll get shut down from just a slight impact, so like, seriously, don’t jump at me.

My limbs went to sleep from Dora suddenly jumping at me, so in the end, I collapsed too.

“Broooo, are are, are you okay!?” (Doraemon)

“No, you, ahh, geez, I’m seriously going to kill you after we find Kamino.” (Velt)

I’m really tired. In the first place, I did destroy the forest in this battle I started to save this thing after all.

Rather, ahh, crap…… my consciousness…… is seriously……

“Get a hold of yourself, kid! I’ll give you recovery medicine to drink.” (Hunter)

“…… Ah?” (Velt)

Then, I heard a voice I remember hearing before.

It was the voice of one of the Hunters I met this morning, in the village.

“Oi, give Cleran treatment too.” (Hunter)

“Eh~, she’s the one that sent so much bloodthirst~, when we drew close to Farga, you know~?” (Kuri?)

“Boy~, you were reaaally cool~, onee~san~, got wet~, hey, touch it~.” (Ris?)

The middle-aged men that taught us all sorts of things this morning and invited us to join them, the erotic, bikini armour ladies, and even the other Hunters that joined teams with each other, all gathered.

Why?

“You guys, why?” (Velt)

“Well, if you rampage so much in the forest, of course we would gather.” (Hunter)

Ahh, well that’s true.

“The truth is, we were watching since the start of your fight.” (Hunter)

“Yeah yeah, everyone was looking for a chance to steal the device dragon and run, you know?” (Hunter)

Ah, so that’s what happened.

But then, why? There were a lot of chances to take it from us, so wouldn’t that have been the once in a lifetime chance?

If they left us alone and ran with the device dragon, even their descendant’s generation would have been able to live playing around.

“Ah~, boy~, don’t make~, fun of us~, you probably think~ we’re money mad, don’t you!” (Kuri?)

“We’re serious, kid. You know~, we’re Hunters. We wouldn’t use a method like that that doesn’t even have any pride.” (Hunter)

“Yeah. You’re the one that’s worthy of being the completer of this quest.” (Hunter)

It’s kinda embarrassing. Instead of saying something, my face naturally gets hot.

Did I actually get praised right now?

“Get a hold of yourself~, although you’re an interesting one, you’re a failure as a Hunter.” (Hunter)

“..... Hah?” (Velt)

“It’s a Hunter’s job to protect the peace of nature, the wild, and humans after all. To think you would go destroy nature this much, that it can’t be recovered from.” (Hunter)

No, in the first place, I’m not a Hunter.

Rather, since I was mostly rampaging in a reckless state, what’s going to happen to this forest?

This messed up nature, looks like a natural disaster or something passed through it.

In Asakura Ryuuma’s world, I might have been continuously beat down for it.

“Well, I’m not interested in it. You know how much of a harmful influence it has on the environment after all.” (Velt)

“Oi oi oi oi, this kid became defiant.” (Hunter)

“I don’t care as long as I can just defeat the enemy, and I’m not interested in anything other than that.” (Velt)

Rather, I would have been eaten if I didn’t go this far.

“But isn’t it fine, since thanks to that, bro was able to win!” (Doraueemon)

Like, this thing became way too over familiar with me, but is it okay?

“Oh~, so this is the device dragon, huh~, looking at it closely, it sure does have a strange body~.” (Hunter)

“Furthermore, it’s talking fluently.” (Hunter)

“How was it constructed?” (Hunter)

“Hey, it’s hard too~, like, it really is hard~, it’s hard~ and hot~, and so raring to go!” (Kuri?)

“This is~, how many tens of billions? Good job~, boy, you’re rich~.” (Risu?)

Although they didn’t try to steal it, the Hunters interestedly stared and touched Dora, the device dragon.

Dora is twitching and stuff, but probably because it realized that these guys aren’t as scary as Cleran, it isn’t getting surprised like the start.

Or rather, the one in danger might actually be me.

“Hey~, boy~ now you’re~, already~, so rich~, and you can~, do anything you want to~.” (Kuri?)

“You can live in a really big house you know, eat delicious things every day, buy what you want to buy, and then also have the girl you like~, nihihihi.” (Hunter)

The horny combo ladies are drooping next to my lying down body, putting me between them.

The bikini armour is just barely off point, that I can feel their body temperature and exposed skin sticking to me from both sides.

Wait, this isn’t good! Since it’s right after Cleran tempted me, this isn’t good!

“Uoh, kid~, I’m so jealous~! Tell us, uncles, your impression later!” (Hunter)

“Kuh~, if I had caught the device dragon, it seriously would have been heaven!” (Hunter)

No, just stop them! Well, I’m getting some crazy bad feelings too though! However, the horny Hunters Kuri and Risu showed lewd smiles as they licked their lips, and looked like different predators to Cleran.

“Wait, you two over there! If you do indecent things to otouto-kun, I’m going to rip up your loose crotches!” (Cleran)

“Haa? How would you know if our crotches are loose or not? Even though all you do is eat monsters, you’ve never even eaten a human man before.” (Kuri?)

“Shut up~, and just look~, after all~, we’re going to~, eat you, boy~.” (Risu?)

Their hands are like, amazingly skilful. They stroke my lower half with perfect power control, rub my earlobes from both sides, and blow into it!

“Hey, boy~, make us your lovers~.” (Kuri?)

“Yeah yeah. I guarantee our technique is good~. We deeeefinitely won’t let you get bored of us and you can do it every day, anywhere, at any time~.” (Risu?)

Ah, crap, I feel like my originally distant consciousness is about to go too distant, and like, I don’t even care about anything anymore.....

“Makyokushin Karate, Horizon Quintuple Thrust!” (Ura)

At that moment, a huge dragon went flying right above us.

“Ga, buaa, buwaaaaa.” (Dragon)

Wait a minute, the dragon that just went flying has traces of being punched enough for its face and body to deform, but what happened!? Like, the dragon is super frightened.

“Fuu, fuu, fuu..... you were strong, ice dragon. If you surrender now, I won’t go any further.” (Ura)

Ura appeared here, deep in the forest where the land has been transformed into a wasteland.

Her dark clothes are broken in several places, one of her arms are covered in ice, and there’s blood on her cheek from a cut.

From just seeing that appearance, you could expect it to have been a fierce battle.

“O, oi, was that lass fight, fighting a dragon alone!?” (Hunter)

“No way, I thought she got done in way before!” (Hunter)

Of course, even a pro Hunter would get shocked if a dragon that has a bigger body than many humans combined, was beaten down by a woman’s thin arms and had a life or death battle with a woman.

And I knew that Ura’s talent was amazing, but as expected, I still got surprised.

“Buwaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaa!” (Dragon)

Is it planning to go on a final desperate attack? The injured ice dragon shoots out a blizzard from its mouth.

However, without even trying to avoid it, Ura attacks it head-on.

And then,

“Makyokushin Karate, Roundhouse Block!” (Ura)

The blizzard avoids Ura. No, Ura's darkness-clad palm made a beautiful circle, and that created an absolute defence.

She steadily got closer to the ice dragon, and the moment she entered its bosom, her strong fist hit the sky.

"Makyokushin Karate, Shouruage (Rising Dragon Fang) Thrust!" (Ura)

Darkness swept the huge ice dragon high into the sky.

It was an enormous amount of energy, enough to cover the sky in darkness for a moment.

Without trying to ukemi or land, the ice dragon that completely lost its power dropped with all of its body weight and force.

It was enough of an impact to make the ground violently sway.

Everyone became speechless.

"U, Ura....." (Velt)

When I unintentionally mutter that, Ura, who had kept her fist thrust up, turned around and ran to me with a desperate look.

"Velttt, you're safe~..... Velt! Th, that, that injury is!" (Ura)

Ah, before I realized, Kuri and Risu had stepped back, whistling with a 'we didn't do anything~' face.

Fast. However, they probably felt danger to themselves at the same time.

"Velt, what an injury..... you were done in by that woman, huh!" (Ura)

"Ye, yeah, well, I won though." (Velt)

"Kuh, unforgivable, Velt! If I did not have my hands full with something like a dragon, I would have immediately been able to run to you! Even though I swore to fight instead of you and destroy all of your enemies, I'm sorry!" (Ura)

Something like a dragon..... I glanced at the Hunter uncles, and they were shaking their heads sideways with a shuddering face.

That's right, she said 'something like a'.

At any rate, it became clear from that right now. If she saw me doing something crazy with Kuri and Risu, we would have ended up like that dragon.

I shouldn't fool around with other women near Ura.

Ah, that reminds me, there are another one of those women.

“Miyamoto Kendo, Niten Ichiryu, Cross Cut!” (Musashi)
“Gishaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaa!” (Dragon)

What’s up with this, is it not unusual for the women of this world to be unreasonably strong?

Why do women that can fight dragons one on one, gather around me.

Chapter 64: Mission Complete

While resting my head on Ura's lap, I was looking at the duel of the heavens. At that time, the Hunter uncle muttered while having a pale face.

"Hey, kid. In the past, a certain country mobilized a hundred soldiers to subjugate one Pantherion, but they were all annihilated by that one pantherion." (Hunter)

I've heard of that before. It's a monster that even pro veteran Hunters have to deal with in a party.

"Wind dragons and ice dragons have like~, over ten times the body size, power, and energy, and they're monsters that can even swallow pantherions whole." (Hunter)

Even if a country sent a thousand soldiers, they wouldn't be a match for one. That's what a dragon is.

"Miyamoto Kendo, Niten Ichiryu Tornado Cut!" (Musashi)

Even if human type creatures have superior brains, their body power is inferior to wild monsters.

To defeat those monsters, people made armies, used cooperation, and their thoroughly tempered magic skills and sword skills.

However, this is something that really shouldn't be allowed to happen.

The existence of a human type creature that can fight a dragon one on one, denies the existences of teams and armies.

"Gishaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaa!" (Dragon)

"Fuu, as expected of the prideful dragon race. I admire your power and potential, despite you being a new born child." (Musashi)

"Gisha! Gishah! Gishaaaaa!" (Dragon)

"However, I cannot lose either! My lord is waiting! I will not let anyone disturb him!" (Musashi)

Bloodthirst? Fighting spirit? No, this is *swordsman spirit that's filling the

area. (TL Note: The one from Rurouni Kenshin I think.)

An uncontrollable degree of swordsman spirit protrudes out of Musashi's body, and it feels like you would be cut up just by touching the air.

The dragon probably sensed the danger from its wild instincts, as it's not flying out recklessly.

However, the fact that it's not running away shows its pride.

The dragon lowers its stance and covers its body in an intense tornado.

"That courage, splendid! Name yourself!" (Musashi)

"Gishaaru!" (Dragon)

"I will remember it, Gishaaru!" (Musashi)

No, wasn't it just making a sound right now? Like, are you an idiot? There's obviously no way you could actually talk to it.

"Otouto-kun, by the way, the wind dragon right now said, 『I'll kill you』." (Cleran)

While pitying Musashi from hearing Cleran's answer, the fact that Musashi really is amazing, even though she's an idiot, stayed constant.

"Here I come, Gishaaru! I give you, one swing of my soul! Niten Ichiryu Infinite Blade!" (Musashi)

Together with a violent flash of her two katanas, she cuts up the dragon's skin with countless blades.

Incidentally, I heard that dragon scales are as hard as steel, but she steadily cuts through.

Like, I wanted to tsukkomi that it's not one swing, but multiple swings, but her swordplay was so magnificent that I became speechless.

"Gisha.....aru....." (Dragon)

The dragon's body was mangled, and it collapsed from losing power. It probably hasn't died, but it's completely unconscious.

"I admit you were strong. It has been a long time since I remember my body being cut up this much. However, who you fight for, is what decided the outcome. Once you find a master you can dedicate your blade to, have a match with me again." (Musashi)

Well, she's not uninjured, since her cheek and hakama was cut by the wind dragon's wind blades.

Even so, she still defeated a dragon one on one.

What's up with women these days.

"L, looooooooooooooooooooooooooord!" (Musashi)

And then, the moment she turned around and looked at me, she jumped at me with a tearful face, as if her character completely broke.

"Ohh, Musashi, you're amazing." (Velt)

"Looooord, wa, was this injury given to you by Cleran! Failure! Even though I was with you, what have I done! Without being able to instantly kill the dragon and join you quickly, how can I call myself your right-hand man! I am a novice!"

(Musashi)

"Ah, oi oi, you worked hard, didn't you?" (Velt)

"Loord, loord, loord! Now that it has come to this..... I have no choice but to commit sepuuku! Ura-dono, I will count on you for the beheading!" (Musashi)

"I'm telling you, just sto-, ouchhhh." (Velt)

After hitting her head multiple times on the ground while prostrating herself, it honestly looked like she hurt herself more than how much the dragon hurt her.

Like, what do you want? Am I that unreliable? Am I your princess? You're underestimating me quite a lot.

"Good grief, every single one of you." (Velt)

Although my bones are broken, even if it's only temporary, I have to stand up right now.

With the small amount of levitation (floating) magic remaining, I prop myself up.

"Wait, Velt! Don't force yourself to move!" (Ura)

"Loord! Loord! Loooooord!" (Musashi)

Just shut up.

"Oi, women shouldn't take that much dignity from men." (Velt)

"Velt? Ow! Ve, Velt....." (Ura)

“Lord? Ouch! Lord.....” (Musashi)

“Even if their limbs get torn off, even if they’re bloody and in tatters, that’s the path the men jumped into of their own accord. Do you guys want to protect me? Or do you want to fight together with me?” (Velt)

With my bloody palms, I hit their faces.
My bloody handprint stuck onto their pretty faces.

“If you want to be with me while I’m all bloody, then you women should just silently come with me! Rather than pity my injury, just tell me I did well, smile, and high five or something!” (Velt)

Are you going to say that’s male chauvinism? I don’t care. I’m not interested in stuff like that.

So, don’t be so overprotective of me. It makes me feel pathetic.

If women cry or feel anxious for me every single time, it just makes me lose motivation.

Well, I am thankful for their feelings though.

“.....” (Ura)

“.....” (Musashi)

Ah? What, are you angry? Like, their faces are even redder than mine.

“U, ah, au..... auuu..... Ve, Velt.....” (Ura)

“Lo, lord~..... aauuu..... lyord~.....” (Musashi)

What’s up with these guys, did they break?

“Ah~, Velt, you coward. That’s, uu~, cowardly! Yeah, yeah!” (Ura)

“Loord, that is cowardly! That kind of surprise attack~, surprise attack~! My loyalty to my lord is being swayed by evil thoughts~!” (Musashi)

What are they squirming and wriggling about.
Are they holding their heads from suffering?

“Ah~, otouto-ku~n, you’re a sinful man~.” (Cleran)

“Haa?” (Velt)

“Both of them are so cu~te getting so red in the face~. Even though they completely won against the dragons, they completely lost to you~.” (Cleran)

“What are you saying at this point in time. These two should stop trying to show

sex appeal so much. I already get that they love me.” (Velt)

“..... Otouto-kun..... you really do have an amazing personality. Girls that fall for you will definitely be unhappy.” (Cleran)

Anyway, Musashi and Ura are both safe. I’m alive too.

Now just.....

“Well, it seems that everyone crossed the damn minimum line.” (Farga)

What happened to him? But the moment I wondered that, he appeared.
It’s Farga.

Furthermore,

“Stupid younger brother, after crossing the point of line and death, you seem to have damn grown. Good work. For the damn demon and demi-human, well, I guess you got a passing mark.” (Farga)

Farga is uninjured.

He appeared as if nothing happened, and behind him, a fire dragon with its horns, claws, and fangs all picked off, is slowly walking behind Farga, while trembling in fear.

“Fa, Farga, that’s?” (Velt)

While everyone is dumbfounded, I ask, and Farga answers normally.

“It ended in an instant. Since this thing seemed to see the difference in power between us, it didn’t attack me anymore.” (Farga)

Oi! Ura and Musashi, who are quite injured, are making really complicated faces.

“Wait a minute! Then, does that mean Farga was silently watching our battle as a spectator!?” (Ura)

“No way! Rather than I, what would you have done if something happened to lord’s body!” (Musashi)

“Hmph, I wasn’t going to save you. Although they’re of the dragon race, they’re damn brats that were only just born. I decided that people that can’t do anything against opponents of that level, aren’t necessary for our journey from now on.” (Farga)

I didn't notice since he was always so close to me, but this guy really is on a different dimension.

He didn't defeat a huge dragon but instead made it fear him from the overwhelming difference in power.

That reminds me, that Four Heavenly Beast Demi-human Esamu only opened his eyes widely against Farga after all.

"Also, stupid younger brother. I was planning to save you in the worst case scenario, but I wanted you to pass through the point of life and death as much as possible. I watched your battle from midway, but you sure became quite better." (Farga)

"Farga. Even though you're a brocon, you were pretty strict this time." (Velt)

"Hmph, I just thought I wanted to see your real strength from time to time. However, it's great that you had enough power to defeat Cleran." (Farga)

Anyway, after all said, once again, us four safely (?) joined back together.

"A~ah, it's my complete defeat. You have a good team, Farga." (Cleran)

Cleran said that looking somewhat refreshed.

For now, although this place was wrecked up pretty badly because of battle between Hunters.....

"Man~, you guys are amazing! Geez, bro and lady are the best! It's thanks to everyone that I'm alive!" (Doraemon)

Well, I got the device dragon now.

Chapter 65: Sulky baby

When we returned to the village, we saw all the villagers kneeling and praying towards the mountains.

Apparently, they seemed to have been convinced that it was the end of the world when they saw the dragon rampaging in the forest and land that suddenly collapsed.

Although the villagers were relieved after we told them that the threat is gone, they dropped their shoulders from the fact that their beautiful forest is a mess. I stayed silent, without telling them I did it.

“The bone fractures and hit marks on your body are damn terrible. If you aren’t treated by an advanced level healing type magician..... it would take longer than half a year for a complete recovery.” (Farga)

Lying down on a worn out bed in a cheap inn, Farga’s diagnosis results to me who’s in a mummy state, with my whole body wrapped in bandages and casts, was merciless.

It’s questionable whether I should be grateful for at least being alive, but for a while, I’ll be unable to wake up, eat and go to the bathroom alone.

“Good grief, you were too absurd! An injury is a man’s medal? Then, will you say that this injury is humanity’s honour award? You idiot.” (Ura)

“Uu~, lord~, even though I was with you~, even though I was with you~.”
(Musashi)

Ura and Musashi, who are staying by my side, aren’t separating from me for even a moment.

If I try to make even the slightest movement, they would respond with, “what do you want to do!”, or “lord, I will do it!”.

Well, to be honest, it does help me though.

“Velt, tell me whenever you need to relieve yourself. I prepared a urine bottle. It would probably be too embarrassing to say to the others, but I can do it.” (Ura)

“Lord! Please tell me whenever you would like to wipe your body! I will always be waiting with a sanitary cloth!” (Musashi)

“Oh, that’s right, Velt, are you hungry? I put rice in soup to make it easy to eat. Here, ah~n.” (Ura)

“Excuse me, Ura-dono. As you are lord’s wife, there is no need to trouble that hand of yours. I will do it instead.” (Musashi)

“No, it’s fine. You go stand guard outside.” (Ura)

“No no, as a personal attendant, I cannot leave lord’s side for even a moment.” (Musashi)

Actually, nevermind, they’re just nuisances.
I want them to nurse me normally. Like, don’t go arguing in front of a seriously injured patient.

“Well~, aren’t you lucky~, otouto-kun. Normally, bothersome men like you wouldn’t be served this much by girls, you know?” (Cleran)

“Bro, you really are a man!” (Doraumon)

Also, for some reason, Cleran is relaxing on a shabby chair while Dora is comfortably sitting on top of a table.

No, before that.....

“Wait, why are you guys relaxing without care!? You were on a eat or be eaten relation, right!” (Velt)

“I mean~, Dora-chan belongs to otouto-kun, so it’s not good if I eat it, right~?” (Cleran)

“I’m all good as long as she doesn’t attack me! Rather, I’m lucky to get along with a beautiful lady!” (Doraumon)

What was my life abrading, struggle to the death for?
Since they’re getting along this well, I want to say that there was no need to try to kill each other that much.

“Either way, stupid younger brother. You probably can’t go on a journey with those injuries. Stay damn put for a while.” (Farga)

“Kah~, no way. Even though I especially got a clue!” (Velt)

That’s right. What I’m most frustrated about, is that I won’t be able to move for a while, even though I obtained Dora, that seems to be a clue to finding

Kamino.

I might be able to meet her.

“That story again, huh. Velt, could you just tell us who you’re looking for already?” (Ura)

Well, it’s understandable for her to be curious. However, I’ve dodged this question multiple times already, and to be honest, didn’t feel like telling anyone as of now.

“Like I said before, if I am going to tell someone, I’ll tell Forna first.” (Velt)

Then, because that probably touched her heartstrings, Ura immediately shouted.

“, Wha, what do you mean Forna! How long are you going to stay faithful to a woman you haven’t heard from for five years!” (Ura)

Musashi, Farga and I all became surprised by that unexpected loud voice.

“Hey, if I remember correctly, Forna is Farga’s real younger sister, right?” (Cleran)

“Yes, although I have not met her before.” (Musashi)

“She’s his fiancée. She’s been coming and going from the empire to the Divine Being Continent though.” (Farga)

“Ehhh! Wai-, bro had a fiancée!? I completely thought that Ura-neesan was bro’s lover.” (Doraemon)

To be honest, just as Dora said, Ura and I have been looked at like that, for these past five years.

However, I just vaguely let it pass. Since Ura didn’t take any direct actions either, I didn’t particularly do anything, but this is my first time seeing Ura like this.

“In the first place, how does being a childhood friend matter. Although you were together with Forna for five years, even I have now been with you for five years too, and I honestly think that I understand you more than she would!” (Ura)

This isn’t like Ura at all.

Normally, she would get a bit angry and sulk, but she’s saying quite a lot today.

“Velt, to be honest, there is nothing you don’t know about me, and even if there was something, I can just tell you it. Every living thing has some kind of thing they don’t want to say, but if it’s to you, I will say it. That is because I don’t want you to think I am hiding something.” (Ura)

What happened? She’s rattling on this much. If I remember correctly, she wasn’t on that much good terms with Forna, but is that enough for her to become this emotional?

Did her frustration finally explode? That’s something I would be sorry for, but me not telling her about my past life is normal. So then, why is she suddenly getting so angry?

“Velt, if Forna is more important to you, then it can’t be helped. I can accept that. However, apparently not even Forna knows the person you’re looking for.” (Ura)

“Well, I didn’t tell her after all.” (Velt)

“That’s right. That’s exactly why I can’t tolerate it! There is a person you’re looking for, that Forna and I don’t even know, who you would risk and devote your life to search for! Even though, even though you got so battered to try and meet them!” (Ura)

Ah..... ahhh..... so that’s what it was.....

“In other words, since I’m hiding it from even you, that should know about me the most, you can’t help but feel depressed?” (Velt)

“Ah~, well if you say it as is, then yeah.” (Ura)

“Otouto-kun, don’t you know even a little about delicacy?” (Cleran)

“Stupid younger brother has been like that since the past.” (Farga)

“Lord is quite harsh.” (Musashi)

“Bro, even though you understand the hearts of women, you really don’t have any consideration, do you~.” (Dorauemon)

Do you have to be so curious because I haven’t talked about it?

I wonder how it was for sensei. Does missus know what sensei is hiding?

What about Samejima?

What about Miyamoto?

What about Kagami?

To be honest, I think there’s no use talking to the people of this world about it.

In the first place, who would believe it? Stuff about how I have memories of my past life, and that I was in a world different to this one.

“Hey, Dora. What kind of person is your goshujinsama?” (Velt)

“Eh, goshujinsama?” (Doraemon)

That’s exactly why I’m curious.

“Oi, Velt, we are still talking.....” (Ura)

“Tell me, Dora.” (Velt)

“, Velt!” (Ura)

I want to know.

How it was for her..... for Kamino.

“Goshujinsama is an amazing magician, and she’s smart too!” (Doraemon)

Really? As far as I remember, Kamino was a stupid woman that frequented the make-up tests.

“But, like, I never knew what she was thinking. It’s also because of the mask hiding her face that I didn’t know if she felt joy, sadness, happiness or pain, but whenever I asked something, she always says strange words and dodges the question.” (Doraemon)

Doesn’t know what she’s thinking?

I wonder. I feel like her past self just did fun things without thinking about anything.

No, you could say that’s why I didn’t know about it. Why was she able to live so happily.

Since she was always laughing, I might not have thought deeply about what she was really thinking.

“I see. Well, I hadn’t stepped into her mind enough to understand her either.” (Velt)

I didn’t understand her either.

But even so, it’s true that she saved me with her laughter.

From what Dora just said, I further don’t understand what kind of person Kamino is.

If she hasn’t changed, then that’s fine.

But what if she has changed? I remembered when Miyamoto talked about how our former classmate, Kagami, changed.

Thinking about it like that, I became a bit too uneasy.

“Ura, the objective of my journey, is to search for Dora’s goshujinsama.”
(Velt)

“Wha.....t?” (Ura)

“In the past, like, really in the past, I met that person. Even before meeting Forna and Farga, I met that person, and she saved me.” (Velt)

“What! I don’t know anything about that! Who on earth is Dora’s goshujinsama!” (Ura)

“I don’t know. But if I don’t meet her, I won’t ever be able to advance forwards. So, I want to meet her. To say thanks, and..... tell her what I wanted to say in the past.” (Velt)

Thank you for taking me with you when I was alone.

Asakura Ryuuma liked you.

I wanted to just tell her those two things.

“Bro is goshujinsama’s acquaintance? I didn’t know about that at all. Goshujinsama didn’t talk to anyone other than us after all. Ah, I’m not sure about when goshujinsama went out while we stayed at home though.”
(Dorauemon)

“I see. Well, I guess that’s true. So, I heard you got kidnapped before you realized it, and don’t know where you were before?” (Velt)

“Uuu, I’m not sure. Ah, but if goshujinsama comes within a certain distance, then I can sense her! Goshujinsama can also sense me too.” (Dorauemon)

“I see. So if you’re here, it means that we won’t pass each other without realizing. Well, just that is a huge step.” (Velt)

It’s a huge step.

After all, since I didn’t even know what Kamino was reincarnated into, I didn’t even know if I passed by her.

“Alright, Dora. Move together with us for now. Your goshujinsama might unexpectedly come meet you after all.” (Velt)

“Ohh~, I’ll take you up on that. If I moved alone, I wouldn’t know what might happen after all.” (Dorauemon)

“That’s how it is. Since that was my original journey objective, that’s fine right, Ura, Farga, Musashi.” (Velt)

Farga didn’t seem to care, and Musashi nodded without complaining as if saying, ‘if you say so’.

All that’s left is Ura, who’s sulking.

“Oi, Velt. You better not say this goshujinsama or whoever is the woman you used to like.” (Ura)

“..... Well, you’re not wrong.” (Velt)

“Is, is that so. Th, then, well, how do I put it? Do you still, feel that way now?” (Ura)

Asakura Ryuuma liked Kamino Mino ‘in the past’.

If I get asked, ‘but what about now?’, then it’s hard to answer.

“Right now? Well, I think I like her? She usually flickers in my head when the conversation of being head over heels for someone comes up.” (Velt)

“U, uuuuu~~~~~.” (Ura)

“But it’s not like I’m searching for her just because I like her. She ran through me in the blink of an eye, and the last time I met her.....” (Velt)

The last time I met her. No, the last sight Asakura Ryuuma saw being dying, was the sight of her, who was always smiling, passing away.

How painful that was.

“I want to meet her to say what I want to say. That’s for my own selfish self-satisfaction. And after I meet her, if she’s pained about something, then I want to be the one to save her this time. This is kind of like my way of setting things straight. As long as I can’t do that, Velt Jeeha still can’t become a riajuu.” (Velt)

“~~~~, What you’re saying sounds too meaningful, that it’s incoherent. Even though you’re always simple and clear, you’re only suggestive at times like this.” (Ura)

“Well, let me do stuff like that from time to time.” (Velt)

At least until I meet Kamino.....

Although I didn’t answer her question, Ura nodded with a reluctant face.

Well, that being said, going on the next journey straight after this..... isn’t possible..... since I’m like this after all.

I guess I'll rest for a while. I should stay put for at least a bit.
It was just at the moment I started thinking that.

"Ooooi, kids, are you here!" (Hunter)

I heard a throaty, middle-aged man's voice.
Then, the door of our room was vigorously opened, and I saw the Hunter uncle that I talked to about all sorts of things before.

"Oi, kid..... you created fissures in the forest and land with the power of magic, right?" (Hunter)

"Hmm? Ah, yeah. I did." (Velt)

"And you made a pretty deep fissure, right!" (Hunter)

"Ye, yeah." (Velt)

Well I mean, I made cracks so deep when I tried to drop Cleran down into the mantle layer after all.

Crap. I guess it really was bad that I destroyed the forest.

Compensation? How many hundreds of millions is it?

Arrest for the destruction of nature? How many years of penal labour? I can't even imagine.

I got a bit startled, but the words that came out of the hard-pressed uncle's mouth was.....

"A, a, a,....." (Hunter)

"A?" (Velt)

"A hotspring was dug up!" (Hunter)

The words that came out of his mouth were too far above our expectations..... eh, seriously?

Chapter 66: Banquet of cynicism

The old man people called the village mayor, lowered his head to us very deeply.

“Not only did you protect the village from the dragon’s threat, you even gave us a hot spring, and I don’t know how to show my gratitude. Originally, this was a poor village that only had the highlight of having good air and a beautiful forest, but we should become more lively with this.” (Village Mayor)

We were welcomed to the village’s square. Including us, around thirty Hunters are sitting on a slightly flashy carpet, while the elderly bow very deeply. There were servings of fruit on plates, and a whole beast was being roasted excitingly in front of us, like a campfire. Young girls from the village with flower ornaments on their heads were dancing with fluttering long skirts and clothes that showed their navels and poured alcohol for us.

Basically, we were being welcomed for some reason.

“Ouchhhhhh.” (Velt)

“Velt, just act like you didn’t do anything while being welcomed.” (Ura)

“Uuu~, however, I feel guilty too.” (Musashi)

“This is a damn awkward feeling.” (Farga)

In the villagers’ eyes, they think we eliminated the dragon that suddenly appeared, and furthermore brought a hot spring to them. However, in reality, I picked a fight with Cleran, Farga and the others defeated the dragons Cleran produced and I just rampaged in my battle against Cleran, wrecking up the forest. The hot spring was honestly a coincidence. And even that hot spring was coincidentally found by the unexpectedly diligent Hunters that were doing the minimum maintenance on the forest. Despite that, it hurts my chest to be thanked this much.

“Gahhahha, since I couldn’t catch the device dragon, I thought this time was just some labour, but to think this souvenir came with it!” (Hunter)

“Hey~, since we found it~, don’t we more or less have ownership of it~? Can’t we just quit being Hunters~, and manage the hot spring here~?” (Kuri?)

“You’re right. Even in the Humanity Continent, there are only a few hot springs so the neighbouring royalty and even nobles from the empire would come.”
(Hunter)

A great, once in a life overturn. The Hunters become cheerful from feeling that, and I could honestly understand those feelings too.

There aren’t many hot springs in this world because the majority of hot springs are natural hot springs that adventurers coincidentally found. Digging through the ground to try to dig up a hot spring water vein, is impossible. The reason for that is simply because it costs money, and it’s basically just a gamble. In this world that doesn’t seem to have advancements in geology, even if first-class earth attribute magicians and many labourers are hired, luckily digging one up is basically impossible.

Therefore, hot springs are precious and other than the secret, dreamlike hot springs that haven’t been publicly revealed, hot spring areas that changed into tourist attractions are basically treated as privileges only celebrities can enjoy. Therefore, the profit you gain from it isn’t a laughable amount.

“Hey, you really are lucky aren’t you, boy~.” (Kuri?)

“Yeah~, we don’t need to sell our bodies~, anymore~, but we can do it for you one time, for free~.” (Risu?)

“Uhhooo, no way, good for you, kid! These two never do it for free!” (Hunter)

“Hey hey, can we do it once too~?” (Hunter)

“If you pro~perly pay the money~.” (Kuri?)

Leaving aside the fact that I dug up a hot spring without permission, for treasure and hot springs, if the country doesn’t declare that it’s their own country’s property beforehand, it would belong to the people that found it. Well, there seem to be times where people sell it to the country, but either way, since I dug up the hot spring and the other Hunters found it, the ownership of this hot spring goes to us.

Obviously, if we were to do stuff with this hot spring, we would have to pay venue costs and tax to the village they would earn an unbelievable amount for a modest village like this. People would gather as they expand the village and

open shops, and the village might even become a town in a few years.

“So~, kids. What are you going to do now? We’re going to retire as Hunters and live leisurely. We’re thinking of migrating to this village too.” (Hunter)

That was a fast decision.

Well, I guess that’s just like a Hunter though.

“Boy, you should live with us too~.” (Kuri?)

“We’re also~, going to stay in this village~, to fix the forest~, and live luxuriously after a while~.” (Risu?)

Oi oi, what happened to your pride as a Hunter? Well, I can’t say that though. To be frank, Hunters are those types of people. Moving for only justice, pride and adventure are rare. Farga and Cleran are the unusual ones, and the majority of the bounty hunters and treasure hunters are a group of people aiming to get rich quickly, so money is most important for them. Therefore, these Hunters that accomplished that, could be called the winners.

“Fuuumu. Peacefully managing a hot spring inn with Velt isn’t bad either. No, I might as well make the second Tonkotu Rameeen restaurant here.” (Ura)

“Don’t think about that so seriously, Ura. Money is important and I’ll receive as much as I can, but I can’t just be lazing around without doing what I want to do.” (Velt)

“Obviously. A life of laziness should just eat shit.” (Farga)

“Umu. I am glad lord is not the type to be lost in greed and neglect heightening himself.” (Musashi)

“Me too~. Rather than paying money to eat something, I like eating things I catch myself.” (Cleran)

“Once I’m able to return back to goshujinsama, I’ll invite her to move here!” (Doraemon)

I guess I should say it’s natural, but everyone other than Ura who wants a stable life, wasn’t thinking of living here now. Well, although Ura complains a bit, she always ends up giving in and comes with me.

“What, Velt-dono, are you not going to live here?” (Village Mayor)

“Yeah. I have stuff to do after all. Well, I’ll leave this to you and the other Hunters.” (Velt)

“What’s up with that, even though I thought we could get along with each other.” (Hunter)

“I mean, it’s not like I’m leaving immediately. My body’s like this after all.” (Velt)

Although I said I’m leaving, that won’t be straight away. My body is battered and I can’t move, so I’ll just wait and see for several days or weeks.

“Then, please take it easy until you depart. Including today, we will give you our wholehearted hospitality.” (Village Mayor)

“That’s right, let’s drink, kid! We’ll tell you some of our heroic sagas!” (Hunter)

“Ohh, good idea! Let’s talk about the subjugation of the bandit group in the east!” (Hunter)

“Drink, driiink! Hyuuu, shake your hips more!” (Hunter)

Ouchhhh, like I said, it hurts my heart when you thank me like that.

Well, since they think like that, I guess there’s no need to ruin it?

No, before that, even though it’s only been a short while since this journey started, too many things happened in this short time.

Should I just think of this as taking a breather?

Just for today, we released our feelings out a bit.

“S~o~, Farga~, what happened to the proposal you got from the Chainmail Kingdom’s princess~! Tell meeee! If you don’t, I’ll tear off your nails, and suck on the blood coming from your fingers!” (Cleran)

“Asshole, you’re too damn drunk, Cleran shit.” (Farga)

“Shut up~, say it~, tell me~!” (Cleran)

Cleran who’s in a high from getting drunk is quarrelling with Farga.

“Eh~, I can’t believe it. Ura-chan, isn’t it pretty bad as a woman if you still haven’t had sex with that boy at fifteen?” (Kuri?)

“Shu, shut up, unlike you indecent people, I am just being careful! Besides, Velt is unexpectedly serious, so if he ends up doing it based on emotions, he would think about what would happen if we make a child!” (Ura)

“Eh~, don’t you know~? Right now~, there’s a proper contraception tool~, you know~? In the town we use as our base~, they sell this『Thin Thin Condo-kun』, that an organization called Love and Money made~.” (Risu?)

These women are having an indecent talk.....

“Sho, after cutting lots of things~, I want to shay~, fuh, I ended up cutting worthless things again, is what I want to shay~!” (Musashi)

“Ohhhh, that’s pretty tasteful~.” (Hunter)

“Neesan, you’re tasteful!” (Doraemon)

Like, Musashi and the Hunters are all dead drunk already.

“Nice. I hate demons, but you’re cute, Ura-chan.” (Hunter)

“Oooi, ‘gozaru’ demi-human girl, have another cup. Today we’re putting aside races and slaves.” (Hunter)

They were eating delicious things, drinking, making a racket, dancing and singing.

That might have been why we didn’t notice at all.

The fact that right now in this world, humans, demons and demi-humans are warring against each other.

“Geez~. Ura-chan, calling people indecent is so mean~.” (Kuri?)

“Shut up! Are you not indecent!” (Ura)

“We aren’t~, even we were pure in the past. But our family was killed in the war, our country was destroyed, so we became homeless and broke without any relatives with us, so we reluctantly became like this to live.” (Risu?)

That was an expression I saw for the first time, from Kuri and Risu that always say indecent things and tease people.

Probably because they felt miserable from remembering the past, they showed sorrowful faces.

“Is that so.” (Ura)

“Yeah. Demons killed them. Well, although I hate the demons that destroyed it, there’s no use telling you~. Besides, that demon country seems to have been destroyed a long time ago, so it’s just kind of~, helpless, I guess~.” (Kuri?)

“We really were desperate. We crept on the ground, sold our bodies, and did anything we could to live.” (Risu?)

That kind of thing happens too, huh. The world is at war, and there are people here who had their families killed by demons and demi-humans.

Ura and Musashi's families were killed by humans instead, with their countries destroyed. And on the other hand, Ura and Musashi fought against humans too. There would be no end to it once they start talking about it, so they don't know what to do. It's mutual.

It's the same for the other Hunters too.

All sorts of things would have happened with demons and demi-humans, but there's no use telling Ura and Musashi about it.

However, this was something I hadn't expected.

"What country do you guys come from?" (Ura)

"We're from Bolbardie. The one that got destroyed by demons five years ago."
(Kuri?)

The moment she heard that Ura's expression paled.

Furthermore, at the same time.

"Since you people are Hunters, you must have some heroic sagas, right?"
(Musashi)

"Yeah, we do. Well, it would be awkward telling a demi-human like you though." (Hunter)

"No matter. After meeting lord, I changed my way of thinking. We are in the middle of a war, so there is nothing strange about you people fighting demi-humans." (Musashi)

"I see. Ah~, well, the strongest enemy we fought in the past, was when we invaded the elf race in the Kaide forest to the west of Furryure, in the Demi-human Continent, under a request from an organization called Love and Money!" (Hunter)

"..... Eh?" (Musashi)

"We were against the guards, and well~, those guys were tough. In the end, it was the staff of Love and Money that defeated them all. But since those guys from Love and Money were burning the forests down, we didn't want to have anything to do with them anymore." (Hunter)

The cup Musashi was holding broke.

That's right, in this world, these types of things are possible.

However, there's a limit to cynicism.

Right at the moment when humans, demons and demi-humans had forgotten their races and were enjoying themselves, we received a surprise attack.

We couldn't help but think why that had to happen now.

Chapter 67: Concluding

The banquet seems to still be going on. It's noisy outside.

Is this what they call 'all-nighters'? I didn't think I would see them in a different world too.

However, since we're tired and can't move, we should just sleep already.

While being called boring, we slipped out of the banquet and just tried to get to sleep quickly.

However, even after returning to our room, Ura and Musashi have just been silently sitting with their heads down, holding their knees in their arms.

Halfway through, they just stood dumbfounded, giving suitable responses to the Hunters with empty hearts, and it seems like nothing was going through their throats.

All I knew was that their feelings were in a mess.

"Oi. How long are the two of you going to stay like that? Even if you think for a whole night with your tired bodies, it's not like an answer is going to come out." (Velt)

Although I'm worried about them, regardless of my body, my consciousness is so dangerous it's about to fly out.

However, at this rate, I won't be able to sleep comfortably.

Usually, I would've just ended it with, "well, it doesn't concern me," but the fact that I can't is worrying.

"Velt. I thought those two were just indecent people that sold their bodies cheaply. However, the truth was different. Although it's for money, no one would happily embrace a man they don't even like. Despite that, I arbitrarily decided they were originally that sort of people, and on top of that, my father was the one that derailed their lives." (Ura)

Kuri and Risu. The demon army killed their families and destroyed their families, so they dirtied their bodies to live, despite having everything stolen from them.

And the one that made them live such lives was the Vesparda Kingdom, Sharkryu that lead the army, and Ura, who was one of them.

“That’s ironic.” (Velt)

That one statement won’t make her feel at ease, but I honestly can’t say anything other than that.

“Lord. Why, why..... why was I so thoughtlessly..... talking with the Hunters that killed my family, that killed everyone..... so thoughtlessly.” (Musashi)

Musashi is the opposite of Ura.

When she was young, there was an Elf country that her parents served, and it seems they were very loving to Musashi herself, but neither that country nor her parents are her anymore.

The Hunters destroyed the country, killed, and stole from them. She can’t even imagine what would have happened to the elves afterwards, who sell for high prices, and she doesn’t want to know either.

The people that did that, were the Hunters we met in this village.

“How troubling.” (Velt)

That one statement won’t put her at ease, but that was all I could say to Musashi too.

“Ura, are you going to confess that you’re the princess of the Vesparda Kingdom? Musashi, are you going to take revenge and tell them that the people they killed were your family?” (Velt)

There’s no way they could answer. Exactly because they can’t give an answer for that, they’ve just stayed silent while being perplexed.

Although their positions are complete opposites, the timing is too ironic for both of them, that they’ve just kept their heads hung down.

No, maybe they’re waiting for something? Since they can’t come up with an answer, they’re waiting for someone’s opinion.

The only people here are Farga and me.

What should I say?

“I was happy in the past five years. The humans and the Elfarshia Kingdom

was pleasant, but my eyes were taken away by that too much. Even if I don't hate humans, it's only obvious that humans would resent me." (Ura)

"After meeting Farga-dono and lord, I became able to think that humans and Hunters are not all scum. However, why did I have to meet them today of all days!" (Musashi)

It's too heavy. I can't give them half-hearted words to try making them feel better.

In the first place, I don't have something inside me to let me say something to them.

Because of that, what I'm going to say isn't something that will make them talk about the truth and reach a conclusion.

"Hey, isn't it fine to just leave it alone?" (Velt)

"Eh?" (Ura)

"Wha, what?" (Musashi)

I chose to say that because I don't want anything to change.

Sure enough, the two who were seriously listening became flustered. However, I prefer that over anything else.

"Kendo and karate practitioners seem to hate lying and hiding stuff because of their martial artist influence, but if you're going to suffer that much, there's no need to force yourself to confess the truth." (Velt)

"Absurd. Then Velt! Are you telling me to deceive them while staying silent about the fact that I am their enemy!" (Ura)

"Lord, are you telling me to leave the humans that stole everything from me, despite them being right in front of me?" (Musashi)

They talk so fast as if they're biting at me. To be honest, it's not like I don't understand their feelings, but I nodded, telling them that's what I'm saying.

"Ura, it's not like those two are the only ones. How many people do you think died from the destruction of Bolbardie? Are you going to make that face every time you meet a survivor? There would be no end to it." (Velt)

"That is, true." (Ura)

"Musashi, it's not just those guys that stole everything from you. Even though you couldn't lose yourself in cutting them down the moment you learnt the

truth, are you going to cut down all the others that were part of it while worrying so hard from now on? There would be no end to that either.” (Velt)
“However, however, I..... I, should I just give up in frustration?” (Musashi)
“Like, even if you guys told them about it at this point in time, wouldn’t it just trouble them? On the day that they especially got a great, once in a lifetime overturn and are making such a big racket, you’re going to say, I’m actually an enemy? You guys are actually my enemies? It would just make it depressing. You’re about to part from each other with smiles, so wouldn’t it be better to leave it like that?” (Velt)

That’s right, there’s no need to go out of your way to take responsibility or settle things cleanly everytime.

Keeping it incomplete and unsettled is fine.

“Well, in this case, that’s enough for Ura, the problem is Musashi. It’s about whether you can part from your hateful enemies while laughing heartily.” (Velt)

“U, there, there is no way I could..... impossible! As I thought, I cannot forgive them!” (Musashi)

“Is that so. Then, you really will kill them? Well, there might be no helping that I guess. After all, I can’t stop you with my current body.” (Velt)

“U, tha, that is, true.” (Musashi)

Rather than not being able to forgive them, it looks like she just can’t come up with an answer.

Well, if I was in her position, I’m not sure if I could be so tolerant either.

If I knew from the start that Ura and Musashi were the people that killed my old man and mum, I probably would have hated them so much I wanted to kill them, and leaving aside whether I actually would kill them or not, I would have struck them with my murderous intent and hatred.

However, if I was suddenly told that they’re my enemies right now, I wouldn’t be able to do anything.

I probably would’ve been troubled over what to do for so long.

Musashi is currently in that exact situation.

“Oi, you damn demi-human. I have one thing to say.” (Farga)

Farga, who had been silent the whole time, spoke up.

“The Sea Thieves you killed had families too. In their case, it really was just some damn karma for fucking digging their own graves, but from the perspective of the people who were left behind, they wouldn’t be able to restrain themselves with that kind of reason. Once they know you were the one that killed them, they would obviously come to take revenge.” (Farga)

“Sto, stop joking! How could you put me with them! They stole everything for the sake of money! My father, mother, and everyone!” (Musashi)

“Like I said, even if you kill for a great cause or kill for a lowlife reason, it doesn’t matter to the people who were left behind. Especially for someone like my stupid younger brother, who hasn’t particularly killed anyone before.” (Farga)

Well, to be honest, I already know the result of this conversation. Morning will come without an answer ever coming out. There would be no end to it even if they think, and there’s no way everyone in this world could answer correctly.

That kind of thing was something I knew from Asakura Ryuuma’s age. Things like giving death penalties, opposing death penalties or taking circumstances into consideration.

The answers to stuff like that would change if your standpoint changes.

Probably because Farga’s words excessively weighed down on them, Musashi and Ura hung their heads down even lower.

Then, what should we do? Their small backs were saying that.

Stroking their heads or hugging them here is probably considered manly, but since I don’t have any words to say after that, I didn’t do that.

That’s right. All I can do right now is tell them to, ‘act like nothing happened’.

However, what would I do if I was asked if I can do anything other than that?

“Can’t be helped.” (Velt)

My body can’t move because of the injuries. So, I’m going to force it to move. Moving the casts fixed onto me, I made myself move.

“Velt, what are you trying to do!” (Ura)

“Lord, that will make your body worse. Please stay resting.” (Musashi)

It’s your fault that I’m being reckless even though I just want to rest. My old self might have just left them alone by saying I’m not interested or it

doesn't concern me, but there's nothing more troublesome than this.

"Oi, ask the inn people to let us borrow the kitchen. Also, bring the ingredients I'm about to say." (Velt)

"Haa? Velt, what are you!" (Ura)

"Drink alcohol, eat ramen and then sleep after washing off your sweat in the bath. Kuhahaha, we need to make sure they don't drown in the hot spring."
(Velt)

"Lo, lord?" (Musashi)

In the past, sensei said that since this is the only thing he did, he can't pass down anything other than this.

In these five years, since that was the only thing he passed down to me, this is the only thing I can do too.

"Without going to war, I just continued making ramen while improving my fuwa fuwa time. That's why this is the only thing I can do. I'll make you eat delicious enough ramen that you can't help but smile." (Velt)

Uoooo, my body really does hurt. Can I make soup and strain the noodles like this?

Well, I guess it's better than fighting Cleran?

"Idiot, go sleep Velt! Besides, what do you think you can do with something like rameeen?" (Ura)

"Lord, there will always be another chance for cooking. Please rest for now."
(Musashi)

'Why ramen? Something like ramen.'

Well yeah, that makes sense. However, since that's all I can do, I can't help it. Besides, it's not 'something like'. Even sensei devoted his life to making ramen. In the first place, I'm going to make ramen because of what's happening right now. After all, they're having a party, you know?

"I don't understand well either, but apparently working adults and university students eat ramen after parties. It seems to make them really fat though."
(Velt)

"Like I said, what is the point of it? And what race are 'shakaijin' in?" (Ura) (TL Note: Shakaijin is the romaji for working adults.)

“Women should be careful~, they get really fat after all.” (Velt)

Well, I’ve never done that before though.

However, I know the term. People generally call the ramen you eat after parties as,

“People call ramen eaten after drinking parties as『Concluding Ramen』” (Velt)

Concluding ramen. It’s a word I kind of wanted to say.

Besides, I think it’s the most suitable name for food right now.

Chapter 68: When should you do it? It doesn't have to be now

Common sense of a world in war? Settling the truth? Revenge?
None of that matters to me. I'm not interested.
Other people can just go worry about it themselves and preach their ethics or morals.
Only the actual people concerned would know what's the most accurate thing to do.
It's the same for me. I would only decide what to do with the demi-human that killed my old man and mum once I actually meet him and see his face. There's nothing I can do until that happens.
So, this is all I can do right now.

"Velt, what do you want to do!" (Ura)

There's no deep meaning behind it. I'm just doing what I can do.
But like, I really didn't think it would be this hard to make noodles with my heavily injured body.
Since there's no noodle making machine, I've always made them by hand.
I stir the wheat flour, round up the dough, knead it, spread it evenly, and cut it.
Facing the things in front of me, I just silently repeated my work over and over again.
It's amazing how sensei repeated this for over ten years. He wouldn't have been able to even get one injury.

"Oi, Musashi, you properly cut the ingredients and tossed them into the pot, right? Watch over it properly." (Velt)
"Ye, yes!" (Musashi)

To be honest, as long as you prepare everything, making the soup of the ramen can easily be done in around ten hours.
To make the really oily ramen that I like, I would need to boil it for a whole day.
I thought stuff like this was just something that was quickly handed out and

then eaten in a flash in Asakura Ryuuma's age, but I never knew it took this much effort. I get why a lot of the ramen restaurant managers from my past world looked so proud.

"Oi, Velt. Are you going to boil it now? Is there enough time for that?" (Ura)
"Hm~, well, I can't give thick soup to guys who were drinking and eating so much, so I'll give a simple one that can be finished in a shorter period of time. Well, it should take around six hours." (Velt) (TL Note: I say simple, but it's more like 'not-as-much-oil-ramen', rather than simply flavoured. Yeah, well basically just think of that for every time I say simple in this chapter.)

"Si, six hours? Does it take that long! However, dawn will break by then and because everyone is tired, would they not sleep before then?" (Musashi)

"Maybe. But no matter how seriously I do this, I need time. Just because I don't have time, that doesn't mean I can just give them some random stuff." (Velt)

That's right, in these five years, I properly learnt that patience is necessary for ramen making.

"Hey, Ura. You know, sensei worried and went through trouble and error to make this, before we were even born, and finally came to this point." (Velt)

"U, umu, I have heard about that before." (Ura)

"And then, one day, before I met you, sensei said something to me who doesn't work hard at anything." (Velt)

—Walking through my life as Melma, I continued piling up experience from the bottom rank of a restaurant when I was sixteen years old because I didn't have any talent for magic or fighting. I started with washing plates, and it took multiple years until they entrusted me with cooking, and then I took ten years practising making ramen. Even so, I still didn't stop seeking new flavours. Remember this. No matter what world it is, there's nothing you can gain in just a day.

"..... That's what he said." (Velt)

At that time, I didn't take the meaning of those words to heart. Rather, I said hard work doesn't suit me, and I didn't even care about it. But after my old man and mum died, I started thinking about those words every now and then

“You know this ramen~, one bowl is 800 Ell. No, something that I made without asking sensei is only something that’s lower than half price. It doesn’t match how hard he worked, right? But like, carefully doing it like this while still worrying and seeking still isn’t enough for it to be perfect. That’s the kind of world this is, you know?” (Velt)

Even though he achieved a huge success in the Elfarshia Kingdom, sensei is still seeking tastier soups, noodles and new flavours. Since he was an enthusiastic teacher in his past life, when he immerses himself in one thing, he devotes his life to it.

“I used to think that devoting your life to ramen is way too much of a stupid exaggeration. Like, wouldn’t you think that? If you were to put it in another way, even the things sensei made only cost 800 Ell. Dirty old men coming home from work stop by for a few minutes, and then leave quickly. Devoting your life and going through trial and error for ten years for something like that is foolish.” (Velt)

Yeah, I ‘used’ to think that. It’s past tense.

“Ura, Musashi. Answering the questions you were given today is impossible, isn’t it? In addition, it’s a problem of your family being killed or killing others, right? If it’s such a serious problem that you might have to give answers like killing yourself to atone for it or killing them to take revenge, shouldn’t you be thinking about it more carefully?” (Velt)

“Carefully..... you say? However, that is simply running away from answering it. Can’t you take that as postponing the problem?” (Ura)

“Just because of that, making a quick decision for everything is impossible. When should you do it? Doing it straight away is also important, but there are also problems that need to be carefully thought about while taking time. So like, it’s fine even if you don’t do it now.” (Velt)

At the very least, that’s what I think.

“Well, I’m not going to link everything together with ramen. But since sensei and I both only did this, this is all I can do. You guys should go decide on what you’ll do now by yourselves.” (Velt)

Isn’t it fine to not thrust reality right in front of them? That’s my wish.

It's because I don't want anything to change.

However, I'm telling them that if they have to reach a conclusion or find an answer no matter what, there's obviously no way they could find an answer for that so easily.

Then, probably because my words gave them a chance to think about stuff in some way, the two made a bit more refreshed faces, instead of hanging their heads down.

"You sure are unkind like always. Basically, you want to say that it's not an easy problem to answer, so we should carefully worry and think about it by ourselves, right? Weren't men supposed to pull along women and show them the way?" (Ura)

"However, this is troubling. In case our answer we end up thinking of is different to lord's answer and we are blamed for it, we would not ever be able to get back on our feet." (Musashi)

Good grief, you guys love me too much.

Well, it can't be helped, since I can't say any kind things to women like a man should do.

"Ahhh, you don't need to worry about that. No matter what answer you make, I won't hate you guys. Isn't that great." (Velt)

So, I at least said this.

But since it was a bit embarrassing, I didn't turn around anymore to face them. Although I heard a sobbing sound immediately after I said that, I ignored it.

I just kept staring at the soup.

No matter how many minutes or hours it takes, even if my consciousness becomes distant, I continued devoting myself to it, all throughout the night.

By the time I realized it, I could see a slight bit of sunshine from outside the window.

The morning sun is almost about to show itself.

I can still hear the voices of the drunkards from the centre of the village, but they should be fast asleep by the time the sun comes up completely.

And, I also felt that it was just the right time.

"O, ohh....." (Ura)

“Uu~mu, what a deep flavoursome smell. It is exciting my appetite.” (Musashi)

“Yeah, considering my standard, this is definitely well made.” (Velt)

When I dish up the soup from the huge pot and sip some, a simple but great flavour spreads through my mouth.

“Alright! Prepare some utensils!” (Velt)

“Yes!” (Musashi)

“Leave it to me! I won’t lose to anyone at carrying dishes!” (Ura)

It seems like they got over their doubts, as the two of them silently followed my instructions and quickly moved.

Huh? Two? What about Farga?

“So damn good.” (Farga)

Ah, he started eating before everyone else by himself!

You asshole! It’s so damn good? Well that’s great, you asshole!

“Hey~, I smell something really tasty~, but what is it? What are you making without telling oneechan~?” (Cleran)

Amazing.

Even though she collapsed on the ground from being dead drunk, she woke up from getting lured by the smell of food.

Well, although I’m scared to let Cleran, a food pro, eat this, I should have some confidence here and tell her.

“It’s a simple, tonkotsu concluding ramen.” (Velt)

“Simple tonkotu concluding rameeen? What’s that.” (Cleran)

“Concluding ramen. It’s a dish to end today’s special, fun banquet of drinking good alcohol, and swear that you’re going to work hard from tomorrow.” (Velt)

“Hmmm, what’s up with that, it sounds interesting!” (Cleran)

“Yeah, rather than cooking, this is culture! Study hard and get bulges of fat!” (Velt)

After putting in soup, noodles and the ingredients that were available in bowls, we went to the square.

The sky is somewhat bright, and the stack of firewood that was prepared for the campfire is already burned up with none remaining.

The Hunters and guys from the village are still holding their alcohol cups and bottles, while staggering.

Good grief, these old men.....

“Oooi, just end this already! Go eat this quickly and sleep!” (Velt)

When we appear and shout, everyone raises their hands, looking dead drunk.

“Uo~, niichuan, where were you~, aren’t you gonn dwink my alcohol~.”

(Hunter)

“Boy~, vring this oneechuan to a ved~, and then~, I’ll give it to you~, chuuu~.”

(Kuri?)

“Veryd-dono~.” (Villager)

“Ura, Muzashi, you guys gome too~.” (Hunter)

Alcohol really is amazing, huh. Wouldn’t it be easier to defeat the muscular Hunters by making them drink alcohol instead of fighting them? They were drunk enough for me to think that.

Furthermore, most of them are in undressed, naked states. It was such an unbearable situation that even Ura and Musashi reflexively looked away.

Good grief,

“Look, I’m giving you guys a treat.” (Velt)

“Oh~, what’s dis~, is niichan, going to tweek us to somefing?” (Hunter)

Like, these guys don’t even know what I’m trying to do, what they’re being given or what they’re about to eat.

They did somehow take the bowls and held their forks, but they keep sleeping and waking up that it looks like they’re going to spill it.

“Ve, Velt, if it’s come this far, how do I put it, isn’t there no point in making them eat it?” (Ura)

“Uuu~, even though, even though lord poured his passion into it!” (Musashi)

“Kuhahahahaha, it’s fine like this. Eating ramen crudely is the best.” (Velt)

After spreading it to everyone, they all took their own postures and timings to eat it, and then unsteadily started slurping the ramen.

And then, in the next moment.....

“!!!!!!” (Everyone)

The moment they took ate one mouthful, their eyes all opened widely and their consciousnesses were woke up.

“”””””So..... so good!!!!!!!”””””” (Everyone)

And from the second mouthful, it was just a mess.
Regardless of whether they spilled soup or made noise, they just engrossed themselves in devouring it greedily.

“So good! Sooooo good! Uooo, what is this!?”
“Juruuuuuuuuuuu!”(TL Note: Slurping noise.)
“Kaaah, it’s spreading inside of me! What is this! Uooo, like, it’s so good!”
“I veel grozz~, I want to frow up~, vut it’z zo good that frowing up is a waste!”
“Ohhhh, otouto-kun, what is this, it tastes good! How do I put it, it’s easy on my stomach and the soup isn’t that thick, so it’s simple and tastes good!” (Cleran)
“Like~, I like the soup! It’s like~ hmm~, it’s calming.”

I think I can understand why sensei devoted his life to this.
In the end, just seeing this sight is probably enough for him.
No matter how they eat it, no matter how much time it takes, just hearing ‘delicious’ satisfies your heart.

“Haha..... ahahaha, this is amazing, Velt. Everyone is just intently eating it.”
(Ura)
“Yes. Well then, with all due respect, I will also eat it..... ohh! Thi, this is! So good! Ah, excuse me! It is very delicious.” (Musashi)

Ahh, it went back to the same sight again.
The moment the banquet of humans, demons and demi-humans getting drunk and excited together, regardless of races, was supposed to end, this time all three species are engrossed in ramen.
Ura, Kuri and Risu, Musashi and the Hunters, all of them.

“Hmph, you truly are unrefined.” (Ura)
“What do you want~, Ura-chan, this tastes so good you know? Uu~, but what should I do if I get fat~.” (Kuri)
“Even the soup~, seems like it’ll make you fat~, but I’m going to drink it~!”
(Risu)
“Hunter-dono. The soup is overflowing. Good grief, you are being too sloppy.”

(Musashi)

“Uooo, such a waste~, like, are there any more servings? I’m so full that I’m about to throw up, but I just want to eat one more bowl!” (Hunter)

Yeah, it’s fine like this.

Rather than making things troublesome during happy times by recalling your bonds of the past, you should just enjoy yourselves and eat when you’re hungry.

“Hmph. Isn’t this fine, stupid younger brother?” (Farga)

“Yeah. We’re fine like this.” (Velt)

For me who’s not a hero nor someone that went to war, problems about races and wars can just be left alone like this.

Isn’t that right, sensei?

Chapter 69: The last time I'm going to think about confusing things

I've seen adults reeking of alcohol before, but this is my first time seeing a town reeking of alcohol.

Taking a bath and refreshing yourself during those times is the best.

"Uhhoo~, the hot spring feels, so goood!" (Hunter)

"Gehahahahaha, this hot spring is ours from today!" (Hunter)

"Our income will be erupting like a hot spring!" (Hunter)

"Rather than that, I think we don't need this wall that separates the male and female hot spring." (Hunter)

"Yeah! We're in the middle of mother nature, so we should liberalize our naked bodies!" (Hunter)

"Whaaat are you saying! Our skin isn't for free!" (Kuri)

"That's right! Besiides, even if you try~, crossing over the wall and peeking~, Ura-chan and~, Musashi-chan will beat you up, you know~?" (Risu)

"Oi, I'll kill you if you try to peek! I will not show my body to any man other than Velt in my life!" (Ura)

"Of course, I will not forgive you either!" (Musashi)

A simply made open air bath. I can hear their noisy voices through the top of the wall.

Like, they sure are energetic.

Going past the walls of races, they drank alcohol together, ate good food together, and finally, they're having naked socializing.

Well, how do I put it, they're loud but seem like they're having fun.

"It would be great if they could just sweep it away like water, no, hot water under the bridge." (Velt)

"There's obviously no way it would go so damn simply like that." (Farga)

"But, well, isn't it fine~? Considering it was otouto-kun, he did a good job." (Cleran)

“Friendship sure is nice! I, I’m moved!” (Doraemon)

While hearing the happy voices from the open air bath, we’re leisurely resting in our inn room.

Only Farga, Cleran, Dora and I are in this room right now.

We let Musashi and Ura go in the bath with those guys while sitting here watching over them.

No, rather than watching over them, for me, it’s just that my injuries are just too bad to go in the bath since I completely dealt the finishing blow to myself by making ramen.

Considering Ura and Musashi said they would follow me into the men’s bath when I said that, although it was troublesome, I’m glad they seem to be having fun.

And about me that’s been waiting here.....

“But man, your ability really is useful. I didn’t think you had a monster’s ability that can heal injuries, Cleran.” (Velt)

With her monster ability, she made her arm into jellyfish tentacles and coiled them all over my body.

I thought it was gross and disgusting at a glance, but after a while, the pain alleviated and I felt better.

“It’s the『Holy Jellyfish』that only inhabits the Demi-human Continent’s ocean area. Its tentacles have the effect of healing living things’ injuries, and other races all overfished it to use it in during wars long ago, so it became an endangered species. You know~, five years ago, when I found it after hiding in the ocean for three months, I was so excited.” (Cleran)

“Hmm. A story from after we split up after hunting the dragon, huh.” (Farga)

“Man~, that sure is a convenient ability~, as long as you have this, you should be fine as long as nothing that great happens.” (Doraemon)

The injuries that were said to take half a year to fully recover, is recovering before my eyes.

That reminds me, since I’ve never gotten such a big injury like this before, no one has used recovery magic on me, so it’s quite an important experience.

“This really helps me out. I actually thought I would become a bedridden old

man for a while.” (Velt)

“Well, these are injuries I gave you, and above all, you’re otouto-kun after all. As long as it’s a visible injury, even I can do something about it.” (Cleran)

A visible injury, huh.

Well, there certainly isn’t anything more troubling than an invisible injury.

“Hey, Farga. It really didn’t strike home with me.” (Velt)

“Ahh?” (Farga)

“Musashi and Ura’s feelings were too heavy, like their resentment and feelings of guilt.” (Velt)

That’s why I ‘suggested’ for them to leave it indefinite.

It’s because I didn’t want these loud, laughing voices to change into an awkward silence or serious grudging words.

However, the great majority of humans would probably say my opinion is wrong.

“Stupid younger brother, certainly, it’s hard to say your thoughts are correct. But you know, although that’s hard to say, your feelings aren’t wrong. Living things can’t live with just the correct answers.” (Farga)

Yeah, I know. It’s just as he says. As long as I can maintain the current situation, it’s fine.

I just didn’t want Ura and Musashi to think of something weird and destroy everything that was going well until now.

To be honest, it really didn’t matter whether I was right or wrong.

Then, probably thinking that it doesn’t suit me to think about admirable things, Cleran lightly poked my head.

“Even though you act unserious and irresponsible, you unexpectedly think about troublesome things, huh, otouto-kun.” (Cleran)

“, not really, since it would end if I just say it’s fine like that. But since it’s someone who I can’t say that to, I’m troubled.” (Velt)

“Fufu, isn’t it fine? Isn’t it fine if you seem like a human but somehow seem the least human?” (Cleran)

“Haa? I seem like a human and also not human? What’s up with that.” (Velt)

I don’t get it. When I make that face, Cleran started talking.

“Otouto-kun, you saw it, right? The massive killing in Shiromu. If the standpoint changes, you can see that humans, demons and demi-humans all repeat the same thing. That’s the common sense of this world.” (Cleran)
“, yeah.” (Velt)

“But even so, every race says that just Shiromu was in its closing years together. They treated other races like things less than livestock, and for the sake of pleasure and desire, they mercilessly sold them, cut them up, raped them, and like, there were even people that called the people of Shiromu, fiends instead of humans.” (Cleran)

Fiends, huh. Well, that’s probably why Miyamoto and Esamu were determined.

They had to destroy Shiromu, even if they would get a bad reputation and dirty their pride.

“What, do you want to say that humans are villains with the ugliest hearts?” (Velt)

This conversation is a bit unpleasant.
However, Cleran suddenly started laughing.

“Ufufufu, hey, otouto-kun, do you know about the lion people race?” (Cleran)
“The lion people race? Ahh, that’s the race that’s even called the king of the grassland, right?” (Velt)

And thinking about it now, Esamu of the Four Heavenly Beast Demi-humans is probably from that race.

That’s right, a lion-human.

I know about it, but so what?

“The lion people race has an amazing trait. First of all, they make harems. Most demi-humans get a terrific amount of sexual desire when they get the urge to breed, but the lion people race is outstanding, even among them. Just one person isn’t quite enough to handle that sexual desire, so they make a countless amount of women serve them and make them have their children.” (Cleran)

That reminds me, Esamu said something about having around six hundred brides, but was that really true?

When it comes to that much, I don't feel jealous in the slightest, and rather, wouldn't he die?

"But the thing is, the lion people race's harems aren't necessarily there forever. That's because although their sexual desire is amazing, their strife instinct is also extraordinary. Even if it's someone of the same race, they would kill each other if they think of them as enemies. And then, the one that kills the other thoroughly snatches their harem. That's a terrible stolen love, right? They're in a different league to humans." (Cleran)

"I guess. But like, why are you telling me that story? Is it just another one of your specialty monster lectures?" (Velt)

"Ufufu, well, just wait. What I'm about to say now is the amazing part. So, what do you think the lion person that took the other's harem does first? Apparently, they kill all the children of the stolen harem. Well, they're just strangers from their own perspective and they need to cut off all the unnecessary roots of revenge, and above all, to leave behind strong genes, the children of the lion that lost are probably just hindrances." (Cleran)

Ahh, is that so. I've heard about it before in Asakura Ryuuma's age. A story that could only exist in the world of beasts, characteristic to the law of the jungle; the child killing of lions.

"And theen, what do you think the women whose children were killed do? Can you believe it? The lion people race's women whose children were killed, crave for sex and end up copulating. Hey, what do you think about that? What do you think about women who get sexually excited with the person that killed their husband and children?" (Cleran)

Cleran was smiling, but I felt that her eyes were intense and terrifying. It's a smile that seems like it'll freeze my spine.

"Humans, demi-humans and of course demons, all do things that may seem obvious to them but seem eccentric to other races. Do you get me? Ura-chan and Musashi-chan are the unusual ones." (Cleran)

Maybe.

When I was Asakura Ryuuma, even I, whose behaviour was bad, saw guys who did disgusting crimes, soldiers that warred against terrorists who performed

inhumane actions, regardless of the past and present, in the news and on TV. However, in this world, it's not just humans doing that.

There are such disgusting guys among the demons and demi-humans, and there's even behaviours and cultures that are incomprehensible.

So, I was somewhat able to agree with Cleran's words that people like Ura and Musashi who're at a loss for what to do, are unusual.

"Yeah, although it's just vaguely, I think I understand the reason why." (Velt)

"What do you mean?" (Cleran)

"The families that raised them were those kinds of guys too." (Velt)

A demon king and a demi-human. Even though they were reincarnated into those races, that demon king and demi-human still had their memories and feelings of being a 'normal human in a peaceful world'.

Samejima and Miyamoto. Even after reincarnating into their races, those two probably couldn't acquire the mad behaviour of their races, so Ura and Musashi didn't either.

"Problems with races are pretty difficult~, aren't they~. I don't really get it." (Doraemon)

And then, the strangest existence here summarized the conclusion with a few words.

To be honest, it's just as he says

"I agree, Dora. I honestly don't want to think about this confusing stuff from now on. I want this to be the last time I do." (Velt)

"Yeah~. After all, it just gets darker the more you think about it. It's just~, dumb." (Doraemon) (TL Note: 'Stupid' is what I guessed from the context to be 'ぼんぼこぴー', but I don't even know what 'ぼんぼこぴー' means...)

"Yeah, it really is. Rather, the problem with races is just..... meaning poof." (Velt) (TL Note: Again. '意味プー' means '意味不明', which means 'ambiguous' or 'doesn't make sense', but...)

"! Yeah! It's meaning poof! Rather, how do you know goshujinsamanese!" (Doraemon)

"Kuhahahahaha, I see, goshujinsamanese huh. That's great!" (Velt)

I don't know whether she changed or not. However, Dora said things that the

Kamino I knew would've said instead.

So, I just left this conversation aside.

"Otouto-kun, you really are good at mutually understanding Dora-chan. Even I, a monster master, can't understand Dora-chan's words~." (Cleran)

"Hmm, well, thinking about confusing things isn't like you, stupid younger brother." (Farga)

And then, because I wanted to leave this conversation aside, I started to want to meet Kamino even more.

That stupid woman would probably break the dark atmosphere, amaze me, and then make me feel that thinking about difficult things is stupid.

"Alright, Cleran. If you continue treating me at this rate, how long will it take me to completely recover?" (Velt)

"Eh? Hmm~, if you don't do some stupid thing, I guess it would take until tomorrow? Some pain will still remain, but your bones would probably have healed. That's just how amazing the Holy Jellyfish is." (Cleran)

"Hmm, shortening a full recovery that would've taken half a year, in one day, huh. As expected of fantasy. It sure is a world that makes doctors cry. Great. Then, if I stay lying down for a day, I can say goodbye to this village by evening. Although there were some changes of plan..... I'll start moving seriously now." (Velt)

"Waaao. Otouto-kun is so dreamy when he doesn't think about oneesan's labour~." (Cleran)

That's right, even though we were supposed to head straight to my destination, we kept making deep detours.

From now on, I'm going to aim to go where I want to go.

"Stupid younger brother. By moving seriously, do you mean going to the empire?" (Farga)

The empire. Yeah, that was my first destination.

However, there isn't much meaning to go there for me anymore.

"I'm going to search for Dora's goshujinsama." (Velt)

"What?" (Farga)

"Ara?" (Cleran)

“Ehh, bro, you serious!?” (Doraemon)

As long as I have this hint called Dora, there’s no point gathering information at the empire.

So, my destination is already decided.

“Are you sane? From what I heard from this thing’s story, its damn goshujinsama is in the Divine Being Continent. You said you wouldn’t get involved with war, but do you understand what that means?” (Farga)

“Farga. I only said that I don’t want to go there if I don’t have to, but it’s a different story if that place is my destination.” (Velt)

I don’t like war, and I don’t want to get involved with it.
But if she’s there, I have no choice but to go, right?

“You sure are an idiot~, otouto-kun. Do you understand the current society~?” (Cleran)

“Hah?” (Velt)

“Here, this is today’s morning newspaper. Have a look.” (Cleran)

While making a shocked face, she threw the newspaper at me.
I open it and see a big article about war covering the whole page.

“What? A large army of a hundred and fifty thousand soldiers of humanity’s great allied forces led by six people of the Ten Heroes of Light, departed to the Divine Being Continent? Hu, hundred and fifty thousand!” (Velt)

“That’s right. Currently, one of the Seven Great Demon Kings’ country, the oni demon race’s country, the『Jigouku Demon Kingdom』and humanity are having an all-out war. This is already a great war that the whole world has its attention on. In other words, it’s basically impossible if you try to go to the Divine Being Continent right now.” (Cleran) (TL Note: Jigouku is the stretched out version of Jigoku, which means hell.)

..... Yeah..... it really is impossible..... it’s impossible..... that was the moment my determination was easily broken.

Chapter 70: Why today

I can't do what I can't do.

A flow that's so large my will and courage doesn't matter is hindering my way.
I unintentionally hit the bed powerfully.

"Damn it, even though I finally found something I want to do, it has to interrupt me, doesn't it. War should just disappear." (Velt)

"Arara, for otouto-kun to say that it might be the end of this world." (Cleran)

It truly is a real nuisance. As I thought that, I noticed Farga looking a bit strange.

He's looking at the newspaper as if he's devouring it all.

What is it? Was there any news that he's curious about?

"Ah.....!" (Velt)

Then, I suddenly realized it too.

"Tha, that's right. Speaking of the Ten Heroes of Light, doesn't that mean-!"
(Velt)

However, Farga immediately returned the newspaper to me and shook his head sideways.

"The names of the heroes that departed were written, but Forna's name wasn't in it." (Farga)

"Eh, ah, really?" (Velt)

"Yeah. Since she just departed for the front a few months ago, she's going to be waiting at the empire, organizing and readjusting the army." (Farga)

I got a shock for a moment but immediately calmed down.

I see. Well, although she went to war with resolve when I hear about these large-scale wars, it really does make me worry.

However, it honestly made me feel relieved that she wasn't participating in this one.

"Well, enough about being relieved, basically, I can't go to the Divine Being

Continent for a while.” (Velt)

This once again returns me to the original question, but this seems hard to solve.

To be honest, since my willingness was dampened, I’m feeling pretty down. However, Cleran started grinning proudly for some reason.

“Fufu~nn, otouto-kun, if you want to go to the Divine Being Continent that much, there’s a nice way of doing so~.” (Cleran)

“What!” (Velt)

“After all, even though it’s a great war, it’s just one part of the vast Divine Being Continent. If we just try to avoid that, wouldn’t we be able to land?” (Cleran)

That’s true. But because that isn’t easy, I’m troubled.

“Look okay~, I thought of that too, but most entrances to the Divine Being Continent from the Human Continent have humanity’s great allied forces bases there, so if any trespassers are caught, they would be forcefully repatriated or arrested. There’s no way a civilian could go through during such a big war.” (Velt)

“You’re right. Yeah, it’s just as you say, that will happen if we’re seen.” (Cleran)

“No, we’ll definitely be seen!” (Velt)

However, Cleran suggested an unexpected idea against my common sense.

“Among the tunnels that Bolbardie made, what would you do if there are tunnels that go to the Divine Being Continent, and haven’t been recognized by humanity’s great allied forces.” (Cleran)

Bolbardie’s tunnels? Are there still such convenient things around!?

“The truth is, it’s been shared between some of the Hunters. Fufu, even the empire falls short to the Hunters’ intelligence network.” (Cleran)

Even the empire falls short? To something that’s like an association at most? I look at Farga just in case, and he nods.

“I don’t know about that tunnel, but it’s true that the Hunters’ intelligence network is better than the empire’s or the allied force’s one. Hunters crawl on the ground, collecting information with their feet, regardless of what side the information comes from.” (Farga)

“Exactly. And so~, about the tunnel information I got with a pretty~ good price, what are you going to do?” (Cleran)

What will I do? She’s talking as if she’s testing me.
My answer to something like that is obvious.
I don’t even need to think about it. If there’s something I would appreciate so much, I would even depart straight away.
As I thought that, I became curious about something.

“What do you want? There’s no way you would give something for free.”
(Velt)

“Fufu~nn, correct. But don’t worry, I won’t force you to pay me money or anything.” (Cleran)

It’s not money. However, in her case, it’s wicked because that doesn’t make me feel any better.

She would just casually ask, ‘give me a part of your body’ or ‘let me drink your blood’, which is scary.

However, I have no choice but to accept it as long as it’s possible, no matter what.

Now, what is it? Come! I waited for her words with resolve.

Then,

“About your journey, can you let me———” (Cleran)

There’s not even enough time to think. That’s what I believed.

No matter what happens, I would go to the Divine Being Continent.
No matter what happens, I prioritised going to the Divine Being Continent.
That’s what I was going to do from now.

I thought there wasn’t even enough time to think.

And I would’ve not had any time to think if I left this village in the morning.
Just as I wished, I could have gone to search for Kamino.

That’s right, if I had just left this village a bit earlier, my journey wouldn’t have been gone out of order so drastically.

“Someoone! Can someone coome! A bloodstained soldier is collapsed heeere!”

We exchange looks with each other.
No, I'm not going, alright? After all, I'm not interested and it doesn't concern me.

"Oi oi, are you okay? Your injuries are pretty bad."
"Wait, oi, he's so young. On top of that, this white military uniform. Are you a new soldier of humanity's great allied forces?"

Farga and I jump out, reacting to the words『young』and『humanity's great allied forces』.
Outside, the wreckage of the banquet still remained, and people were gathering around the square that hadn't been cleaned up.
A man that seemed like a young soldier was warping his face in agony while being treated by an old man that seems like the village's doctor.

"That's the guy, huh." (Velt)

As far as we can see from standing on our tiptoes and looking through the crowd of people, the soldier seems to be about my age.
His white military uniform is torn in some places and is dyed in blood.
However, his actual injuries don't seem to be that deep.
If I had to say, it looks like he's fatigued. It's like he ran with all his power for three days and three nights without sleep.
What exactly.....

"Huh?" (Velt)

The moment I thought that I felt like I had seen that man before.
Huh? Who was he? No, rather than meeting him before..... it feels nostalgic and like.....
At that moment, Farga's look changed and he jumped out.

"Oi, let me through! You, aren't you.....Chett!?" (Farga)

Chett? Huh? Where did I.....

"Stupid younger brother, did you forget! This guy's the son of the duke family and your former classmate, Chett Asouk!" (Farga)

Ah.....

[illegible]

That's right, I knew I saw him from somewhere, he's Chett.

He's the son of a duke family in the Elfarshia Kingdom and is one of the two elite but cowardly twins.

And, because he had the seventh highest grades in the magic school, he skipped through grades with Forna and the others, at the empire's great military army.

“Oi, what the hell are you doing here! What’s that injury? What happened?”
(Farga)

“Oooi, Chett, what are you doing here, oooi, wake uuup.” (Velt)

The doctor starts panicking at us who try to wake Chett up by slapping his cheeks.

However, I'm more curious about why he's collapsed here when he was supposed to be at the empire.

Then, without realizing Farga and I, Chett mutters with a hoarse voice, as if he's having a nightmare.

“Rein.....forcements..... immediately to the empire..... the empire..... is being attacked by one of the Seven Great Demon King countries..... the country of『cyclops』..... the 『Maakai Demon Kingdom』..... reinforcements.....” (Chett)

(TL Note: Maakai is a stretched out version of Makai, which means demon world or hell.)

To Chett's gasping and mumbling words, agitation and commotion run throughout the village.

What exactly happened? Everyone is showing uneasy looks, wondering that.

“..... Cleran, I’m counting on you to treat him.” (Velt)

“Yeah, okay.” (Cleran)

However, because we became composed instead, Farga, Cleran and I gave Chett treatment calmly.

And then.....

“Uuu, I, I am~.....” (Chett)

With Cleran's Holy Jellyfish ability, Chett's complexion becomes better, and because he finally calmed down, he opened his eyes bit by bit.

And then, with a slightly absent-minded face, he started looking around at the surroundings.

“Are you awake now?” (Farga)

“Yo.” (Velt)

Then, the moment Chett saw Farga and I, his absent-minded face changed in an instant as his consciousness finally awakened.

“Ah..... prince Farga! Wh, why! A, and, are you..... no way..... Velt-kun!”
(Chett)

“It’s been a while.” (Farga)

“Rather, what are you doing in a place like this? Weren’t you at the empire?”
(Velt)

Chett looks at us, making an expression that says ‘it’s impossible’. He flusteredly, but also slightly happily grabs my hand.

“Velt-kun, it really has been a while! Uwa~, you really have grown bigger.”
(Chett)

“Oi, we’re the same age. Like, since it’s been five years, it’s the same for you too.” (Velt)

“Yup yup, uwa~, this is nostalgic~, hey you know, everyone’s been talking about you quite a lot, wondering how you’re going. Yeah, I’m happy you seem well!”
(Chett)

That’s true. Talking to him makes me feel nostalgic too.
However, it doesn’t seem to be the time to feel nostalgia right now.

“Oi, Chett. Leave your damn excitement of reuniting for later.” (Farga)

“Ah, prince Farga! Long time no see!” (Chett)

“Why are you in a village to the north of Shiromu, all injured like that.” (Farga)

“Tha, that’s right, I departed from the empire to request reinforcements from other countries..... u, it’s not the time to be doing something like this!” (Chett)

“Yeah, so what happened?” (Velt)

That’s the question.
Also, the words he was muttering before. What was that?
Then, Chett’s expression suddenly paled.

“It was an enemy attack.” (Chett)

“What?” (Velt)

“Once most of humanity’s great allied force’s regular army and the elite forces were dispatched to the Divine Being Continent, one of the Seven Great Demon Kingdoms, the cyclops race’s country, the『Maakai Demon Kingdom』led their army and attacked the empire, while we were short of hands!” (Chett)

The empire is receiving an attack? There isn’t a single person in the Humanity Continent that doesn’t understand how big that is.

“Absurd. No matter how short of hands they are, why couldn’t they sense the enemy’s attack! If one of the Seven Great Demon Kingdoms move, even the fucking empire should be able to sense it.” (Farga)

“U, I admit we lost in the battle of information. However, there was something even more unexpected.....” (Chett)

“Unexpected?” (Farga)

“Bolbardie’s tunnels. An organization called『Love and Money』sold information about a tunnel that the empire didn’t know about to the demons, leading them to the empire that’s short of hands!” (Chett)

“What, did you say....., what are those pieces of shits aiming for!” (Farga)

“I’m not sure. Although I’m not sure, this is the reality that is occurring right now! I departed to send this information to other countries as fast as possible and request reinforcements! However, pursuers found us half way through, and all my other comrades in my group.....” (Chett)

Chett hangs his head down, shedding tears so frustratedly that blood comes out of his fists.

That indicated that everything Chett said is true.

“With the current empire’s remaining soldiers and us new soldiers that just graduated from the military academy the other day as the core..... we have been fighting under princess Forna’s instructions! But there is too much of a difference between the quality of the armies, that..... at this rate!” (Chett)

That’s why they want reinforcements.

Even though pursuers appeared midway and his comrades were killed, he kept running with all his might.

After all, if he, who’s going to call for reinforcements, dies, the empire really

would end.

However, Cleran gives him cruel words.

“It’s impossible. In the first place, Shiromu was attacked by demi-humans and every country is strengthening their own defences, so they can’t afford to send reinforcements. Even the Elfarshia Kingdom, that seems the safest, would take a month to get there. Rather, it was the empire’s fault for sending a hundred and fifty thousand soldiers at this timing.” (Cleran)

“N, no way, but, then that means.....” (Chett)

“No, rather than it being the empire’s fault, didn’t they just make light of the enemy? Ever since the Vesparda Kingdom was destroyed, demons have been shrinking back from the Humanity Continent’s attacks.” (Cleran)

No, that kind of thing doesn’t matter.

Nothing will happen even if we talk about that now.

The problem is what’s happening in reality right now.

“..... Velt-kun!” (Chett)

Wait a minute..... why are you looking at me now.....

“Velt-kun! Prince Farga! I beg you, please head to the empire immediately! At this rate, something irreversible will happen to the princess..... to everyone!” (Chett)

“U, Chett..... you.....” (Velt)

“Velt-kun, please. Save..... everyone..... the princess will..... the princess will!” (Chett)

Like I said..... I’m..... not interested in war.....

“You asshole..... saying such a selfish thing. Even though you guys went to war out of your own will, why do I, who didn’t go to war out of my own will..... shit!” (Velt)

That’s the path you guys chose..... of all days..... why today!

I’m going to curse you..... Forna.....

Chapter 71: That's who Velt Jeeha is

Why does it have to be today!

I went on a completely different path to you guys five years ago.

We might have never met again. Even so, you guys went off, holding justice or some great cause in your arms, that I would never understand.

And yet, why do you ask help from me, who went on a completely different path.

“Shit shit shit! You’re fucking kidding me, damn it!” (Velt)

I kicked objects, walls, rubbish from the banquet and everything I could get my hands on.

Over and over and over again, venting my irritation that I couldn’t let out any other way.

“In the first place, what are you saying I can do by going there! I dropped out of the magic academy! Why are you elites depending on a dropout that quit trying to learn magic at the age of 10!” (Velt)

Forna and you guys were supposed to be the hope of humanity. Wasn’t I supposed to be just a citizen that already can’t reach your level!? Why are you asking for my help like you would when you get dragged into a fight in the town!

“If you come, our morale will definitely rise! Right now, most of the elite force and our seniors are out, so we’re resisting with Shalt and Barts as the centre, who coincidentally returned, but everyone’s morale won’t last forever! But if you’re there! If you’re there, everyone, and above all, the princess will be able to fight forever!” (Chett)

“Stop joking! Don’t think that the mood we had when we were kids is going to work forever!” (Velt)

I wanted to keep war at a distance. I didn’t want to get involved with it. Because of that, when I saw the scene at Shiromu that I coincidentally got involved with, those feelings become all the more stronger.

“I’ve been saying this since five years ago! I don’t want to go! I’ve always said that I’m not interested in war!” (Velt)

And yet, why do you have to do this.

“Damn it, despite that, why do you have to say that! Why do you have to say that to me! Stuff like, at this rate, Forna will die..... putting it that way is foul play.....” (Velt)

“Velt..... kun.....” (Chett)

“If I hear that she’s going to be in a dangerous situation at this rate, there’s no way I wouldn’t go!” (Velt)

Damn it, this pisses me off! I don’t want to go! I don’t want to get involved! I don’t want to die!

“Shit, shit, shit! Forna you damn stupid idiot! If you’re one of humanity’s greatest champions, then just beat them down already!” (Velt)

I want to search for Kamino, you know?
That’s what my life goal is.

Searching for Kamino. That’s Asakura Ryuuma’s unwavering wish.
A hint for that is already in my hands, and I need to go right now no matter what!

How much time do you think I devoted doing that?

How afraid do you think I felt reading the column of people killed in action on the newspaper for these five years!?

How relieved do you think I felt from seeing that your names weren’t on the killed in action column for these five years!?

“Stupid younger brother..... this will derail your life from now in a damn big way. It’s a completely different matter to just a fight. I don’t mind if you leave Forna to me.” (Farga)

“Shut up, Farga. Don’t go check me even though you know what I’m going to say already.” (Velt)

“..... Hmph..... how troublesome.” (Farga)

“I’m serious. For humanity? For the world? That kind of thing won’t move my heart. But there’s no way I leave if I hear that Forna is in a pinch!” (Velt)

Because that’s the thing that not Asakura Ryuuma, but Velt Jeeha will

definitely not yield on.

“Kukukuku, hahahahahahahahahahaha!” (Farga)

Ah..... that’s really rare.

“No way, Farga..... laughed?” (Cleran)

Probably because he hit the bullseye, Farga suddenly burst out into laughter. My awkward older brother that always intimidates others with his dazzling sharp eyes, seems so happy.

“Kukukuku, as expected of my stupid younger brother. That troublesome yet simple way of thinking is just like you.” (Farga)

“Wha-, what, are you making fun of me?” (Velt)

“Nah. I’m in a damn good mood.” (Farga)

Simple, huh. Well, I guess so.

It’s not like me to seriously worry about my traumas of the past, as Ura and Musashi do.

I have no choice but to help her since she’s in a pinch.

Thinking about it simply like that is more like me.

So, although I was really irritated, I feel a bit better now.

“Obviously, I don’t think just the two of us will be able to do anything. We’ll be like a drop in the ocean.” (Velt)

“Who cares. I’ll massacre everyone that makes a move on my stupid younger sister other than my stupid younger brother.” (Farga)

Ahh, I have nothing to do with whatever happens.

I’ll go. I just have to go, don’t I!

Even if it’s just us two, I definitely won’t let her die!

Who cares about the customs of war!

“Just the two of you? It seems I have been looked down on.” (Ura)

“Lord. What are you going to do on a battlefield while leaving your right-hand man behind?” (Musashi)

At that moment, Ura and Musashi stood behind us with smiles, as we were about to go straight away.

“You guys..... no, wait a minute. Wouldn’t it be bad for you guys to go?” (Velt)

It’s because these guys have slightly different appearances.

However,

“Ura, we’re going up against demons you know?” (Velt)

“So what? We are in a world where even humans kill each other. Besides, it’s a good chance to show off to that woman how much my bond with you has deepened in these five years.” (Ura)

“Musashi. Didn’t Esamu tell you to kill me if I participate in wars?” (Velt)

“What are you saying. Chief only told me to do that if lord changes. However, even now, you are still you, my lord. Therefore, I will accompany you to any deadly place.” (Musashi)

Waaao, what reliable women.

“Just leave it aaall to me, otouto-kun, Farga. Oneechan will help you out as much as she can.” (Cleran)

“Wait, are you coming too! Cleran!” (Velt)

“Obviously~. Besides, I need to gather some points from Farga’s imouto-chan here~.” (Cleran)

And then, slipping into the confusion.....

“Uwaaaann, bro, please don’t leave me behiind! If you guys aren’t here, I won’t be able to return to goshujinsama!” (Doraemon)

That’s right, slipping into the confusion, Cleran and even Dora jumped at me.

“Geez, every single one of you are reckless idiots. This really is the best.”
(Velt)

As long as we get into the mood, we would even risk our lives. Well, isn’t this fine?

It’s way easier to understand than talking about some poor justice or a great cause.

“Are you guys going?” (Hunter)

“Um~, well, we~, uh, sorry, but~.” (Kuri)

Then, the Hunters apologized to us with apologetic faces.

However, there isn't even a bit of reason for them to apologize to us. That's because I would have just abandoned them and think it's stupid to risk my life for it if Forna and the others weren't there. So, you don't have to apologize to us for something like this.

"Take good care of the hot spring." (Velt)
"I'm going to come if it gets fucking dirty." (Farga)
"Make sure to split the female and male sides!" (Ura)
"We will definitely go in once we return." (Musashi)
"I haven't entered yet~." (Cleran)
"Even if my body rusts, I'll still go in!" (Doraueemon)

To our words, the Hunters all powerfully struck their chests with wet eyes.

""""""Yeah, leave it to us!"""""" (Hunters)

Yeah, I will. After saying that, we turned our backs on them.

"Uu~, Ve, Velt-kun..... Velt-kun, thank you..... thank you..... you really haven't changed." (Chett)
"Look okay~, Chett. I can take that as you saying I haven't grown, okay?" (Velt)
"No, you are always eccentric. That's why I'm happy." (Chett)
"Oi oi, if you're going to cry, do it after everyone's safe. And then, I'll go complain to that princess who left behind her ex-boyfriend for five years." (Velt)
"Calling yourself an ex-boyfriend, that's so mean! You know, you're misunderstanding, but princess Forna still thinks about you so much." (Chett)
"Yeah yeah." (Velt)
"Ahhh, you don't believe me!" (Chett)

The enemy is a demon king army that's attacking humanity's greatest country, the『Archline Empire』.

What will change by us five and one pet going to them?

However, strangely, none of us said that. For some reason, the moment these members came together, I thought, that 'it might actually go well'.

"Alright, let's go! I'll show how lovey-dovey I am with Ura and Musashi to that stupid woman who left me to go to war, but isn't useful at all, and show that there's no room for you to come in! But if someone interrupts me from doing

that, I'll knock them flying no matter what species they are!" (Velt)

""""Ooooooooooooooooooh!!!"""" (Everyone)

It's not like I'm underestimating war by saying that.
We'll surely be able to do something?
No, we shared something close to belief that we could do something.

Chapter 72: Friend from the land of dreams

This might be the second time I've seriously had the urge to kill in my life.

"Wow~, this is amazing~, I didn't think we would be able to fly through the sky~." (Cleran)

"Yeah, it is amazing. With this, we can go to the empire in one flight." (Ura)

"Good job." (Musashi)

"Yeah, I see you in a damn better light now." (Farga)

Right now, we're travelling through the sky.

If we went via a proper land route, no matter much we rushed, it would've taken several days to get to the empire.

However, since we're flying through the sky at this speed, we'll reach there considerably faster.

The mountains, forests and plains on the ground that I see, constantly change immediately.

Piercing through the clouds in this vast sky, we're heading straight to the empire.

However, unlike the sky, my mind isn't clear at all.

"Bro~, I'm seriously so sorry! I didn't know..... that I could make myself bigger." (Doraemon)

Right now, we're riding the back of a giant dragon.

That dragon isn't a dragon that Cleran created.

I realized that going by land would take time, so I jokingly said, "alright, Dora, make yourself bigger and let us ride your back," but instead, Dora said, "ah, okay," and actually became bigger.

"You asshole! If you were able to make yourself bigger, you should've just done that when Cleran was about to eat you!" (Velt)

"Uwaaaaaan, I'm actually so sorry! It just happened!" (Doraemon)

"You're actually kidding! How hard do you think I fought to save you from Cleran! So many of my bones got all messed up and broken you know! It was

literally a bone-breakingly bad wasted effort!” (Velt)

“Ah, bro, that’s a good one!” (Doraemon)

“Ahh? Do you want me to show you hell with my fuwa fuwa time?” (Velt)

“Noooo, please forgive me!” (Doraemon) (TL Note: Velt says 骨折り損 which means wasted effort, but has ‘bone breaking’ in it.)

Dora in its enlarged form is flying while crying, but I really didn’t think he would be able to become bigger.

It was too much of a shock that no one could say anything from amazement.

“But really, no joke, you’re amazing, Dora-chan. This isn’t just making yourself bigger. I don’t quite understand, but you made your body bigger, or rather, created your body from nothing, or just something that exists in the air.”

(Cleran)

“Seems like it. If a creature that could produce steel from nothing existed, metal businesses would have been fucking doomed.” (Farga)

“Well, Dora was a creature I didn’t really understand in the first place. Machine dragons are profound.” (Ura)

“Umu. And as I thought, this goshujinsama that created Dora does not seem to be an ordinary person.” (Musashi)

Look okay, don’t go seriously analysing it. How much trouble do you think it gave me trying to save it.

Like, am I the only one with common sense?

See, Chett, the elite, has a dumbfounded expression and an open mouth.

“Oi, Chett, what’s wrong?” (Velt)

“U, um um um um um um um, Ve Ve Ve Ve, Velt-kun, wha wha wha, what happened to you?” (Chett)

“Well, uh, all sorts of stuff, I guess.” (Velt)

“Prince Farga is fine, and since I met Ura-san once before, that’s fine, okay? But you know, why is that famous monster master Cleran and a demi-human from the special battle force Shinsengumi that’s talked about in the empire, and even the legendary machine dragon with you?” (Chett)

“Well~, thinking about it just seems idiotic so let’s just stop. Rather than that, let’s change the topic.” (Velt)

What happened? Well, it’ll take a long time if I explain it, and rather than

what happened, my question is why did it turn out like this.

Rather than that, the question I should be asking is what's happening right now.

"Hey, Chett. What do you mean Love and Money made a deal with the Maakai demon kingdom? Aren't they human?" (Velt)

I didn't think I would hear the name Love and Money like this again. To be honest, after hearing Miyamoto's story, I didn't feel like getting involved with Kagami.

However, from the looks of it, it doesn't seem to be a situation where I can just ignore him.

"That is..... the truth is, I really don't know. Just, according to a urgent report, the boss of[Love and Money],[Mackey Mouse Desneyland]assaulted and destroyed the empire's port town together with the prince of the Cyclops race." (Chett)

No no no no no no no, wait a minute.

"Wait wait wait wait, what's up with that joke of a name?" (Velt)
"Eh, name?" (Chett)

"Love and Money's boss' name! What's up with that joke of a name!" (Velt)

"Ah, ahh, right, you wouldn't know. Love and Money is an auction organization based in Shiromu that does all sorts of suspicious things behind doors, so they were even marked by the empire." (Chett)

"No, rather than that, the problem is Mackey Mouse Desneyland. Which land of dreams does he come from?" (Velt)

"Ah, yeah, that's the name of Love and Money's boss who's wrapped in mystery." (Chett)

"No, I'll tell you this, but that name is 100% a fake name. You guys are probably being mocked." (Velt)

"Eh, how would you be able to tell!" (Chett)

Rather than being able to tell, I just know it. It's that thing, right? How nostalgic.

Mackey Mouse and Desneyland is that thing in Chiba right? Although it is another world, it's a name that I can't brush off as a coincidence. However, with just this, I read my opponent's mind.

“He probably doesn’t have any reason. That Mackey-san is probably just screwing around.” (Velt)

“Screwing around..... what are you saying, Velt-kun! I can’t think anyone would bring demons and attack the empire to screw around!” (Chett)

“Normally, you would be right. But this probably isn’t normal.” (Velt)

It’s not like I was particularly close with[that man].

However, I still remember that he was a talkative playboy.

Samejima said that man was thoughtful of his friends, but it’s already strange whether that was true or not.

At the very least, I’m pretty sure that man lived in this world with a joke as a name, doing auctions and terrorism as a hobby.

“Miyamoto said that man changed, but..... hasn’t he changed weirdly?” (Velt)

But like, can you really think of auctioning and terrorism as a hobby after a while?

What kind of life do you have to walk to reach that kind of area?

I don’t know.

However, I immediately found out that Kagami is messing up this world as a hobby.

That’s because.....

“Velt! Take a look at that!” (Ura)

“Loord! Look up!” (Musashi)

Up? What is it all of a sudden? Rather, what’s above us who are flying through the sky.....

“Eh, ha?” (Velt)

As I thought that, even though it’s still about noon, I felt like the world became dim for a moment.

Rather than being dark, I guess it’s like the sun’s light became weaker.

What’s going on? As I thought that and looked up, a change occurred in the sun that should’ve been radiating brightly.

“Shit. What’s going on.” (Farga)

“Ehh? The sun, it looks like a mirror?” (Cleran)

It looked like the sun’s surface turned into glass.
Even though I normally wouldn’t be able to look at it directly with my naked eye, just for this moment, I could clearly see the sun’s shape.
What exactly is this? As I thought that, from the sun that turned into a mirror, no, from all over the world, cheerful music was being played.

———Chanchaaachan♪ Chanchaaachan♪ Chanchaaachan♪

Cymbals, drums, trumpets and the like were being played together like a drum and fife band doing a musical performance.....

[The ruler, of our, world~, is Mackey-san, Mackey-san, Mackey Mackey Mouse♪]

I hear a song that’s completely looking down on people.
And then, a figure showed on the sun that became glass-sided.
That figure was.....

“Wha, what is that!” (Ura_
“Cu, cute..... gohon, what an outrageous appearance!” (Musashi)
“He looks like he’s fucking looking down on us.” (Farga)
“That’s a..... costume?” (Cleran)
“That’s the legendary magic item! The[Circle Mirror]that uses the moon or the sun as a medium to transmit reflections and sound!” (Chett)
“Why is that idiot using this legendary magic item like this.” (Velt)

A mysterious character wearing a mouse costume is singing and dancing.
As expected, this was bewildering.
However, before anything else, the first thing I thought was,

“Like, you’re just plagiarizing!” (Velt)

However, even so, the cheerful music didn’t stop going on.
Everyone in the world was probably making dumbfounded faces, but the whole song kept going on.
And then, a few minutes later. I thought the music finished, but the costume bastard suddenly spread both his hands and started introducing himself.

[Everyooone, nice to meet youuu! I’m from the land of dreams, a friend of

good children and the president of Love and Money, Mackey Mouse!](Mackey)

Frankly, everyone in the world probably thought, “.....Hah?”
However, there was still a lot more to be shocked about.

[Mackey, wait for meee.](Maney)
[Ah, you’re late you’re late, Maney. Now, introduce yourself!](Mackey)

Another person wearing a huge mouse costume came out.
This one is different to Mackey because it has a huge pink ribbon on its head.

[Hello~, I’m Love and Money’s vice president, Maney Mouse!](Maney)
Maney cutely holds the sides of her skirt hem and makes a greeting.
[Geez, Maney, you’re seriously cute~, like, it’s seriously awesome.](Mackey)
[You’re cool too, Mackey~, yeah, aweso~me.](Maney)
[Seriously, serious? Like, we’re the best! Yeah, this is seriously getting me going!](Mackey)

So..... so frivolous.....
[Rather than that~, Maney~, don’t we have an important announcement for everyone today?](Mackey)
[Ah, yup yup! You’re right~, today, we have something we want to tell all our friends across the world!](Maney)
[That’s right, the truth is, we!](Makey)
[We!](Maney)
[[Are going to destroy the Archline Empire!]](Mackey and Maney)

———Pafupafupafuu♪
“Damn..... those guys sure are awe, awesome!” (Velt)

Everything was just too unexpected that making tsukkomis seemed too idiotic.

Chapter 73: Humanity's resistance

Even if it looks really idiotic to me, this world would only be able to look at it fearfully.

Of course they would, after all, two people wearing strange costumes are informing them of the destruction of the world.

The guys in front of me right now are making tense expressions too.

However, from my point of view, Mackey and Maney just look like they're doing a manzai. (TL Note: Stand up comedy with a straight man (tsukkomi person) and funny man (boke).)

[Hey, by the way, Mackey. Why do we need to destroy the empire?](Maney)
[That's an awesome question, Maney. Like, I guess it's as expected of you? Maney, you're too cute.](Mackey)

[You can't~, smoochy smoochy is for later. Children are watching after all~.]
(Maney)

[Eh~, I see~, then I guess it seriously can't be helped. We're destroying the empire~, to get rid of wars from this world!](Mackey)

What is that idiot doing?

But what does he mean by getting rid of wars from this world?

No, by the time I started thinking about what it means, I might've already begun riding his pace.

[It's simp~le. After all~, war is like~, something that only countries with soldiers do, right~? So then, don't I just have to destroy the country with soldiers~?](Mackey)

[Mackey you genius! You're so mesmerising~, so attracting~!](Maney)

[I know right. Damn, aren't I like, seriously a genius? Revolutionary! Why didn't I think of this when I was in Japan?](Mackey)

Oi, do you actually think that while saying this? You idiot.

No, regardless of whether he actually thinks that or not, it probably doesn't matter at all to him.

I'm starting to understand that asshole a bit.

"Kuhahahahaha, he doesn't care as long as he has fun." (Velt)

That's right, he has no justice, great cause, hatred or revenge.

He probably feels like he's just having fun playing a game.

In a way, unlike us, he hasn't accepted that this world is real.

That's why he doesn't feel guilty no matter what he does.

"Wha, what is with that guy." (Ura)

"He is mad." (Musashi)

"Shit, this is disgusting." (Farga)

"I can't read his heart at all." (Cleran)

"Oi, who does that guy think he is!" (Doraemon)

"To a guy like him! To a guy like him, the peace of the world will! The hope will!

Why does he have the qualifications to destroy it!" (Chett)

That's right, it's impossible to understand for people like Ura and Musashi who seriously live in this world.

Even if they try to understand what the character Mackey Mouse is thinking, it's just impossible.

But although it's just slightly, I felt like I could understand the character Mackey Mouse.

"War, magic and fantasy..... are all probably just absurd to him. Especially for him, who lived easily in his past life too and was fairly a riajuu, probably thinks that burning his soul in a chuunibyou world like this is idiotic. So, he's going to try out destroying something in an amusing way. That seems about right." (Velt)

I don't know what kind of expression he's making under that costume, but at the very least, I don't think he has any deep reason or meaning behind destroying the world.

"Oi, Velt, what have you been on about since before? Do you know something about this man?" (Ura)

Do I know something about him? Frankly, I don't know much.

However, if I don't try to understand him that deeply and just think of him as a playboy, it's unexpectedly easy to understand what he's thinking.

[Hey, how long are you going to be screwing around? I'm going to go already, without doing such worthless things.](?)

At that moment, I heard a third person whose voice I hadn't heard before.

"Tha, that guy is!" (Ura)

When his figure appeared, Ura bent herself forward before anyone else. He's a young white-haired guy with a small build. He's pretty young. Maybe around thirteen? Twelve?

He has a pretty flashy outfit, with a mantle and armour that has a bright red, rose ornament.

There's an eyepatch on his androgynous face.

"The Maakai Demon Kingdom's sixth prince, [One-eyed Devil Child, Ragaia] !" (Ura)

Is he Ura's acquaintance? Well, it wouldn't be weird for them to know each other since they're both demons I guess.

"Do you know him?" (Velt)

"Yeah. He's a prince of the cyclops race. I met him quite a few times when I was younger. He's around three years younger than us." (Ura)

"Hm~m..... a brat huh. He even has a spoilt looking face." (Velt)

"..... That's right..... he's no different to before. He always had an expression that looked like he was looking down on the world as if it's worthless." (Ura)

I see..... an acquaintance huh..... no, it doesn't look like that's it. It's like she saw a friend she treated as a younger brother after so long and is looking at him with complicated feelings.

"Huh? Aren't cyclops like~, supposed to be one-eyed giants? He just looks like a normal demon, doesn't he?" (Velt)

"That's right. He is a cursed child that was born from a human slave and the cyclops king, one of the Seven Great Demon Kings. I remember that even his own race and family detested him." (Ura)

"Ah~, I see, so he's that type. It's fine, Ura. I don't want to listen anymore. Geez, people shouldn't be making kids if they can't bless him." (Velt)

He thinks the world is worthless, huh. If I asked about his lifetime, he could

probably write multiple volumes of tragedy stories, but I wasn't interested in it. No, I just didn't get any interest.

[Ohh~, you sure are impatient, prince Ragaia~. Oh right, we need to introduce you to everyone~, he's the prince of the Maakai Demon Kingdom, and the supreme commander of the Maakai Demon Kingdom army, that is currently in the front! His name is Ragaia-sama, so make sure to remember i~t.](Mackey)
[Pafupafupafupafu~♪](Maney)

Mackey and Maney joke around as if breaking the mood.
Then, even though he's just a brat, Ragaia glared at the two with sharp eyes.

[Don't get too cocky. The only reason I'm letting you two live is that there is worth in using you. If my mood is harmed, I will kill you two. Okay?](Ragaia)
[Wa~o, Mackey~, this is a pinch~, I'm scared~.](Maney)

I see. Mackey is..... using that brat, huh.

"Ragaia, how can this be. Velt, be careful. Ragaia was a detested existence in the demon world, but his innate talent has no limit. If he goes to the front lines, this battle will be quite intense." (Ura)

A genius boy even in the demon world. A dark hero that has an unfortunate past.

Well, he's basically fit to be a protagonist.

"Hmph, worthless. I'm not interested." (Velt)

"Velt!" (Ura)

"That brat has a slight misunderstanding. He isn't using Mackey. He's being played with by Mackey." (Velt)

"Played with? No, what are you say-....." (Ura)

"Anyway! It doesn't matter who the enemy is, whether it's Mackey or Raga-something, I'll send everyone that makes a move on Forna flying. Isn't that nice and simple." (Velt)

Then, if I'm lucky, I'll beat up that irritating Mackey, Kagami, and make him show his bare face.

I really didn't want to go at the start, but my chest is beating slightly faster. It's the shaking before a fight.

I want to hurry up and send that asshole flying. Sticking to those feelings, I just

concentrated my eyes, to look for the empire that I still can't see.
However, they won't wait for us to arrive there.
That's because the war has already started.

[Now, everyone! I climbed the mid-air spiral staircase in the empire's water fountain park that has beautiful flower gardens and greenery, and am here at the empire's hanging gardeeeen! This place is a great spot where I can see the whole empireee!](Mackey)
[If you come here~, with your girlfriend, your proposal will definitely succeed!]
(Maney)
[Well then, I guess I'll go take a look at this awesome town!](Mackey)

The empire town. In other words, the capital.
The wideness of it far surpasses the Elfarshia Kingdom.
The roads are completely maintained and have rectangular stones buried in without any gaps. As well as that, the structures, houses, shops and number of people are completely different.

However, since they already gained total control of the port town, which is the entrance of the empire, the blazes of war had reached the empire.

In the reflection shown on the sun, it shows a damaged and burning empire, that gives me flashbacks of the sight I saw at Shiromu.
And there, demons with bodies many times larger than humans and characteristic single eyes, are equipped with huge swords, axes, clubs and so on, swarming around the capital.

However, there is one difference to Shiromu.
That is.....

[Simultaneous magic cannon shooting!]
The fact that I can still see humanity's resistance, along with reverberating loud noises.

[Listen up! They have already advanced to two-tenths of the capital! Don't let them advance any further! For humanity, for the world, we will hold them back with the pride of us humanity's great allied forces on the line!]

[[[[[[[[[Uoooooooooooooooooooooooooooo!!!]]]]]]]]]]

The empire hasn't fallen yet.

Young soldiers in the same military uniform as Chett replied without even hesitating against those guys that are multiple times larger than them. Holding a great variety of weapons like staves, swords and bows at the ready, they walked along roofs, ran through back streets and occasionally used artillery to assault the cyclopes.

Among them, I could see faces I hadn't seen in a while.

Ahh, you guys..... even though it's been five years, even though we grew, I noticed in a single glance.

They're my old friends from the Elfarshia Kingdom.

[Listen you guys! Chett will definitely come back with reinforcements! Until then, we're going to fight by ourselves!](Shipp)

[I won't die. There's no way I could stand dying! I definitely will not die!](Gau)

Shipp Tonlow, the former tenth place. He's a commoner's son whose father is a carpenter.

Gau Skunbitt, the former ninth place. He's a commoner's son whose father is a castle guard.

"Uu~ Chett~, come back quickly~." (Pett)

Pett Asouk, the former eighth place. She's a high-class daughter of a Duke family.

"What are you scared of. Didn't we work hard to survive days like this and gain victory!" (Hawk)

"We have no choice..... but to do it....." (Hau)

Hawk Nana, the former sixth place. She's a war orphan that grew up in the church.

Hau Purunchett, the former fifth place. She's the daughter of a father who belongs to the chivalric order.

"That's right. For the world, for humanity, and for our princess!" (Sea)

"Yeah, we definitely can't lose!" (Sannu)

Sea Chiurom, the former fourth place. He's the grandson of the current king's advisor and the former minister.

Sannu Ekamai, the former third place. She's the daughter of the top company in

the capital.

Even though they were such damn brats when they were ten years old, they all became adults.

And.....

[Uoooooooooooo, Fire Flash Impact!](Barts)

That wasn't the hellfire of the war, but humanity's counterattack flames.

[Zuryaaaaa, we won't lose, you damn one-eyed demons! As long as we're here, we definitely won't let the capital fall!](Barts)

Cutting, pulverising, and destroying relentlessly.

Just by himself, a man is crushing the crowd of cyclopes one after the other.

He had the grown-up appearance of the hot-blooded, justice guy that I used to mock.

[Now! The third infantry unit will follow after Barts and charge! Magic and arrow unit, cover them! Go around the side street, and pincer attack them with the fourth unit!](Shalt)

And then, the pampered kid who I almost made cry in the past, showed quite a wild appearance as a general.

[Wooow! I can't do anything about this! Awesome, this is awesome! The young warrior combo of humanity's great allied forces! Barts of the roaring flames, and Shalt of the wind flash! They're the current candidates of champions! Humanity is really getting going!](Mackey)

Barts and Shalt.

The genius combo that is outstanding in the army, even among their same year. As their old friend, seeing their competent figures in the war not only made my chest beat fast, but it even became hot.

However, the thing that made my chest even hotter, is.....

[Wa~o, so cool! But they sure are poor things~. Most of their year are new soldiers that just graduated~. But aaall the stro~ng guys from the empire went to the Divine Being Continent, so they have to fight by themselves~! Good job!]
(Mackey)

[Hmph, even without elite forces, this level can't even be considered an enemy

to them. This is why pure cyclopes are just muscle heads that have power.]
(Ragaia)

[Oya oya, you sure are strict! You're awesomely strict, prince Ragaia~! This is a pinch, right?](Mackey)

[What, it's just the difference of troops. Besides, if they keep being annoying, then I will personally dispose of them.](Ragaia)

What made my chest even hotter, is the person near these guys that are calmly observing this fierce battle.....

[Ara, it seems we have been underestimated quite a lot.](Forna)

She appeared with an imposing air.

[Oya oya, who would've known~.](Mackey)

[Hee, to think you would come of your own accord. Isn't it careless for a general to come?](Ragaia)

A sharp expression, shining gold hair, pure white skin that can be seen from below her above knee skirt, and a slender body.
Multiple medals are decorated on the chest of her white military uniform, and her presence is prominent.

[Are you not the people who are careless for using the circle mirror in the centre?](Forna)

I saw photos of her in the newspaper, but it's been a while since I heard her voice.

[Could you please not underestimate humanity?](Forna)

One of the Ten Heroes of Light in humanity's great allied forces.
Forna Elfarshia.
She's become quite a good woman.

TL Note: This is what Mackey Mouse, Ragaia and Forna look like in the volume 4 character page. Interestingly his name in the light novel is Mackey Rabbit instead of mouse. <https://imgur.com/a/12xWJ>

Chapter 74: Lightning and darkness

The mid-air hanging garden that can look over the whole empire, seemed like a place that humanity can't reach anymore.

It's not just us. Humanity, no, the world should be observing this.
And then, I suddenly thought.

Although I don't know about war, I know that the side who kills the general in this world's battles are the ones that gain victory.

If Forna was defeated here, humanity would take a fatally big loss.

However, what if she defeated her enemy here?

It will be a great victory for humanity.

"Come out to the front, prince Ragaia. I will settle the conclusion right here and now." (Forna)

Forna takes a stance. The lightning covering her body crackles from time to time, making a noise.

However, Ragaia doesn't go along with Forna's invitation so easily.

"Fuh, a one to one fight? It must be the worthless pride of a soldier." (Ragaia)

In the next moment, Ragaia flicked his fingers.

Then, four huge 5-metre cyclopes with bare upper halves appeared in front of Forna.

"Ragaia! You are....." (Forna)

"This is the great one-eyed force unit. Now, I guess I will take a look at your skill, princess Forna." (Ragaia)

He's completely looking down on her. If I was there, I would have definitely slapped that brat's face.

However, even though her one to one fight was obstructed, Forna's expression wasn't bewildered.

Then,

"Zeaaaaaa!" (?)

In the next moment, together with a strong roar, a mighty strike crushed one of the cyclopes' bodies without leaving a trace.

"I cannot let you fight alone, princess. As your knight, I will crush all these scoundrels that have no knowledge." (?)

Ahh, I almost broke into a smile.

It's been quite a while since I saw him too.

When Forna went to the empire five years ago, he accompanied her as her servant and is currently a man that runs through battlefields with Forna as her adjutant.

"Galva, is there any problem with just myself alone?" (Forna)

"The problem is these things that are causing you trouble, princess." (Galva)

He is the Elfarshia Kingdom's guard leader, Galva. When I was young, he looked after me too.

"Hou, Giant Killing Galva, huh." (Ragaia)

"Prince Ragaia and Mackey Mouse. This is the end of your conspiracy. I will judge you under the name of justice!" (Galva)

As always, that guy is with Forna anywhere she goes.

"Now, princess! I will take on these ones! Princess, you go for prince Ragaia! Please take the enemy general's head!" (Galva)

"Yes, I will!" (Forna)

I glanced at Farga who isn't showing an expression, but I can tell he's in a slightly good mood.

Even though it's through a reflection, if you haven't met them for five years, it really does feel moving.

It's a world without TVs or phones after all.

"Damn this is so awesome! What are you going to do, prince Ragaia, this is a pinch! Awesome!" (Mackey Mouse)

"I'm scared~, let's run away!" (Maney Mouse)

However, these guys completely ruined my immersion of those feelings. Mackey Mouse and Maney Mouse. Rather, shouldn't I just call him Kagami? However, Ragaia's response to that was cold.

“Run away if you don’t want to be here. After coming this far, I alone should be enough.” (Ragaia)

Waaao, that’s some amazing confidence. Although she’s smiling, that statement probably hit Forna’s pride, as she looks a bit irritated.

“In that case, do you want to try it out, prince Ragaia?” (Forna)

“Hmph. Well then, I will teach you that the three titles that have existed since far before in the past, the Seven Great Demon King, Four Heavenly Beast Demi-humans and Ten Heroes of Light, are already ancient relics.” (Ragaia)

That brat, he probably just picked a fight with all the champions in the world right now.

“Fufufufu, you sure are saying something strange, boy. It seems I have to make you understand that the title of the Ten Heroes of Light is not a relic, and is an inherited will!” (Forna)

At that moment, I saw a huge lightning strike ahead of us, who are flying. It’s from the direction of the Archline empire, that we still can’t see yet. No way. As I think that and look towards the reflection, I see Forna’s body radiating in a golden light.

“O maiden of the god of thunder, change the tears you clad to power, infinite thunder, shine the world! Magic Armament, *Jinrai Retsuha!*” (Forna) (TL Note: Thunderclap Extreme Championship. /shrug)

That’s nostalgic. Her magic I’m seeing after five years is more polished than the past, and the divineness has increased.

That magic doesn’t release lightning energy, but it clads her body in it. It’s the height of magic techniques that the number of users among humanity can be counted.

“Fufu..... interesting!” (Ragaia)

Ragaia moves as well. A sinister aura starts overflowing out of his whole body, and he holds his hand against his eyepatch.

“I’ll show you the forbidden second eye of the one-eyed race! Demon eye awakening!” (Ragaia)

His aura is probably something magical that's normally shut in by his eyepatch.

"This is a second eye that is not possible to have for the cyclops race. Do you want to try touching that dark taboo?" (Ragaia)

By cladding the overflowing energy on his body after taking off his eyepatch, darkness with an endless abyss covered Ragaia, like the reverse of Forna's light.

"..... What a deep, sinister darkness. How sad....." (Forna)

"Now, let us begin, Golden Comet Forna!" (Ragaia)

Darkness and light. The differing powers both clash, engulfing each other.

"Thunder fist!" (Forna)

"Darkness Impact!" (Ragaia)

That was truly a fight of gods. A decisive battle of the peak.
Lightning and darkness are scattering in the sky far away.

"Fufu, that is some impressive energy. Interesting, it seems like I can fight with all my strength for once." (Ragaia)

Ragaia jumps up to the sky. On his fist, a black vortex is whirling around. That vortex gradually gained more power and he fired it towards Forna when it became a huge vortex.

"Dark maelstrom!" (Ragaia)

Everything gets swallowed up in that darkness.
I don't know what would happen if you got dragged into it.
However, without any change in her expression, Forna jumped into the vortex by her own accord instead.

"Who do you think I might be! Something like an abyss of darkness cannot match my light that illuminates the world!" (Forna)

"Fuh, don't underestimate it! It is a space of darkness that swallows up everything. Are you able to endure that?" (Ragaia)

"That is what I said was naive! I cannot endure it you say? Compared to the pain of not being able to meet the people you love, any hell in this world would be easier to endure!" (Forna)

Dazzling.

Either Forna's light in the reflection made me think that, or the world actually lit up.

However, the swelling light that stole my eyes from Forna, rushed into the abyss of darkness and smashed it into pieces.

"What incredible energy! In that case, o black clothing that wraps the world, cover this world's fate!" (Ragaia)

Ragaia's eyes opened widely as his vortex of darkness was broken, but he immediately activated a defence magic.

"Heaven lightning god!" (Forna)

"Deep black curtain!" (Ragaia)

Light and darkness clash against each other again. However, Forna was the one that controlled this clashing.

"Ah!" (Ragaia)

Without being able to endure that power, Ragaia was sent flying, crashing into the ground as his curtain of darkness broke.

"Hahhahhahha! As expected of you, princess! It seems I must not be careless either! Now, come at me, you brutal one eyes!" (Galva)

"Guraaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaa!" (Cyclops?)

"Seiyaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaa!" (Galva)

Isn't this pretty good? We haven't arrived yet, but it's progressed enough to think that.

Forna is strong. Galva hasn't lost either.

Barts, Shalt and the rest of those reliable, grown-up guys won't let humanity end.

Chett, who had a hopeless expression at the start, is calmed down now.

If they just keep going, won't it be fine?

No, I guess it's not that sweet.....

"I see, it seems that the power of the Ten Heroes of Light is real. I take back my words from before." (Ragaia)

"Ara, you sure are durable. However, there is no need to worry, since it has

been decided that you will not take back your words from before, but instead regret them.” (Forna)

“Fuh, you are quite the harsh princess. With that personality, finding a marriage partner would be difficult.” (Ragaia)

“Don’t worry, my fiance had been decided since ten years ago.” (Forna)

..... She’s not talking about me, right? How long is she going to keep up that joke? She’s already fifteen, isn’t she?

In this world, fifteen is an age where it wouldn’t be weird to have married, so I want to retort and tell her not to keep pulling on that joke.

However, it doesn’t look like she has the room to be joking.

“Then that is unfortunate.” (Ragaia)

“Ara, what is.....!” (Forna)

At that moment, a blade of darkness was fired from Ragaia’s finger at high speed, brushing against Forna’s cheek.

Blood seeps out of her cut cheek. In turn, she glared at her opponent even more intensely.

“Unfortunately, you can’t achieve your desires with your marriage partner. After all, you are going to die here.” (Ragaia)

“What is this..... the darkness is even denser..... for me to get, goosebumps? It seems you are showing your real ability now.” (Forna)

Ragaia’s atmosphere changed too.

I guess this means he finished checking her skill?

Rather, for that to be just checking each other’s skill, how monstrous are those two.....

“Princess! Kuh, I will head there right..... uoh!” (Galva)

“Won’t let interrupt prince. Human die!” (Cyclops)

“Fuh, you’re going to protect your lord huh. Even if your intellect is lacking, your spirit is the same as me! Therefore, I will not yield!” (Galva)

“Die you!” (Cyclops)

As expected, it’s tough to fight them alone, huh. Galva is surrounded by three cyclopes, so he doesn’t seem to be able to backup Forna well.

However, that’s not the only thing I’m worried about.

The most ominous man in this battlefield hasn't started moving after all.

Chapter 75: Raising and dropping

The enemies are gigantic and large in number. The outcome of challenging them with simple hand to hand combat is plain as day.

No matter how many great, powerful people there are, the quality of the armies is different.

Against the brutal and strong demon army corps, most of the new soldiers in humanity's side are fighting in their first battle right now, in this defensive battle.

However, I wonder why?

Those guys are scared to die, but they aren't just staying frightened.

Every single one of them are showing expressions that say they're going to do it.

"Now, soldiers of the prideful humanity's great allied forces, goooooo! Most of you are new soldiers, but that doesn't have any connection with the outcome of this battle! That's because, from the moment you became soldiers, you became the treasure of humanity! Deadly swords for your country! And, my comrades who I hold absolute trust in!" (?)

""""Oooooooooooooooooooh!!"""" (Soldiers)

"Crush the only eyes these cyclopes that shamelessly appeared have, and carve your thoroughly tempered fangs of humanity into them!" (?)

""""Oooooooooooooooooooh!!"""" (Soldiers)

There's a man that looks like a general. He has bright red swept black hair, wild eyes, and a countless number of scars on his face, giving the impression of a veteran.

"Ku~, general Sokushi sure is getting fired up~."

"Yeah. The fact that he stayed in the capital was a blessing in disguise."

"Uoooo, the princess is fighting! We can't just stay scared!"

"It is my ambition to devote my body to humanity!"

"Both of you, you're going too forwards! This is a defensive battle! If we just

hold on until reinforcements come, it's our win!"

"I'll smash those big ass things with cannons!"

The never-ending yells of humans and sounds of bombardment. Among them, there are even guys that sprung at the cyclopes without being afraid of the difference in physique.

"I knew it! Although these guys have amazing power, their movements are dull! We can do this!"

"Alright, Barts killed the commander of a group! All that's left is the small fry that lost their commander! Mow them down!"

"Okay, seventh unit, depart!"

"Eighth unit, depart!"

Against the cyclopes that show the threat of their destructive power by relentlessly breaking buildings, humanity splendidly responded with a coordinated attack with their numbers and power.

New soldiers? That doesn't matter. Those guys were thoroughly tempered through a long time of training.

"Earth magician unit! Take away their footing!"

"Ice magician unit! Seal their movements!"

"Wind magician unit! Take away their vision!"

"Flame magician unit! Exterminate them!"

The paved ground splits, extremely cold icicles impale the cyclopes' limbs, tornadoes cover the enemies' vision, and finally, a huge lump of flames drop onto them.

"We shot theeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeem!"

"Alright, take that you damn monsters!"

"Don't underestimate humans!"

They're strong. If there's anyone that thinks soldiers are just a waste of tax, they should look at this.

Small people are defeating large enemies. It's so classic and makes you feel refreshed.

"Agigigigigigi." (Cyclops)

"Huh? My body, no move?" (Cyclops)

“Huuuuuurts.” (Cyclops)

The cyclops race’s huge bodies and power are certainly incredible.

However, the intelligence they possess isn’t that high.

Of course, there are humanoid halves like Ragaia among them and higher kinds that have outstanding intellect.

Otherwise, making a country wouldn’t have been possible.

However, most of the cyclopes attacking the capital right now, are ordinary soldiers.

As long as they don’t get caught by the enemy, although they’re new soldiers, those guys can handle them fine, since they are trained soldiers after all.

——— They can do it!

All of humanity watching this probably thought this strongly.

However, at that moment, an ominous voice resounded throughout the world.

“Myyy, how strong, yeah~, awesome. Well~, I guess it’s fine, right?” (Mackey)

It’s from Mackey Mouse, who’s relaxing on an elevated place like a spectator. I don’t know what his bare face looks like since he’s wearing a costume, but at the very least, he doesn’t look surprised.

On the contrary, he keeps talking in a way that sounds like he has a faint smile.

“They haven’t passed through the carnage, but they’ve gone through training and have high morale. In this kind of situation, defeating the head is probably the easiest, but their general is awesome too. She’s on par to prince Ragaia~.” (Mackey)

“Eh~, what should we do, Mackey. At this rate, the cyclopes are just going to be pitiful~.” (Maney)

“Kufufufu, no problem, Maney-chua~n. I told you, didn’t I? There’s a difference in the quality of the armies.” (Mackey)

What is it? What’s he talking about?

At that moment, Ura, the only one among us that have experienced war, noticed something.

“Hmm? Wai-, wait a minute!” (Ura)

“Ah? What’s up, Ura.” (Velt)

“Well, er, although humanity’s great allied forces are continuing a steady

advance, they are protruding in front too much!” (Ura)

Protruding in front too much? I look up at the reflection while thinking that, and it certainly seemed like it.

“Alright! I can’t lose to you guys either!”

“Yeah, let’s have a race to see who defeats the most!”

“Sounds good~, then let’s bet our dessert on it!”

After she said that, I realized it too.

In the first place, this battle is a defensive battle.

They just need to continue protecting the capital and wait for reinforcements to come.

However, looking at the soldiers on the reflection, their thought of ‘protecting’ changed to ‘defeating’.

The commander immediately realized this too. Seeing this situation, Shalt was shocked.

“Wha-, the battle formation is crumbling! What are you doing, everyone! You’re going out too far! Quickly return to your positions and commit to defence!” (Shalt)

However, Shalt’s voice didn’t reach them. Their positiveness from the enthusiasm and their thoughts that said, “even I can do this,” made them come out too forwards.

What if this was a trap that the enemy made?

“Nu-, wait a minute! Which unit just jumped out right now!” (Sokushi)

The general called Sokushi at the back of the capital realized this abnormality slower than Shalt, who’s in the front line.

“The, the tenth, eleventh and even the archer unit on the walls went out!”

“What was that! Who gave those instructions! Call them back immediately!”

“Those guys are probably moving on their own! Oi, everyone, return quickly! If everyone goes out like that———”

And by that time, the enemy’s arrows had already reached.

“Gyaaaaaaaaaaa!”

“Gepua!”

“Gah!”

At that time, the screams of humans could be heard in the capital. The thing is, their voices and figures were all reflected from the beginning to end.

“Kukuku, what stupid humans.” (High Cyclops)

“They thought they could win a war with just momentum.” (High Cyclops)

The cyclopes there were different to the huge cyclopes swarming the capital. Their bodies aren't that different to humans. They're even wearing armour and helmets, unlike the huge ones that have bare upper bodies.

Single eyes you can see from under the helmet, fearless smiles and hoisted swords that are dyed with red from sucking up the blood of the human corpses in front of them.

“Wha, you are, hi, high cyclopes! How did you come this far!”

Several hundred soldiers of the High Cyclops race surrounded the headquarters where the general was taking command. They're human-sized, armed and have outstanding intellect.

“Bastards, when did you!” (Sokushi)

Sokushi, who's full of anger, sends bloodlust to them, but the High Cyclopes stayed calm.

“Kukuku, every single one of them are getting motivated to do stuff~, but the defences in their headquarters is virtually empty.” (High Cyclops)

“Hah, what are you doing trying to attack, when you're supposed to be defending. What foolish humans.” (High Cyclops)

It's something that even I knew.

War is about killing the general.

“Don't underestimate me, you damn one-eyes! My strong sword that I used to rampage around the Divine Being Continent with, will not be destroyed by schemes from bastards of your level-!” (Sokushi)

“Hahahahaha, who cares, you elderly small fry clinging to his glory in the

past!” (High Cyclops)

Against general Sokushi that slashes at them, one High Cyclops comes to the front. In his hand, he’s holding a huge, thorned metal rod that doesn’t suit his physique.

Underneath his armour, I can see bright red skin.

However, in the next moment, not only his skin, even that High Cyclops’ armour becomes dyed in red.

“Shaaaaaaaaa!”

A water fountain of blood spouts up high.

Only a human’s lower half remained there.

“Kukuku, however, you had a pretty good spirit, old geezer. Let your meat become bird feed, and act as nourishment to the world.” (High Cyclops)

Human flesh drops down.

That’s the man that was inspiring humanity and the young soldiers just before.

“Ge, general Sokushi!”

“Uooooo, you bastards!”

His close aids that were next to the general jumped at them with anger, but all of them were cut, crushed, and died.

Among them, the red High Cyclops that killed the general raised his fist and made a declaration.

“General Sokushi of humanity’s great allied forces has been defeated by the vice chief of the one-eyed demon group, Redrock!” (Redrock)

The reflection being shown on the sun doesn’t just give the world hope. It also shows despair at the same time.

“Wha-, really! Our headquarters was destroyed!?”

“The general! Was the general defeated? No, no way!”

“Tha, that asshole monster! Damn it, what are we going to do without a general!”

“What happened to princess Forna?”

“Princess Forna is in a one-to-one fight against Ragaia! Wait a minute, what are we supposed to do without a commander!”

The death of the general flowed throughout the whole of the capital. The young soldiers that were originally jumping out in high spirits were in intense agitation and confusion. The enemy didn't let go of that situation.

"Now, the enemy soldiers are just soldiers that lost command! My prideful cyclops brethren! Trample the foolish humans!" (Redrock)

""""""Buooooooooooooooooooooo!!!!""""""

At that moment, completely different to a few minutes ago, all the brave war cries the humans raised disappeared entirely, and instead, the screams of people whose fighting spirit was broken, resounded throughout the world.

"Damn it, re, reorganize order! Quickly gather the remaining unitgyabuhehua."

"Co, commander! In a back street like this! Damn it, how dare you do that to commanubeau."

From then on, it was just hell. Cyclopes found confused soldiers one after the other, trampled them, smashed them, and then,

"Sto, stop it! Le, let me go! Let me go! Noo, nooooo, I don't want to diepeku."

The humans they caught were simply torn in pieces. In Asakura Ryuuma's age, mosaics or restrictions would be on that gruesome sight, but unfortunately, everything was live broadcasted and had no such thing.

"Ahhyahyaha! Man~, the Maakai Demon Kingdom seriously awesome~! The moment humanity thought they had hope, they broke it from the roots.

Maney~, do you know what they call this?" (Mackey)

"U~nn, Maney~ doesn't know~." (Maney)

"The answer is~, raising and dropping." (Mackey)

That was the moment a merciless war started.

TL Note: Just going to note that Sokushi (the general's name) means instant death.

Chapter 76: Cruel reality

This is what war is. This is what risking your life is.
You get injured, your comrades get injured and you have to have the resolve to lose everything.

I don't want to hear that kind of scolding that adults give when putting on airs.
But I didn't think I would finally understand the meaning of those words now.

After all, your heart wouldn't last if you didn't convince yourself that you have that resolve.

"That, asshole....." (Velt)

We fell silent on top of Dora's back.
It's because we couldn't handle the sight you see often in wars.
Especially this time.

"Guh, u, au, ah." (?)

On the reflection, there's a new soldier that's already at death's door.
His body is being crushed by a huge cyclops, all his bones are breaking, and the blood that lost its place to go is spouting out.
He's one of my old friends!

"It hurts, save, me, Shipp....." (?)

His name is Gau!
He's a commoner whose father works as a castle guard, but because he had the ninth highest grades in the magic school, he went to the empire with the others.
Right now, in a state without any power in his body like a broken doll, he's being crushed by a monster.

"Ga, Gau..... Gau!"

"You, you asshole! You one-eyed asshole! Let go of Gau! I'll kill you!"

His comrades couldn't hide their anger after seeing his tragic figure.

“Guhe. Don’t wanna.” (Cyclops)

Then, in the next moment, the cyclops grasping Gau put even more power into his arms, crushing Gau completely.

“You, you asshooooooooooooooooooooole!”

“Gau, Gau! Gauuuuuu!”

“Noooooooooooooooooooo!”

I felt nauseous and a welling of anger inside me at the same time. I want to kill that stupid looking, low intelligence Cyclops that might not even know what he just did, and is looking around everywhere. That feeling was stronger for those guys that saw it happen live.

“Damn it, damn it, damn it! I’ll kill youuuuuu!” (Shipp)

Gau’s best friend and my old friend, Shipp. He, who advanced to the empire with the tenth highest grades, had been Gau’s best friend since they were kids. Holding two short swords with an underhanded grip, he jumped out while shedding tears.

“Wait, Shipp! Don’t thoughtlessly jump..... damn it, it’s impossible! I’ll go cover him! Sannu, you go call for Barts as fast as you can!” (Sea)

“But, but..... Gau was, Gau was-” (Sannu)

“Quick, go! Shipp and I will handle this place!” (Sea)

“O, oka-.....! Sea! Watch out, above you!” (Sannu)

“Eh?” (Sea)

The one that jumped out to cover Shipp who jumped out, is Sea, the grandchild of the Elfarshia Kingdom’s advisor in an honourable, ancient lineage, who advanced to the empire with the fourth highest grades.

And the one who couldn’t stand up from the sight of Gau being killed and is leaning against a building wall while crying is a high-class daughter of the Elfarshia Kingdom’s top company, Sannu.

These guys have been my acquaintances since we were kids too.

However, the moment Sannu shouted that, a huge shadow covered the area Sea was in, and then.....

“Buhyaaaaaaaaaaaaa!” (Cyclops)

“!” (Sea)

I heard the sound of him being crushed.

A huge cyclops jumped and crushed Sea underfoot.

“Sea..... noooooo! Ah, ahhhh!” (Sannu)

One of her comrades that had been with her only a few seconds ago, was crushed in front of her eyes and became something bloody that no longer has the shape of a human.

From the tragic event, Sannu’s mind surpassed its limit, and she fainted.

“Gehe, gehehehehehehehehehehe, me strong.” (Cyclops)

“Strong strong, stroooong.” (Cyclops)

I wonder what’s happening in the Elfarshia Kingdom right now.

Being shown all over the world means that this sight is obviously playing in the Elfarshia Kingdom too.

Gau and Sea, who just died tragically, had important family and many friends. Are they angry? Sad? Hopeless? Or are they in a daze?

I don’t know.

However, what welled up inside of me, was anger.

“What the hell have you assholes done.” (?)

I heard the words I would’ve said.

The person that said that, was Barts, who appeared under the tragic corpse of the general.

“Hii-, ge, general Sokushi is!”

“No, no way, that, that general that was called the battle-tried, strong general!”

Barts brought a small force of around ten soldiers with him.

All of them are young, new soldiers, that shrivelled from the innumerable corpses scattered about the headquarters.

However, only Barts was different.

Redrock, the one that killed general Sokushi, smiled after seeing the sharp, bloodthirst-filled glint in Barts’ eyes.

“Hou, you’re young. You were one step late, child soldier.” (Redrock)

“You were the one that..... asshole! I’ll kill you!” (Barts)

Barts jumps out alone. However, that wasn't brave, but just reckless.

"Sto, stop it, commander Barts! Those guys are in a different league!"

However, shaking off his subordinates and comrades' restraint, Barts jumped out without being able to control himself.

"Zuryaaaa, sei, rah, ta!" (Barts) (TL Note: Noises he's making while attacking.)

"Hmm, inexperienced. However..... hou." (Redrock)

Barts swings his sharp sword down. Redrock receives it with his huge, metal rod.

After that, Barts unleashed consecutive slashes over and over again, but Redrock received every single one.

However, just from that exchange of crossing weapons, Redrock raised a slightly impressed voice.

"Hohou, you hit quite well, youngster. And this ability, I can see your passion in it." (Redrock)

"Shut up!" (Barts)

Redrock takes half steps to avoid Barts' sword while brandishing his metal rod at Barts right after an attack.

However, Barts forcefully twisted his collapsing posture, avoiding Redrock's strike.

"Ooh, you avoided that one too, huh. Haha, you're pretty good, youngster." (Redrock)

"Kuh, you asshole!" (Barts)

"Fumu." (Redrock)

After a moment of offence and defence, Redrock honestly praised Barts, as if evaluating him.

"You have talent, youngster. You at least[have]much more than that old general who relied on his past glory." (Redrock)

"What's that!? Are you trying to show your composure!" (Barts)

"No, I'm saying that I'm enjoying myself as a warrior. It seems there really are young warriors that have talent like Ragaia-sama, even among humans."

(Redrock)

He's probably not lying and is just honestly praising Bart's ability. However, the fact that he's saying that kind of thing has another meaning. It means that he's looking forward to Barts' future prospects, but he's not a threat as of now.

And then,

"Fufu, that's why it's unfortunate. Sorry, but I have to pluck the people that will be a threat to Ragaia-sama in the future." (Redrock)

"!" (Barts)

The look on his only eye changed.

He's holding the metal rod in his hand strong enough to make a creaking sound. At that moment, the strike that Redrock hadn't even released yet, passed through my head like foresight.

"Cra, crap! Guh, magic sword! Flame Saber!" (Barts)

A powerful sword covered in flames. However,

"Demolition Rod!" (Redrock)

He simply struck his metal rod downwards. However, that simple strike broke Barts' flame clad sword into small pieces.

Getting dragged into that power, Barts was sent flying far to the back, piercing through multiple building walls.

"Gah, hah, aga....." (Barts)

Barts hasn't died. However, with just one strike, his whole body was hit with unbelievable power and it was clear that he wasn't able to get up anymore. An immense amount of blood is flowing from his head and limbs, and his eyes looked like they could close anytime soon.

"No, no way, co, commander....."

"Ba, Barts was, that Barts was"

The new soldiers stood stock still in front of this hopeless sight that they don't want to believe.

Among them, some weren't able to stand up anymore, and some involuntarily urinated while standing.

Their fighting spirit had already been broken into little pieces.

“Kukuku, fuhahahahahaha! Now, what’s wrong, you damn humans! To think you would discharge waste from this amount of despair! If your heart breaks at something of this level, you cannot possibly reach Ragaia-sama’s level, who passed through a hellish world! Of course, you cannot rival me either!”
(Redrock)

This situation instantaneously spread out through the capital.
The soldiers fighting there right now, are looking at the sky, trembling from seeing Bart’s defeat.

“In the end, you damn monkeys playing soldiers won’t understand! The discrimination, scorn, humiliation and despair that Ragaia-sama tasted until now, because he had the blood of a human slave! However, that person surpassed everything, and gained our tribe’s trust with his own power! We are the elite force that was chosen by that person! Ten Heroes of Light? Worthless! That kind of faint light will be dyed in darkness by our hands!” (Redrock)

To make sure everyone knows the general died in action and Barts was defeated, Redrock shouts to the empire and to the world.
That shout even reached Forna, who’s fighting at the sky garden.

“Your army is already collapsing. What will you do, princess Forna?” (Ragaia)
“.....” (Forna)

“You came to defeat the general? Fuh, as long as you and Galva, the only ones that could lead the soldiers, remain here, your defeat is certain.” (Ragaia)

Forna, who’s fighting in the hanging garden, obviously heard the disastrous scene in the capital.

However, Forna didn’t show anger or sorrow. Instead, blood oozed out of her lips she’s biting on, and her palms she’s grasping tightly.

“You are right. However, what are you trying to say about that!” (Forna)
“Hou.” (Ragaia)

“Feeling sadness is something that the citizens who have no power can do. However, we are the only ones that can defeat you right now. Then, what we have to do is obvious!” (Forna)

Even so, Forna fought.
Unlike the new soldiers, she must have repeated the same thing since much

before.

Not being able to cry when she wants to, and even if she did gain victory, the people she lost won't come back.

Even so, for the sake of the great cause or whatever that she holds in her chest, she bravely fought.

“In that case, if I deal with you, then that will be the real end of the capital.”
(Ragaia)

“To not let their deaths be in vain, I will defeat you here!” (Forna)

“Just try it! Here I come, Dark Brid!” (Ragaia) (TL Note: Author probably misspelled something)

“Barrier deployment! Lightning levee!” (Forna)

The match is taking alternately favourable and unfavourable turns and neither of them is taking a step back. That damn brat really is strong.

“Ura, how do you see it?” (Velt)

“All I can say is that it's likely to grow worse. Ragaia has mastered all the dark abyss magic at that age.” (Ura)

He has enough battle ability to impress a demon king's daughter and is showing his ability that isn't outdone by the three great titles of the world. He's roughly even with Forna. You can definitely say that the outcome of this match between generals controls the fate of this war.

However, I shouldn't forget the one heretic in this war.

“Like, isn't it fine already? Can't you give up already?” (Mackey Mouse)

That person is Mackey Mouse, who had been spectating this whole time from an elevated place.

Chapter 77: The baddest guy

That guy is shallow and lighthearted.

So, there probably isn't any deep meaning behind his actions.

Whether those actions are starting wars or killing, or even creating tragedies. Well, it's not like I know him enough to say that for sure, but I can at least say this.

I want to punch him right now.

"Man~, you guys are amazing. Everyone's working hard, the generals are full of passion, and it's seriously awesome. It rea~lly is. But, I'm tired of this now."
(Mackey)

Mackey Mouse muttered that uninterestedly while sprawling in the sky garden and spectating.

That looked like he was laughing scornfully at this war.

It was as if he watched a war movie and said it was boring.

And what spectators that get bored of stories do, is truly simple.

"Fang of the raiju!" (Forna)

"Dark Gatling!" (Ragaia)

While the offence and defence of light and darkness still continue, Mackey Mouse, who stretched a little after getting up, pointed his hand to Forna's direction.

"Non-attribute magic, High Gravity Field." (Mackey Mouse)

That's a magic sphere that has an unsteady distortion.

"Wha-, eh-, ahhh!" (Forna)

The moment that distortion couldn't maintain its spherical shape anymore, it burst open, springing forth a physical law there without affecting Mackey, Maney and Ragaia.

"Thi, this is gravity magic!" (Forna)

As if she was suddenly crushed by a huge mass, Forna fell down to the ground on her face.

Her expression showed anger.

“Yup, no matter how fast you move, I just have to make you heavy, so it’s awesome, right?” (Mackey)

“Kuh, you, getting involved with a one to one battle is a disgrace to all warriors! Learn some shame!” (Forna)

“Ahahahaha, but I’m not a warrior, I’m everyone’s idol, Mackey-san~.” (Mackey)

This is war. Everyone knows that being underhanded doesn’t mean shit. However, everyone surely thought this. That they don’t want to be told that by this guy of all people.

“Mackey, what are you planning?” (Ragaia)

“What’s wrong, prince?” (Mackey)

That was unpleasant for Ragaia too, who had formed an alliance with him.

“Why did you disturb us?” (Ragaia)

“Oyaoya, didn’t you say the dignity of a soldier was ridiculous? It’s fine, this is war. There’s no such thing as being underhanded or petty. Wait, that was pretty cool, right? I said something pretty good right now, didn’t I?” (Mackey)

“You fiend.” (Ragaia)

“That’s funny coming from you. Even though you killed so many people from going to war.” (Mackey)

Ragaia understands this is a war too. Therefore, he isn’t saying any more. However, probably because he doesn’t agree with it, his expression isn’t clear at all.

But for Mackey Mouse, that doesn’t matter.

Mackey Mouse laughs at Forna, who’s lying on her face without being able to get up because of the ultra gravity.

“Hm~m, I can tell from looking at your eyes. People like you are the type whose hearts don’t break no matter how much they get hurt. How nice~, it’s like, an apostle of justice is here! How~ev~er~, Mackey-san won’t withdraw because of that~. Rather, isn’t it the best to defeat a girl that doesn’t break no

matter what?" (Mackey)

After looking down on Forna, Mackey Mouse smiles as if he thought of something, and reached his hand out to her head.

"Wha, what are you, f, filthy! I do not allow you to touch me!" (Forna)
"Don't worry about it. Forcefully raping people isn't my hobby. I just want to read your memories. Mackey Mouse that came from the land of dreams, makes people smile from the bottom of their hearts, and occasionally frightens people with attractions of fear. So, I want to know what the scariest thing for you is."
(Mackey)

"I cannot understand what you are saying." (Forna)

"What, it's simple. Who's the person that you don't want to lose the most in this world?" (Mackey)

To that question, Forna froze for a moment.
However, she immediately became resolute again and laughed at him.

"I love my father, mother, older brother, Galva, Shalt and the others, all the citizens of the Elfarshia Kingdom, furthermore, my trustworthy comrades in arms I made after leaving my country and the people that supported me in this empire! What will you do by knowing that?" (Forna)

Forna took a strong attitude and answered by saying she loves everyone.
However,

"Hm~m, so he's called Velt-kun, huh~, he sure has a cheeky looking face."
(Mackey)

"..... Eh?" (Forna)

"From reading your memories, the boy you thought of immediately was him.
How nice~, that's awesome! For a princess to love a commoner, that's seriously movie stuff!" (Mackey)

Forna became pale.
Why? How? No, before that, what's he going to do by knowing that?
Against Forna who makes an expression that says that Mackey casually said it.

"Alright~, I'll kill Velt-kun!" (Mackey)
"! " (Forna)

At that moment, Forna shouted madly with rage, that even I've never seen before.

"Yo-, youuuuuuuuuuuuuuuuuuu!" (Forna)

"Ahahahahahaha, you finally showed your true colours, princess! That's it, that's what I want to see! Thanks for showing me that face~! It's awesomely scary!" (Mackey)

"Just try, just try even touching Velt! I'll kill! I will kill you!" (Forna)

"Ahahahahahaha, this is too funny! She said she's going to kill~ me! Kill~! Even if they talk about justice, it's fine~ if it's for the man they love~ apparently. Fantasy really is just awesome!" (Mackey)

At that moment, Forna, humanity's great allied forces, humanity and the world probably thought this.
Someone go beat up that idiot.

But Forna, don't worry.

After all.....

"Hmm? What's this? A shadow....." (Mackey)

At that moment, in the reflection on the sun, a big shadow suddenly covered Mackey Mouse's surroundings, making it dim.

What happened? The moment Mackey Mouse looked up, he was so surprised that he almost toppled over.

"Wait, what's that~! Awesome! It's a dragon!" (Mackey)

A dragon.

A giant, steel dragon flying above the capital.

That's a machine dragon.

And on the back of that dragon, is a mysterious group.

"Bro!" (Doraemon)

"Velt!" (Ura)

"Lord!" (Musashi)

"Stupid younger brother!" (Farga)

"Otouto-kun!" (Cleran)

It's us!

“Thanks for waiting. It took so long that even I got tired of waiting.” (Velt)

Yeah, it really did take a long time.

I even waited enough to go past anger.

“Let’s go oiiiiiiiiiii!” (Velt)

“““““Yeahhhhhhhhh!””””” (Velt’s group)

Without being able to wait a moment longer, even though we were still far in the sky, we jumped off.

Well, no matter how high we fall from, everyone will be okay with my fuwa fuwa time after all.

However, I was the only one that didn’t drop slowly.

I put even more force into my falling speed and then pulled him towards me.

“Fuwa fuwa collection!” (Velt)

“..... Hmm? Eh, oh? Huhhh?” (Mackey)

At that moment, Mackey Mouse, who I cast my magic on, floated in the air and got pulled straight towards me.

“Wha, huh? Why is my body suddenly! Like, who are you!” (Mackey)

Who? What name should I answer with? Well, I’ll tell him later.

“T, that cheeky looking face, that’s from princess Forna’s memories I just read!” (Mackey)

“Yeah, you’re correct.” (Velt)

That’s why, right now I’ll.....

“No..... that’s not it..... you..... those eyes..... I’ve seen them somewhere.....” (Mackey)

Right now, I’ll just.....

“Sorry, save that for later. First, I’ll send you flying enough to die.” (Velt)

With the doubled power of me falling and him being pulled towards me, I punched the stupid friend from the land of dreams, sending him flying.

I don’t even care if my fist breaks.

Even if my bones break, that’s fine.

Right now, I just want to drive all my anger into this guy, to the pith of his bone.

“Ma, Mackey!” (Maney)

“A newcomer?” (Ragaia)

After vigorously getting struck onto the ground, the area around Mackey made a huge hole, that looked like a crater.

That’s quite the power.

I feel pretty refreshed.

So, now I’ll.....

“Fuwa fuwa collection.” (Velt)

I slowly landed, pulled the dumbfounded princess into my arms and embraced her.

“..... No way..... wh, y, why..... bu, t.....” (Forna)

In my arms, Fornia became surprised and her whole body was trembling. Moist eyes, lips that can’t speak properly, head that isn’t working calmly, and a heart that should be gallant and heroic. Right now, when she has all of that, she reached her hand out to my face as if confirming that I’m here, and forgot that she’s on a battlefield right now.

However, just for now, it’s fine. I nodded, to tell her that I’m not a phantom.

“Ah~, that surprised me~, ow~, it seriously awesomely hurts..... what is this? Rather, what are you?” (Mackey)

Mackey Mouse gets his body up.

I don’t know how much damage he took since he’s wearing a costume, but I could tell he’s slightly irritated.

And he asked who I am? Since this name isn’t really known, I’m not sure if he knows, but I still said it.

“I am, the number one baddest guy..... in the wheat fields of this world.”
(Velt)

At that moment, the woman in my arms embraced me strongly together with enough tears to make her voice soundless.

“V..... Ve, Velt-!!!!” (Forna)

That's why I strongly embraced her back, just for today.

TL Note: He introduced himself by that name to Forna in chapter 3.

Chapter 78: Start of the performance

Five years, huh.

“Uuuuuuuuuuuuuuuu~~~~~.” (Forna)

It unexpectedly passed in the blink of an eye, but now that we reunited like this, it feels like it’s been quite a while.

“Uuuuuuuuuuuuuu~~~~~, Velt..... Velt!” (Forna)

Is she going to cry or shout? I wonder that while Forna strongly embraces me.

“Uuuuu~~~~..... ahem.” (Forna)

“Oh?” (Velt)

However, contrary to my expectations, Forna separated from me after only a few seconds.

“~~~~~.” (Forna)

“Hee~, so you’re fine already, huh.” (Velt)

“..... There is no way that was enough.” (Forna)

“Hah?” (Velt)

“Of course there is no way that was enough! Something of this level will not let me replenish in nourishment and other various things! However..... right now, we should not be so carefree.” (Forna)

Despite being reluctant and staggeringly impatient, Forna showed that she understood the situation better than anyone else with her clear face.

“True. Forna, even now, your comrades getting all bloody, so it’s not the time to be squealing around by yourself I guess.” (Velt)

That’s fine.

Forna isn’t who she was in the past.

She might’ve lost control of herself for a moment from being too surprised, but she understands that this isn’t the time to be flirting with me.

“You sure did become an adult.” (Velt)

“U-, uuuuuuuuuuuuu~!!!!!” (Forna)

I honestly thought that, but Fornia turned around with damp eyes and glared at me.

“Goodness me, you really~..... what would you have done if I embraced you out of happiness! Do you know what kind of situation we are in right now!”
(Forna)

Yeah, I know. But the thing is, if I didn’t do that, then I would’ve gone mad already.

After seeing my old friends get killed, there’s no way a war virgin like me could stay calm.

“That’s right, go act like damn married couples later.” (Farga)

“Farga, don’t you mean former married couple?” (Ura)

“Ooh~, so this person is lord’s first wife.” (Musashi)

“Hi there~, imouto-chan.” (Cleran)

“Fui~, I’m too tired from going in an ultra-fast hurry~.” (Doraueemon)

“Haa, haa, haa, haa, tha, that was scary~.” (Chett)

At that moment, these guys that came with me landed in the hanging garden.

“Ni, niisama! Ah, you are..... Ura! Why are you here too!” (Forna)

Seeing the members that showed up, voices of surprise caused tremors in the capital as it reflected on the sun.

“Ve, Velt-kuuuuuuuuuuuuuun! Prince Fargaaaaaa!” (Galva)

Everyone raised their voices after Galva started crying and shouting when he saw our figures, despite his huge body.

That tremor was a shock to humanity and the cyclopes too.

“Chett! It’s Chett, who went to call for reinforcements! He’s alive!”

“O, oi! Is, isn’t he! Ve, Velt-kun! Oi, Shalt!”

“Yeah, yeah! There’s no mistake! It’s Velt! Velt came for us!”

“Velt-kun! And even prince Farga is here!”

“Commander Redrock, please look! That silver-haired girl with red eyes..... is the one who went missing!”

“Yeah, the daughter of Sharkryu, one of the Seven Great Demon Kings! Ura

Vesparda!”

“Wait a minute, that demi-human! That attire and samurai sword! She’s from the Shinsengumi!”

“Wait wait wait! Why is the legendary machine dragon in a place like this!”

“Hey, look at that person! She’s the monster master Cleran, who’s a famous hunter in the continent that rivals prince Farga!”

Regardless of race, everyone probably thought

——What are these guys!

..... this.

“You are..... Ura Vesparda.....” (Ragaia)

“Fufu, it’s been a while, Ragaia. It seems you became a little bigger. We haven’t met ever since the Seven Great Demon Kingdom leader party.” (Ura)

Even Ragaia opened his eyes widely.

I can tell his cool, posing face is bewildered.

“I heard you died, became missing or became the humans’ prisoner of war though?” (Ragaia)

“No, I just married..... with him.” (Ura)

No, don’t put your hand on my shoulder so nonchalantly.

“Ah?” (Forna)

See look, the Golden Comet made an unbelievable reaction and is glaring at you.

“Ura. It seems you have become quite humorous in these five years. That is a very funny joke.” (Forna)

“Hmph. Aren’t you happy, misunderstanding that you are still Velt’s number one even now.” (Ura)

Ah, this feeling is kinda nostalgic. The last time I felt this was around five years ago.

Of course, that was a fight between precocious brats back then, but now that their arms and legs have grown quite a lot, the seriousness has increased.

Love is scary.

“U~mu, lord! Does this mean that both of them are your wives, lord?”
(Musashi)

“Musashi! It’s not both, but me!” (Ura)

“It is me! Rather, who might you be! Why is a demi-human swordsman with Velt?” (Forna)

However, just like I said at the start, it’s not the time to be doing manzai.
The war is still going on, and above all.....

“Musashi? From the shinsengumi? Hey, could you be~, Miyamoto’s.....
Varnand’s grandchild?” (Mackey)

“Y, you.....” (Musashi)

“Hee~, you’ve grown up quite we~ll. The speed of time sure is awesome.”
(Mackey)

Although I punched him with all my power, I guess he won’t just go beddy-bye
like that.

Mackey Mouse.

He stood up as if nothing happened.

Geez..... he pisses me off!

“Hee~, I see I see. Like, I feel like I’ve heard all of these guys’ names before.
You guys sure are some odd members, or rather helpers, but like, what kind of
connection do you guys have? Why is Velt-kun, the least famous person, in the
centre of such an awesome gathering of people? This is an awesome situation.”
(Mackey)

Mackey Mouse mutters in an interested way as he looks over all of us.
However, the fact that he still feels composure even in front of us members
irritated me even more.

“Kuhaha, who cares about something like that, right Mackey-san? Why don’t
you go happily dance like the start? If you want, I can make you dance till you
die, you know? Well, everyone’s tired of looking at your parade though.” (Velt)

“..... Pu, kukukukukuku, what is this, so awesome! You really are cheeky~,
so this guy is princess Forna’s precious precious Velt-kun, huh. What are you!
You’re seriously awesome and crack up!” (Mackey)

I can’t help but get irritated at that composed, screwing around act.

First, I'll tear off your sheep's clothing.

"So, Forna. I'll take care of this piece of shit that interrupted your one to one fight, so you go deal with that poser prince." (Velt)

"Wha-, Velt! What are you saying! Do you know how dangerous that man is!?" (Forna)

"Of course I do. However, there's no point in you trying to defeat him. After all, the war's not going to end even if you beat the hell out of him." (Velt)

However, as long as nothing is done about Mackey Mouse, he'll come back with some random disruption again.

Therefore, I'll stop him instead.

"Seriously~, serious? What? Is Velt-kun going to take me on? Wait, aren't you falling in love with me too hard!?" (Mackey)

"Well, I need to teach my friend from the land of dreams that dreams are things you wake up from someday." (Velt)

"Ho~, so you gallantly appeared when your lover got in a pinch, brought along some reliable comrades and immediately started your counterattack! While you're at it, you're trying to defeat me too? How nice~, it's too cliché and classic. Are you drunk on yourself, thinking that you're the protagonist of the story?" (Mackey)

"That's right. From now on, it's our stage. It's the end of your stupid show time. Get off the stage already! 'Cause I'm going to drop you to hell." (Velt)

Besides, it's not like we don't know each other.
Although I wasn't planning on getting involved with him, meeting him here like this must be some kind of fate.

"Wait wait, Velt, it's too dangerous!" (Ura)
"I agree. Besides, this person is the head of Love and Money! The mastermind that took everything from me! I will take him on!" (Musashi)

That reminds me, although Mackey Mouse is a stranger to Ura and Musashi, it's not like they have no connection at all.
After all, their families came from Japan like me.

"It certainly is dangerous. However, I have to take him on. Ura, your old man

and Musashi, your grandfather is pushing my back, telling me to do it. They're telling me to beat this guy up and make him cry." (Velt)

That's right, those two would definitely tell me that.
So, I won't let anyone else have the right to beat him up.

"Musashi-chan's grandfather? What, did Varnand tell you something, Velt-kun? And like, isn't Ura Vesparda's old man Sharkryu? I don't think I did anything to that guy though." (Mackey)

Mackey Mouse tilted his head, not understanding what I mean.
So, without putting on airs, I'll straight out tell it to him.

"Just like how Musashi is Miyamoto's grandchild, Ura is Samejima's child, who was reborn as demon king Sharkryu." (Velt)

"..... Hah? Same..... jima....." (Mackey)

"Oh! Kuhahahaha, I could tell you were surprised even through your costume, you know? Is getting information about your former classmates more surprising than war? Is it, Kagami!" (Velt)

".....!! Wha-! No, no way! Are you!" (Mackey)

"This must be some kind of fate. Instead of Miyamoto, who wanted to knock you down, I'm going to beat you down since you're so painful to watch and break off our ties from our past lives." (Velt)

Mackey Mouse's..... Kagami's atmosphere completely changed.
He became confused, agitated and trembled. It wasn't a weak response like Miyamoto's one.
He was surprised enough to become speechless.

"Velt..... that pattern again, huh. Some kind of connection that we, who have been with you for so long, don't even know. It was like that to father and Musashi's grandfather too." (Ura)

"I remember that too. Eyes that are looking in the distance at somewhere I do not know..... eyes that are not looking at me. That was the only thing I hated in the past." (Forna)

Ura and Forna tried to stop me because it's dangerous, but now they're

swelling their cheeks as if getting a little sulky.

However, straight after that, they knocked my chest and turned the other way.

“If you are still going to fight him, then promise me that you absolutely absolutely absolutely, absoluuuuuutely will not die.” (Forna)

“If you break the promise, then I will have you take responsibility in the depths of hell for making two women become widows.” (Ura)

Yeah, I guess I definitely can't die then.

“Hmph, stop idling away, it's fucking stupid. Stupid younger brother, if you're going to send that stupid piece of shit flying, then do that. I'm going to kill all those damn one eyes in the capital. I'll make them pay for the sin of getting involved with the promising soldiers of my country.” (Farga)

“I will go help Farga. High cyclops..... fufufu, I can't wait to see how they taste.” (Cleran)

“Doraemon. Let us go back them up too.” (Musashi)

“Ehhhh~, I just flew with all my power though!” (Doraemon)

“I, I'm coming too! To guide you through the capital and reorganise our army!” (Chett)

Without asking me about anything, Farga took the initiative to jump off the hanging garden and subjugate the cyclopes rampaging around the capital. Cleran, Musashi, Dora and Chett went with him, to overturn the war situation.

“Fufufu, then let us continue, prince Ragaia.” (Forna)

“..... Are you sane? Princess Fornia, you are unexpectedly honest to a fault.” (Ragaia)

“Fufu, remember this, boy. This is a valuable one to one fight between generals. You will feel a welling up of power. And above all, by righteously defeating a cowardly opponent, you can be proud of your own honour.” (Forna)

Forna shows a belligerent smile.

I can see more calmness in that expression than the one she had before.

“Well, I guess I will..... take you on, although I don't quite understand who you are, Maney Mouse.” (Ura)

“Eh-, ehhhhhh? M, me~?” (Maney)

Ura is taking on Maney, who's still shrouded in mystery.

And I'm.....

“Hey, let's go somewhere else. Let's talk..... in a place where the reflection can't show us.” (Mackey)

“Yeah. I don't mind where it is. The place you'll end up in the end is hell after all.” (Velt)

I'm facing one of my classmates that ended up changing.

Chapter 79: Showing your real ability

It's different to the slaughter in Shiromu.

Enemies and allies are breathing roughly and there's a unique weight in the air. With the hate each side has for each other, they're dyeing the beautiful capital in blood.

However, far from getting swallowed up in the state of the war, the man that instead took the initiative to raise the signal of humanity's counterattack was him.

"I'm not interested in any fucking great cause of war. However, you assholes got involved with my country's property. Get gouged out and die." (Farga)

He goes past.

Like the wind, he just goes past crowds of cyclopes.

The cyclopes can't catch that man, because the moment they try to catch that man going past, parts of their bodies get gouged out in a circle shape.

"Wha wha, what this human!" (Cyclops)

"Ouuuch!" (Cyclops)

"Can't catch!" (Cyclops)

His spear flashes.

No one could perceive his movements.

"Don't put me together with a fucking sweet ass like my stupid younger brother who avoids war and killing. My body and soul has the resolve to be dirtied in filthy blood." (Farga)

The moment I blink once, multiple cyclops heads vanish.

It's my first time seeing Farga's killing.

I can see the coldness of absolute zero and intensity in his killing, that he's never shown Forna or me before.

Splashes of blue blood get reflected on the sun over and over again.

Shop signboards, white tables in open cafes and buildings made of white stone

that people would normally walk by, get dyed in bright blue.

That was a sight that made both allies and enemies shudder in fear.

“Hohou. To think I of all people would tremble in excitement. Hahahahahaha, interesting! I will personally pulverise you!” (?)

However, there was one person that laughed at seeing Farga’s fighting. He’s the High Cyclops demon that called himself Redrock.

“Ooh, Redrock-sama is personally going out!”

“Redrock-sama, you are a general. Didn’t prince Ragaia tell you to refrain from one to one fights?”

Redrock kept smiling. It doesn’t look like he’s even bothered to listen to his subordinates.

And then, standing in front of Farga that just kept pushing his way through cyclopes, he swung his metal rod to attack him.

An intense whirlwind arose as he swung his metal rod.

“Haaahahhahhahh! Now, come! First prince of the Elfarshia Kingdom, Scarlet Dragon Killer Farga Elfarshia! Let us fight fairly!” (Redrock)

The general suddenly came out and attacked him.

From prince Ragaia’s perspective, he would probably think he’s a ‘fool’.

Of course, Farga is the type of guy to say this is ‘worthless’, but since the opponent is a general, it would be better to take his head.

“Hmph.” (Farga)

He might not be interested in a one to one fight itself, but he pushed on straight ahead to take Redrock’s head.

However, at that moment.

“Wait, prince Farga!” (?)

A man’s voice resounded throughout the capital.

Farga reflexively stopped his feet.

Redrock looked to his side too.

Then, they saw a man dyed in bright red blood, standing unsteadily with a sword in one hand, despite not having any power in his arms.

“Please leave him to me.” (?)

That was Barts, who was struck by Redrock.

“Barts, you..... what are you saying. Are you fucking sane?” (Farga)

“Hou, to think you could stand after taking one of my hits, young man.

However, do you still want to fight me with those injuries?” (Redrock)

It’s just as they say. What can you do with those injuries?

I don’t know why you’re so stubborn, but at that rate, you’re just going to die in vain you know?

However, blowing away all those comments, Barts shouted.

“What the hell are you doing, humanity’s great allied forces! Are you worn out from something of this level!? Are you going to depend on the prince’s power from just this much despair!? Don’t you think that’s pathetic!?” (Barts)

That wasn’t just to the people near him. Through the reflection, he pointed those words to his allies across the whole capital.

However, no one could respond to that.

In the first place, most of the soldiers already lost their fighting spirit, and are just new soldiers trying to depend on Farga and the others that just appeared. However,

“Being a new soldier doesn’t mean shit! We chose this path of our own will! What about it you say? It means that we’re pathetic enough to be worried about by that idiot who started working at a restaurant and said he wasn’t interested in the path of a champion or war!” (Barts)

..... Is he talking about me when he said idiot.....

“Listen up, remember this! Humanity’s great allied forces aren’t just soldiers to fight in wars! They’re warriors that are supposed to crush despair that assaults humanity! And yet, why are we falling to despair first!? It’s our job to show our real ability against the despair that assaults us!” (Barts)

Those words of encouragement were too clumsy that it suited Barts.

He’s probably trying to cause a blast in them, but how did it go?

However, everyone became speechless and stayed silent.

No matter what you say, no one will stand up so simply.

It's not like everyone is that strong.

There's a limit to what you can move with just words.

However,

"Shut up, young man. Don't interrupt a supreme one to one fight." (Redrock)

The enemy can't read the atmosphere enough to let him keep going with his speech.

Redrock raises his metal rod and brings it down, trying to crush Barts under it.

"Tch!" (Farga)

Farga's reacted a moment too late, and he didn't make it in time.

However,

"O..... ooooooooooooooooooh-!" (Barts)

"Wha-!" (Redrock)

"Raaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaa!" (Barts)

Barts raises his sword together with a war cry, catching Redrock's strike with his sword, despite the violent metallic sound and shock wave.

"Wha-, my strike was! You caught it..... who is he..... you still had that much power, huh! However, my next strike will....." (Redrock)

Redrock unintentionally opened his eyes widely, but he released a follow-up attack without a moment's delay.

As if saying the first time was a fluke and there will be no second time, he released another merciless strike.

However,

"Zuaaaaa!" (Barts)

"Wha, what, young man!" (Redrock)

Barts released another swing with all his might, but this time, instead of just stopping Redrock's metal rod, he even flicked off Redrock, together with his metal rod.

"Barts..... you....." (Farga)

"Impossible! Vice chief Redrock was! By such an unsteady brat!"

"Unbelievable, even though that thin sword should have easily broken, it even

forced vice chief back!”

“Who the hell is that brat!”

Farga is somewhat happily chuckling at Barts’ unexpected counterattack. Redrock’s eyes went round from the unexpected event and muttered while opening and closing his hand multiple times that probably became numb.

“Young man..... it seems..... you transformed dramatically from this near-death situation..... After being in many battlefields, you see people grow from those kinds of experiences. Fuh..... this is why I can’t stop fighting..... my chest throbs, and my blood gets excited!” (Redrock)

Barts showed a counterattack from a worn out state. That was such a refreshing sight that even my chest became hot. He didn’t just use words. With his reliable figure, he showed his own will.

“Shalt! Can you hear me! The princess and commander Galva are in a situation where they can’t take command! The one that has to command us..... is you! I’ll defeat this guy! We can’t let them say that we only won because the prince, Ura and the others came for us! Why did we throw up all that blood for until now! At this rate, we’re going to get made fun of by Velt!” (Barts)

No one could stay silent after seeing that figure.

“..... Kuku, that guy.”

“Yeah, it’s just as you say.”

“Good grief! I would feel ashamed for life if I got laughed at by such a problem child!”

“Damn it! I just have to do it!”

“It’s to avenge Sea and Gau! Let’s fight for their sake too!”

“Guys, let’s go!”

“Oooooooh!”

That spread throughout the capital in an instant, and people from everywhere were filled with fighting spirit.

“Alright, Barts! From now on, I will be taking command!” (Shalt)

Shalt answers while raising his fist up strongly.

“Archer and magic unit, move back to the headquarters in the back for now!

Seventh and third unit, collect the remaining soldiers in the surroundings and join up with Hawk and the others on the front line to back them up! Eighth and ninth unit, follow prince Farga! Soldiers, counterattack!” (Shalt)

“Ooooooooooooooooooooooh—!”

The morale of the soldiers that start moving one after the other, is even more intense than before the start of the war.

Furthermore, they’re not going to get ecstatic and make their own decisions like before this time.

Following the instructions Shalt gave, everyone showed more than enough power.

“O, ooh, commander Shalt is amazing!”

“Haha, as expected of Shalt-sama! He immediately made a comeback!”

Shalt’s unit’s eyes are shining from seeing their commander get an unexpected, exceptional promotion and his show of power.

However, Shalt’s expression isn’t showing any complacency.

That’s because the fact that the situation is disadvantageous hasn’t changed, and just one of his directions can make a countless amount of allies victim.

Above all,

“Gyaaaaaa!”

“Oh no, the, these guys, guaaa!”

Now that’s he’s taking command, the likelihood of them aiming at him is higher.

“You’re getting too noisy~, you damn youngsters~.”

That came from a High Cyclops unit that rushed into the place Shalt is commanding from.

“Kuh, you are here already, huh.” (Shalt)

“So you’re the general, youngster~. But you really are out of luck for our High Cyclops melee specialized hundred man unit to be near you.” (High Cyclops)

Since he was suddenly chosen, the guards around Shalt to let him take command were insufficient.

Shalt realized that and tried to harden the forces around him as fast as possible,

but the enemy was faster.

There's a crowd of High Cyclopes, that despite being humanoid, have larger builds and breath more brutally.

There won't be a single person left if that crowd all came at once.

However.....

“Now, I have this head! Remember this! I am the leader of the melee specialized hundred man unit~, pugerazudaio”

Before he could name himself, that High Cyclops was bisected.
That strike was like the flash of a gale. (TL Note: 疾風閃光?)

“I hate humans..... however, if it is for the sake of my lord's friends, I will not hesitate at all!” (Musashi)

Musashi.

With the name of a peerless swordsman, she arrived, crossing over the difference in races.

Chapter 80: No point if you die

If a demi-human came into a war between humans and demons, of course they would be bewildered.

“You are, the demi-human that Velt-kun brought along. Why are you helping us?” (Shalt)

What are you planning? It’s understandable for Shalt to be suspicious of her like that.

However, it’s not like Musashi has any deep reason behind it, considering she’s generally dumb.

“It is obvious. I am helping you because you people are the ones that lord is trying to save.” (Musashi)

“Lord? What exactly happened with you and Velt?” (Shalt)

“Fuh, what you ask? The debt of gratitude I received from lord is not something that can be summarized in a few words. If it is for the sake of paying back my lord who picked me up when I had nowhere to go, it does not matter whether the enemy is a demi-human, human or demon! I fight for the sake of my lord!” (Musashi)

You literally just summed it up in a few words.

However, now Shalt and the others should understand that although she’s a demi-human, Musashi isn’t scheming or hiding anything.

“He,..... picked up Ura, a demon, and now he picked up a demi-human while we weren’t there?” (Shalt)

“Um, commander Shalt. Well, about this woman..... this Shinsengumi, what should we do with her? Not trusting her is probably for the.....”

“Well, let’s see..... alright, in that case, you said your name was Musashi, right? I want to ask you something.” Shalt)

Although he judged that Musashi isn’t an enemy, Shalt has another thing he wants to check.

That was about whether he could trust Musashi or not.

“Do you like Velt?” (Shalt)

“Hmph, a subordinate like me should not lightly talk about liking or hating lord. I just want to fight for my lord that I love so much!” (Musashi)

“I see. For me, there are no other words that I can trust more. So, I will trust you for now!” (Shalt)

To Musashi who gave an immediate reply, Shalt showed a smile on his face and raised his fist.

“Musashi-san, our troops here will now move to the centre of the capital. I entrust the vanguard to you!” (Shalt)

“The centre? Not to the very back?” (Musashi)

“If I go to the back, the command will go to pieces. By then, it would be too late. To reorganize a military formation that has already gone through chaos, it is necessary to give out directions at the same time to every side.” (Shalt)

“I see. Understood! I will see the power of my lord’s right-hand man in those one eyes!” (Musashi)

Her two swords gave off more intenseness, brightness and beauty than any other magic flying through this battlefield.

After seeing her sword skill that even reached the peak, everyone thought this. How beautiful and dreadful that is.

“A, amazing, who is that demi-human! She’s cutting up so many cyclopes all by herself!”

“They’re this strong, huh. Compared to humans..... their movements are in a completely different league!”

“Even though we diligently practice swinging a thousand times every day..... I don’t feel like I’ll ever be able to reach that level.”

Humanity’s great allied forces shuddered in fear from feeling her killing ability, even though the blade point wasn’t being aimed at them.

“I knew that demi-humans surpassed humans in physical ability. The problem is her technique.”

“Commander Shalt!”

“Barts and I went to battlefields earlier than everyone else. We fought with demi-humans multiple times until now in the Divine Being Continent, but they

were all just fighting with their amazing physical ability. However, their technique and skill..... were not particularly as polished as hers.” (Shalt)

It’s not like she was just using her physical ability.

Musashi is here now because she steadily accumulated the basics since she was young.

Miyamoto sure did raise a demi-human that would make a terrifying enemy.

“Wow, Musashi-chan really is amazing. She’s getting too enthusiastic to show otouto-kun her strong point. I think otouto-kun would actually get drawn away because he doesn’t like war though.” (Cleran)

“Um~, Cleran-neesan, do I have to fight too?” (Doraemon)

“Of course you do, Dora-chan. In the first place, you shouldn’t say you can’t fight even though you have such a big body. People much smaller than you are fighting after all.” (Cleran)

“Buuut there’s no way I can win against those big, scary looking cyclopes!” (Doraemon)

Above Musashi and the others who are continuing a steady advance, Cleran is looking down from the top of Dora’s head.

They’re heading to the cyclopes that are rampaging with their huge bodies.

“Gaaaaaaaaa!” (Cyclops)

“Kill. Crush! Me strong!” (Cyclops)

“Crush!” (Cyclops)

“Mukyou!” (Cyclops)

There are four cyclopes in front. I would say they’re around ten metres tall. Oi oi, they’re grabbing house roofs and throwing them around.

“Hmm~, they don’t really seem tasty~.” (Cleran)

“Cleran-neesan, I don’t taste good either, okay!” (Doraemon)

“Listen, Dora-chan, things are made to be tried! So, try..... shooting them♪” (Cleran)

Cleran gives out a really vague instruction. However, Dora opened his mouth, taking those vague words seriously.

“A, alright! I’m desperate now! Take this!” (Doraemon)

Then, a huge iron ball shot out of Dora's huge mouth and crushed all four cyclopes in one go.

Oi..... you.....

"Ooooooh, I shot! Aren't I amazing! I defeated them!" (Doraemon)

"Ara ara, you're amaaazing. You have the ability to create steel inside yourself. A wrought iron user. That's amazing. I can't lose either~. Transformation, Giant Foot!" (Cleran)

"Cleran-neesan, you're way more amazing! Beating up cyclopes to death with a huge arm is too scary!" (Doraemon)

Let alone races, Monster Master Cleran and Dora the Machine Dragon who are so monstrous that you can't even determine what type of creature they are, are going around defeating cyclopes.

Humanity's great allied forces are quite bewildered too, but since they're still defeating cyclopes, they decided to just raise cheers for them.

The flow is definitely leaning towards humanity. Their vigour and morale are all more than the enemy.

Because humanity's great allied forces went back to fighting, the disadvantageous situation in the capital that was on the brink of being overthrown started making a comeback again.

That's a good thing.....

"Kukukuku, man~, awesome. Yeah~, it's awesome. I hadn't predicted this war situation. Man~, the friends you brought with you sure are amazing~." (Mackey)

From the sky garden, we moved to a place away from the centre of the capital.

Away from the beautiful park and the brilliant commercial district, we're on a hill in the back.

No enemies or allies are there, and no one's watching.

Of course, the reflection in the sky won't capture it either.

Right now, the two of us are the only ones here.

"Hmm, getting taken to a place alone with a lighthearted playboy makes me feel danger to my body. I'll be taking the chance to say this, but I'm straight, so don't think about doing anything to me." (Velt)

“Ooohahhahhahha, I like girls more too~. But we’re going to talk about something important, so it can’t be helped.” (Mackey)

“Something important huh~. Even after you changed and your head went mad, I guess these kinds of conversations are important after all. Or is it that you still have attachments to when you were ‘Kagami’?” (Velt)

“Fufu, ufufufufufu, I guess. But I’m enjoying myself right now. What about you? Did you not get excited by the war I directed?” (Mackey)

“It’s really pointless. You’re making Mackey Mouse’s name cry, even though he was the most popular things in the old world. Well, I might have some fun with half killing you.” (Velt)

“Arara. Although I do try to answer to my dear customers’ requests, I’ll have to say no to that one~. Don’t say something scary, and let’s just..... talk a little.” (Mackey)

Just for the last part, the tone of his voice was low.
It seems that even though he’s wearing a weird costume, he’s trying to talk about something serious.

“More than thirty years have passed since I was born in this world. So like, I don’t remember all my classmates from thirty years ago, but well..... who are you?” (Mackey)

Who is my other self, that’s not Velt Jeeha?
I seriously answered that question.

“I’m Asakura Ryuuma.” (Velt)

To my answer, a voice that sounded like it was speechless came from the Mackey Mouse costume.

“..... Asakura? Asaku..... ah! I remember I remember now! You’re Asakura-kun the delinquent!” (Mackey)

“Ho~, it’s an honour to be remembered by you, even after your head went mad.” (Velt)

“Uoooo, seriously! Seriouslyyyy! Ueee, really, seriouslyyy!” (Mackey)

Kagami remembered me.

Let alone that, he even looks somewhat happy.

He didn't look like the character called Mackey Mouse that he built in this world, he looked like his natural self.

"Wait, so you're Asakura-kun! Heee, this is seriously awesome! It's been so long! I remember you well. Even though you're a delinquent, you're really shy and pure-hearted, so you left an impression on me." (Mackey)

"Hmph, you making fun of me? Like, do I really get remembered like that? Miyamoto and Samejima said that too." (Velt)

"Ah, you met Miyamocchan too, huh. And wasn't Samejima the guy from the karate club? That reminds me, you said Sharkryu, one of the Seven Great Demon Kings was Samejima, but five years ago, didn't Sharkryu-" (Mackey)

"He died. I was there at his last moment. And he entrusted Ura to me." (Velt)

"Hahaha, that's amazing, being entrusted a princess by a demon king, you really are awesome, Asakura-kun..... but..... I see, so Samecchi died, huh. Twice." (Mackey)

It's not like he's mourning for him, but he's probably going through complicated feelings that he doesn't get either.

For this guy, he doesn't care who or how many people in this world die.

But if one of his acquaintances from when he was Kagami dies, it's somewhat different.

I understand those feelings a bit too.

"Were you..... fine? Even after you died and was born again..... did you have fun?" (Mackey)

"I regretted some stuff. I went through a lot of tiring things, but..... well, I was blessed in my meetings, so it hasn't been a bad second life." (Velt)

"Hm~m, is that so. So you accepted it..... and like this world. Just like Miyamocchan and Ayase-chan." (Mackey)

Ah?

The air changed.

What is this feeling?

It's not wild joy. It's not anger either.

The overflowing air coming from that stupid looking costume..... this suffocating air.....

“How nice~, coming to a clean decision like that. But that means you’re casting away yourself as a high schooler in Japan, your former family, lover, friends and everything. Isn’t that..... lonely?” (Mackey)

Ahh..... this air..... it’s the sorrow..... of parting with the world and your old self that you can never return to again.

“So you couldn’t accept this world.” (Velt)

Kagami nodded slightly to my words.

“Of course I couldn’t! Like, although you call me a lighthearted playboy, Asakura-kun, do you even know anything about me? In high school, I was trying pretty hard you know? It’s not like I had outstanding talent in exercise and I wasn’t recognized for my studying. So I purposely acted like a joking character to make people gather around me, and even made things lively at school. Once I did that, a lot of people started gathering around me.” (Mackey)

Kagami kept talking on and on as if asking me to understand his feelings.

“It was fun. Even if I kept on living and became an adult, those days would probably still be the best time of my life. I laughed together with my good friends about stupid things, serious things, got into fights, shared memories, flirted with my cute girlfriend, had sex and got confessed to. I was seriously a riajuu.” (Mackey)

“Oi, are you boasting?” (Velt)

“Yeah, I am boasting. But like, all of a sudden I just died without any warning. By the time I realized it, I reincarnated! By the time I realized it, I was in another world! A fantasy world. I had to start from zero, without any friends, lover, family or anyone. I didn’t have anything from Japan. Haa? What the hell is up with that! Why do I have to go through that! If I’m going to die, let me die as Kagami! The life I worked so hard in died, but then I get a second life where I start from zero again? Don’t screw with me!” (Mackey)

Ahh, this is bad.

Frankly, it’s not like I don’t understand how he feels.

Although I wasn’t a riajuu, I had attachments to the time when I was Asakura Ryuuma.

If Velt Jeeha wasn't blessed in his meetings, he would've never accepted this second life.

"So I decided. Although it's supposed to be the end if you die, no matter how much you work hard, next I have to work hard in another world? Working hard just seems stupid then. In that case, I might as well just enjoy myself. Doing anything and everything I want to. And yet, all the people in this world are full of idiots. Even though they don't know what would happen if you die, they risk their lives and like, they're saying this awesomely stupid stuff with super sharp faces. I'll carry the souls of the people that died? They're surely watching over us in heaven? That's so awesomely stupid! Looking over you is impossible, impossible! After all, they might be walking their second life in an unrelated other world, so like, what the hell are you saying with such an understanding face!?" (Mackey)

Only I..... only we can say these kinds of complaints.
I see..... in a way, on top of being too blessed in his past life, he had no irreplaceable encounters in his second life.

"How pitiful. I feel you." (Velt)

I do feel pity for him.
However, it's too late.

It was the same for Samejima and Miyamoto.

This guy already pushed on too far that he can't turn back.

Besides, I didn't feel what I felt with Samejima and Miyamoto for this guy.

On one side, I feel sorry for him, but for some reason, I didn't feel like trying to do something for him.

"Well, you were unlucky." (Velt)

So, I pushed him aside.

Chapter 81: Deadly attraction

“I was unlucky..... huh~, isn’t it awesome that a classmate you meet again after more than ten years tells you that?” (Mackey)

“It’s enough for you. So, Kagami. Do you have any other words to leave behind?” (Velt)

No matter how many people this guy kills, ignoring him would’ve been fine as long as he didn’t get involved with my life.

However, due to what he did, Forna almost died.

Gau and Sea died.

Since they’re soldiers, they should’ve had the resolve for that possibility? I’m not wise enough to come to a clear decision about that.

“Fufufufufu, what’s up? Are you going to fight me? Asakura-kun. Why? For what sake? For the world? For humanity? For your friends?” (Mackey)

“No reason. I just felt like it. Besides, I can’t stand to have any more of my acquaintances die because of your directing. Including Forna too.” (Velt)

“Uuuwa~, you’re totally stained by this world. Miyamocchan and Ayase-chan are still fine, but I thought you would understand my feelings.” (Mackey)

“Haa? Why would I understand your feelings?” (Velt)

“Yeah. You used to not have friends, and since you were a hated delinquent, you didn’t come to school either. But after summoning your courage and going to school every day, you gradually opened your heart and just started having a fun, school life when we died, right?” (Mackey)

It’s just as he says. It’s not like I don’t understand Kagami’s feelings. It really did start getting fun.

Although I thought the guys around me were annoying, it didn’t feel bad.

Just as I started to think that school was fun, that incident happened. We died. However,

“You’re wrong about one thing, Kagami. Unlike you, I wasn’t working hard.” (Velt)

“Really?” (Mackey)

“Yeah, really. I didn’t do anything. It was just a school life I was given by an idiot I coincidentally met, who pulled me into that kind of life.” (Velt)

That’s right. I didn’t work hard.

Because there was a woman who came close and was over-familiar to me without avoiding me, a delinquent, I was able to change.

In the end, I’m different to this guy.

“You were just unlucky, and I was lucky. That’s all. So, you should die while thinking you ran out of luck.” (Velt)

“..... Ahh, I see..... there should be a lot of other things we could’ve talked about..... but I really am awesomely unlucky.” (Mackey)

Kagami sighed tiredly.

Even though he should’ve already known that nothing can be done about himself, it seemed like he felt that again.

“Well, whatever. That was enough since I was able to complain after so long. Alright, Asakura-kun. Can you die soon too?” (Mackey)

“Sorry, but since I’ve been dyed by this world, unlike you, there are a lot of people who would mourn for me if I died. You should die since no one would mourn for you anyway.” (Velt)

“Aaahahhahhahha, you’re awesomely merciless, Asakura-kun. But if you look at me naively like a classmate..... you’ll be killed in an instant, you know?” (Mackey)

Ahh, it really just didn’t go well and we couldn’t have done anything about it. If only that accident didn’t happen during the field trip, this guy and everyone would’ve been fine.

“Life..... really doesn’t go well..... sensei.....” (Velt)

Sorry, sensei.

Even if I have to throw away my current lifestyle, I still don’t want to help this guy.

Although I feel sympathy for him and think he’s pitiful, I hate the possibility of threatening the lives of Forna and the others from now on.

So, I’ll abandon him.

“I’ll make it end in an instant! Fuwa fuwa rocket!” (Velt)

“Oh-? Oooh!” (Mackey)

“Go let your head crash into the ground and get messed up!” (Velt)

As long as he’s wearing his costume, I can do this to him as much as I want. First I’ll make him go up high in the sky and then smash him onto the ground, head first.

Well, seeing how cocky he is, he probably won’t die from something like this, but he’ll definitely break some bones.

However,

“You’re the one that’s going to die. Gravity Magic, Zero Gravity Field!” (Mackey)

He was supposed to smash the ground at the speed of my magic handling and the gravity, but Kagami’s body just barely floated above the ground.

It’s not like my magic was cancelled though.

No, that’s not all.

“Wha! Wha, my, my body is.....” (Velt)

I didn’t do anything. And yet, even my body rose up.

Furthermore, rather than floating, I don’t even feel any weight in my body. It’s like I became a feather or something.....

“I made this place have zero gravity.” (Mackey)

“What!” (Velt)

“It’s gravity magic. That can do something similar to you, right?” (Mackey)

No..... wait a minute..... gravity magic is, oi.....

“Fuwa fuwa flight!” (Velt)

I can still move in zero gravity. But what about attacking?

I try pulling out the baton from the holster equipped to my leg.

However, I don’t feel any weight from the baton that’s supposed to weigh a hundred kilos.

What would happen if I hit him with this?

“Nu-, kunununu, raa!” (Velt)

“Aaahhahhahha~! There’s no way that would work.” (Mackey)

So it really doesn't work, huh. Since my body weight is zero too, I can't put any power into it.

A strike of all my might was easily sidestepped.

I can't make any balanced movements.

"Damn it, but if there's no gravity, you can attack me that well either!" (Velt)

"Haa? Asakura-kun, you really are stupid. When I'm attacking....." (Mackey)

"Guh, wha, the, the gravity is!" (Velt)

"Of course I would cancel the magic and then attack." (Mackey)

"Cra-!" (Velt)

Several ten times the gravity weighs on my body at once.

"Gravity Punch!" (Mackey)

The moment my body screamed from that gravity, Kagami made his fist multiple times heavier and punched me in the abdomen.

"A..... aaaaaaaaah-!!!!" (Velt)

Crap! Wha, what is this, with just one blow.

"Gahah, haa, hyuu, hyuu, hyuu, ue, damn it, no way, by this playboy, I'm gonna." (Velt)

"Ahahahaha, this is Asakura-kun, who was supposed to be the strongest delinquent. Damn, I've become awesomely strong." (Mackey)

Shit, I let my guard down. Even though I knew he was a gravity magic user through the reflection from before.

But that one right now seriously hurt. Anyways, I need to get some distance and recover.....

"Ah, I'm not going to let you run away." (Mackey)

"!" (Velt)

"High Gravity Field." (Mackey)

"Tsu-, oooooooh!" (Velt)

This time, the gravity of multiple times my body weight is weighing on me. My, my body can't move!

"Didn't I tell you? If you think of me as a classmate forever, you'll be killed in

an instant.” (Mackey)

This asshole, he’s screwing around! He said he couldn’t accept this world?
What the hell are you saying!

This accuracy. This power. This skill. No matter how you think about it, it’s something he trained and learnt!

“Well then, bye bye, Asakura-kun. If we meet again in our third life, let’s be friends.” (Mackey)

On top of that, he isn’t hesitating.
In contrast with me who hasn’t killed anyone before, he isn’t hesitating in killing his former classmate.

It seems the things he’s seen and experienced in this life is fundamentally different to me.....

“U-, but what about it!” (Velt)

But that’s not a proper reason for him to kill me.

“Nuo, wha-, I’m floating! In this gravitational field!” (Mackey)

It doesn’t matter how much gravity there is.
I’ll float it.
I’ll float the world I see!
The whole world!

“You really are a light guy. Even in this gravity..... you’re floating like this!”
(Velt)

“!” (Mackey)

“Now, Mackey Mouse-san from the land of dreams. Please experience the attractions I’m suggesting. Isn’t it, awesomely dangerous?” (Velt)

Spin! Spin spin spin!

“Fuwa fuwa merry go round!” (Velt)

“Nuu, uooooooooooooooooo!” (Mackey)

“Aaand, then the ones I developed for my precious Hanabi, fuwa fuwa up high and fuwa fuwa jet coaster!” (Velt)

While spinning him at an ultrahigh speed, I raise him up to the skies, move

him to the right, left, up and then nose dive down.

“Kuhahahaha, accidents keep happening when anyone other than Hanabi experiences this attraction, so please be careful.” (Velt)

“Wai-, ooooooh!” (Mackey)

“Uraah!” (Velt)

I struck him onto the ground.

This time, there’s no zero gravity or anything.

Since I rotated him enough to die, his eyes and head are spinning, so there’s no way he could use that kind of advanced magic.

Kagami sunk into the ground with his Mackey Mouse costume head.

I feel pretty refreshed.

“Kuhahahaha. You can go and tell me how the attraction was in your third life.” (Velt)

Now, I’ll end it just like this.

Chapter 82: The real thing and the small thing

Just because they're fighting to defend, is humanity the righteous one? No, if the world had such a simple 'rewarding good and punishing bad' structure, people wouldn't go through so much hardship.

"How dare you~, don't get carried away, you damn monkey children! Including that tiger girl and the disgrace of a demon who lost her honour, do you bastards even know what you're guilty of!" (Old Cyclops General)

One old High Cyclops general came and stood in front of humanity's great allied forces' advance, as they started counterattacking. He's mowing down the advance of the young, new soldiers that are full of motivation, with a huge spear.

"This battle is our holy war! It's a battle to protect our brethren against the foolish humans who continue invading us demons! To protect our country, family, lovers and friends, we put all of our honour and lives in this battle! Why does that desire have to be hindered by you inexperienced bastards!" (Old Cyclops General)

What they shouldn't misunderstand here, is that the cyclopes aren't invading with evil intent. The cyclopes are fighting with their important things and their world on the line.

"Uoooo, follow the old general!"
"Eradicate the humans!"
"My old man and siblings died in battles against humanity's great allied forces! I'll avenge them right here and now!"

It's not about who is right or wrong, this is just how the current world is. Really, even though there's no end to either side, why do they all risk their lives like this.....

"Elfarshia style Spearmanship, Evening Shower!" (Farga)

As if saying ‘what about it?’ a merciless spear rained down on the rampaging, hopeful cyclopes.

“Nu-, Farga Elfarshia! The prodigal prince who averted his eyes from war and the flow of the world!” (Old Cyclops General)

“Hmph..... you’re all so fucking noisy. I don’t care about your desires, you damn old geezer. However, this isn’t an action I took on a whim. I did it because I couldn’t abandon the wishes of the stupid younger sister I love and the young soldiers from the Elfarshia Kingdom.” (Farga)

“You jest! For royalty that rules over a country to fight for a personal grudge, learn some shame!” (Old Cyclops General)

“There’s no definition for war. Go die after learning that you’re getting damn conceited to beautify a quarrel where you kill each other.” (Farga)

“Yo, you little, greenhooorn!” (Old Cyclops General)

The desires of the cyclopes..... that kind of thing..... doesn’t matter.

A cyclops protection organization should go make a fuss about it.

If you stay silent, you die. You get killed. Not only yourself but your friends, family and everyone.

So, both are to blame.

“Here I go, Flame Saber, Fire Emperor Madness!” (Barts)

“Fuhahaha, come! Barts Kuruntape! Hit me with everything you have!”
(Redrock)

Red hot hellfire against an indestructible force.

They’ve already hit each other with all their power multiple times, so cracks ran through the town and the buildings from the aftermath of it.

However, even though they’re in the middle of that much power, Barts and Redrock aren’t drawing back at all.

“Haa, haa, damn it..... what are you, a monster.....” (Barts)

“Good! That was good, Barts! Give me more enjoyment! If I can defeat you, it wouldn’t be strange for humanity’s great allied forces to collapse! So, it would be better for you to be more ferocious!” (Redrock)

“K, keep talking! It’s the same for you since if I defeat you here, it’ll be our win!”
(Barts)

In a way, no matter how many allies die, no matter how many enemies get defeated, what controls the outcome, in the end, is whether you can defeat the enemy leader or not.

Although the morale rose from Farga and the others' intrusion, Barts is the one who's currently shouldering the main attack of humanity's great allied forces.

"Uoooo, protect commander Barts! Don't let any enemies get even a step closer!"

"Go help prince Farga! Don't let the soldiers of that old general through!"

"Oi, commander Barts' injuries from the start keep getting worse, so at this rate....."

"Stop it! Barts is challenging him in a one to one battle with everything on the line! If you interrupt them here, you'll be throwing mud on Barts' honour!"

"That's right! Barts will win! Our Barts won't lose! So, to let them fight without reserve, we need to block any enemies from disturbing them!"

Humanity's great allied forces shout.

Leave this to us. In exchange, please defeat the enemy general with your own hands.

Those silent words of encouragement reached Barts for sure and became his power.

"Nuguoooooooo!"

"Uu-, ruaaaaa!"

However, that was the same for the cyclopes too.

As Redrock's subordinates, they should fully understand how important a superior officer's one to one fight is.

Therefore, the cyclopes didn't try to get involved with them.

"Fuu, fuu, fuu, you really are tough..... Barts..... I didn't think you could pull out this much power after crossing your limits. Your heart is abnormally strong. Where in the world did you pull out that much from your small body? Why do you go so far?" (Redrock)

Although Redrock was feeling like he was harvesting rice while it's still green at the start, I can tell he's getting cold sweat.

It's because he realized he was pulled into the domain of fighting where he

would go to the other world if he averted his eyes from Barts for even a moment.

“Why? It’s to end this period of darkness!” (Barts)

“Kuku, fuhahahahahahaha, well said. Those words don’t seem to just for show. However, you are the one that will die!” (Redrock)

“I’m not going to die! There’s no way I can die! I won’t meet my end in a place like this! I’ll shoulder the souls of those guys that died, and even win against you!” (Barts)

Ahh, you really haven’t changed have you, Barts.

You’ve always been shouting that confusing megalomania with those sparkling, passionate eyes since the past.

Us ten-year-olds from back then got bigger and are now able to stand in a place where we can influence the world.

Even if we don’t know why we were born into this world, there’s no way I can just spit at the world and say it’s worthless like this guy.

“Kuhahahaha, look. That’s Barts. In fantasy terminology, he’s what you would call a champion or a hero, isn’t he? He was my favourite brat, and it was fun making fun of him all the time.” (Velt)

I say that to Kagami, whose head is stuck in the ground.

Without even budging, Kagami just stayed silent.

“If Barts defeats that Red-whatever here, the battle in the capital will lean towards humanity’s great allied forces in one go, you know? Forna’s not going to lose to that kind of posing brat either. Your expectations and production was completely smashed, but how do you feel? Please, tell me your thoughts on it.” (Velt)

Then, in the next moment, Kagami, who hadn’t made any reaction until now, finally moved.

“..... Fu~, ah~, that hurt. I’m awesomely nauseous.” (Mackey)

He suddenly rose up from the ground and somersaulted multiple times at high speed, then started stretching.

“Weeell, I don’t really care? I’m fine as long as I can have fun and in the first

place, I'm not interested in who wins the war." (Mackey)

"Hah, they call that talking back." (Velt)

Did he recover? His mouth is still talking more or less normally. However, either way, I need to end this battle since I don't know what he's going to do.

"Not really. From the start, I would've been happy as long as it amused me. Ah, actually, if you want, I can kill you, play with the pieces of your dead body and show it in the reflection in the sky for you? They'll probably just think a cyclops did it, so humanity's anger will reach its highest point. Wouldn't princess Forna take the initiative to massacre all the demons? How about it, isn't it an awesomely good idea?" (Mackey)

"Kuhahahaha, that's an awesomely impossible idea." (Velt)

"You think? As long as they're given an excuse, humans start wars really easily, so I'll try it out." (Mackey)

"That's not it. In the first place, a playboy like you can't kill me, which is why I said it's impossible." (Velt)

"..... Aaahahahaha, geez~, you talk back an awesome amount too, or rather..... like, you're seriously annoying. Just go die already." (Mackey)

He showed it for the first time. His threatening, low voice. This guy might've really not cared about how the war turned out. But the one unexpected part was that I showed up. He probably didn't want me, who knew his old self, to find any more faults in him, and got seriously irritated.

"You unexpectedly showed your true character pretty easily. Well, that's just the type of person you are after all. No matter how much you act crazy and try to provoke people, you look like a small thing, compared to Barts and Forna who are the real thing." (Velt)

"Haa~, I'm just going to stop talking. I'm going to stop screwing around too. I'll just kill you already." (Mackey)

"Just try it. I've been super super mad since a long time ago." (Velt)

At that moment, our offence and defence in zero gravity started again.
Kagami attacked using gravity and zero gravity.
I attacked, regardless of what gravity I'm under.

"Gravity field!" (Mackey)

"Fuwa fuwa panic!" (Velt)

If Kagami uses gravity magic, I use a fuwa fuwa technique to jolt Kagami and interrupt him to make him unable to concentrate on his magic.

On the other hand, if I use a fuwa fuwa technique to hit him with boulders, stones or my batons, Kagami uses zero gravity to negate the damage.

That surpassed a simple fist fight and was a battle of nerves that used the surrounding items, the opponent's clothes and everything.

The one that ends this, will be the one that can exceed the opponent's expectations at the end.

In that case,

"Here I go!" (Velt)

"Hahaha, there's no way some awesome suicide attack from the front would work without any scheme....." (Mackey)

"Fuwa fuwa falling flat!" (Velt)

Did you think all I could do was spin and float you?

If I feel like it, I can pull on your feet or shoes to me, so that you fall over, onto your back.

"Cra-.....!" (Mackey)

I made a chance, so there's no way I'll let him use magic.

I'll make him take a blow while he's fallen over in front of me.

Where? Stomach, crotch or should I smash his arm?

No.....

"Don't keep your panicking face hidden forever..... show me your bare face!" (Velt)

Aiming for the face of the costume in front of me, I hit it with a soccer ball kick.

Mackey Mouse's head goes flying in the skies of the capital.

Chapter 83: Can't bear it

The red-hot fighting spirit finally melted the indestructible power.

“I, impossible! My strongest strike was..... melted! What is this, what is the power of these flames!” (Redrock)

“Uoooooooooooooooooooooh!” (Barts)

Barts roars as his flame sword destroys Redrock’s metal rod, that could smash anything into pieces.

He used the power that comes from overcoming your limits. This is what tenacity really is.

“This is, the eeend!” (Barts)

“..... u.....” (Redrock)

The finishing strike is a downwards swing.

What did Redrock do then, when he was completely defenceless?

All the power in his body had already been drained.

So, without resisting, he just looked up at Barts with a strong gaze.

“Once again, I will ask your name.” (Redrock)

At that moment, the temperature of the red flames became polished, turning into blue flames and engulfed Redrock together with Barts’ strongest slash.

“Barts of the roaring flames. That’s my name.....” (Barts)

“..... Splendid.....” (Redrock)

In the end, he didn’t raise a cry of death agony, but he praised his enemy. The words at the end of that life and death battle crossed over the obstructing wall of races and resounded throughout the battlefield.

“You were..... a guy like a hot flame too, Redrock.” (Barts)

While staring at Redrock, who was subliming after being bisected and engulfed in beautiful flames, Barts gave a clear answer. And then, he shouted to the battlefield, to the empire, to the world and to the

sky.

“Vice chief of the one-eyed demon unit, Redrock, has been defeated!” (Barts)

“““““Ooooooooooooooooooooooooooh!”“““““

Although they’re still in the middle of a war, humanity’s great allied forces raise a victory cheer.

That was a stunning upset that the whole world hadn’t expected, and was the moment when the name[Barts of the Roaring Flames]became famous worldwide.

“Uoooo, vice chief Redrock.....”

“Redrock-sama was.....”

There are still plenty of Redrock’s high cyclops subordinates. If they reorganize themselves, there are still plenty of troops that can fight. However, half of them had already dropped their weapons and were in a trance. That goes to show how great of an existence the warrior called Redrock was to the cyclopes.

“However, it isn’t over yet! We still, we still have Ragaia-sama with us!”

However, some of the cyclopes still haven’t given up. Their eyes say there’s still hope left.

“Haa, haa, haa, Ragaia, huh..... nah, that won’t happen.” (Barts)
“Wha-!”
“After all, who do you think is fighting Ragaia? She’s our princess Forna you know?” (Barts)

Barts denies the High Cyclopes that said Ragaia can lead them to victory. However, the High Cyclopes immediately flared up at that.

“What did you say! You bastards don’t understand how amazing Ragaia-sama is! People like you wouldn’t be able to surpass Ragaia-sama’s darkness, who fought day after day in that hell without any blood relationships in the royalty, in those days of deep sorrow and despair!”

“That’s right, Ragaia-sama won’t lose! Because he was detested by demon

king-sama, he was constantly sent to severe, inescapable situations, but he overcame all of them! After repeatedly crossing through inescapable situations, he advanced up in the fierce Maakai Demon Kingdom army and was finally recognized by all cyclopes, climbing up to become a champion! The world he's seen is different to you bastards!"

Overcoming his severe life, he finally obtained his existence, as a half-cyclops prince.

The cyclopes are shouting, betting everything on him as their last hope. However, despite listening to that kind of story, Barts' eyebrows didn't move a single bit.

"Yeah, we might've not lived lives of deep sadness and cruelty like Ragaia. But even so, I know. Princess Forna is the one that will win." (Barts)

"Wha, what are you jesting!"

"Did you know this? Princess Forna is unexpectedly really simple. She wants to show her good points in front of the man she loves since she wants to show off. She's just a normal girl." (Barts)

"Hah? What are you trying to say with that stupid story! There's no way that kind of woman could surpass Ragaia-sama!"

"You really don't get it, do you. It's been five years, five whole years. The dumb couple that was all over each other, flirting day after day, enough for the citizens to get shocked, reunited after five years. Velt's watching. So, to show off her grown-up self, princess Forna can't lose." (Barts)

Everyone has different motivations to make them fight. For money, for fame, for justice, for a great cause, for the people they love and among them, there are people that just simply like to fight too. Therefore, no matter what the reason is, if your motivation can be at its peak.....

"! Wha, what is this sound!"

"Oi, look at the skies! Darkness and light are clashing!"

"Ho, how divine....."

Everyone forgot about fighting and just looked up at the sky in a daze, to see

the two people clashing, one clad in dark aura and the other clad in light, while the violent roaring of lighting continued going on. They were freely rushing through the sky, repeating offence and defence.

And then, everyone became surprised.

“..... I, impossible.....”

“No way.....”

There was a dull sound of a strike. A gouging sound, that made you get goosebumps. The sound of meat being crushed.

“Wha, what in the world.....”

A raw sound reverberated, completely contrary to how divine it looked. Then, Forna and Ragaia continue fighting, despite the scattering fresh blood. Seeing that battle situation in front of their eyes, the cyclopes raised voices of surprise as chills ran down their backs.

“Pri, prince Ragaia is..... being one-sidedly pushed down!”

If I were to say it in a few words..... he was getting beaten up.

“Gahah, ah, guh, haa, haa, haa, haa..... kuh! How dare youuu!” (Ragaia)

“..... Too slow.” (Forna)

“Gahhh!” (Ragaia)

While evading the hand slashes of Ragaia, whose clad in black clothing, Forna, whose clad in lightning, drives palm strikes into him to counterattack. With a swollen face and a broken nose, Ragaia just kept saying, “impossible,” while showing severe agitation.

“Wh, why..... is there such a difference in power..... who in the world, are.....” (Ragai)

To that question, Forna boldly answered with a dignified expression.

“The wife of the number one baddest guy in the wheat fields of this world.”
(Forna)

..... You wasted it..... is what everyone would have retorted if she wasn't this overwhelming.

“U..... certainly, you are strong. I understand that the title of the Ten Heroes of Light is not just for show. However..... I will not lose! I overcame these kinds of inescapable situations with my comrades many, many times!”
(Ragaia)

“You have definitely passed through points between life or death, have been blessed by capable comrades and your own natural talent is splendid too. But you do not have enough. You still do not have enough love!” (Forna)

This will probably become the last battle to decide the future of this war.

Right now, the past doesn't matter and their feelings don't matter, the one that wins just wins.

And, I already know.

Forna will win. For sure.

Therefore, to let her be freely proud of her win, I need to do something about this guy.

“Ahaha, your wife is awesome~, Asakura-kun. I can understand why you would accept this world with a wife like that~. But you know, they were talking passionately about wanting to show their good points, but in the end, what they're doing is just war and killing! Killing each other in war? A proud battle? Haa? There was even an idiot that died saying 'splendid' in a one to one fight, where you could die. Aren't they stupid, 'cause like, if they die, their race might get massacred, right? Hey hey, Asakura-kun. Between me and them, who's more awesomely crazy? This really is an awesomely shitty world. Since a brat in her teens is saying that with such a sharp face, it's even harder to handle.”
(Mackey)

Seeing Kagami's face under his costume, I couldn't make out any words.

——That's seriously awesome, Asakura-kun!

Even now, Kagami still talks to me in that screwing around, frivolous way. But only this moment made me think back to the past.

It made me feel somewhat nostalgic about Kagami's appearance from high school.

“Kagami..... you.....” (Velt)

I'm not interested in what kind of life Kagami has gone through until now. However, he probably went through agony and despair that he couldn't do anything about.

"Is that your real face? Or is it some kind of mask? What the hell happened."
(Velt)

I kicked Mackey Mouse's costume head to show Kagami's face, but what is this?

To my question, Kagami answered while still lying down.

"Kufufufu, after being reborn into this world, I didn't have my old name, face, family, connections or anything. This face was made by plastic surgery..... I tracked down doctors and magicians that could manipulate the flesh and face shape throughout the world, to make this face over time by just relying on my past life's memories." (Mackey)

The person standing there was Kagami.
It's not his face that he had after being reborn into this world.
Kagami's face of when he was my classmate, was right there.

"Kagami, you couldn't accept this world that much, huh." (Velt)

Even though he's already over thirty, I can see some slight innocent and childishness of a teen.

He has short, brown hair and an ear piercing. It's Kagami's old face, that's been delicately reproduced.

"Fufu, ufufufufufu, don't make such a pitiful face, Asakura-kun. It can't be helped. After being reborn into this world, my face was kinda good looking, but no matter how many times I get reborn, the time when I was Kagami, a highschooler, will always be the best after all." (Mackey)

I got flustered from seeing him unable to make a clear distinction between lives, just clinging onto the past.

"Don't think that everyone can make a clear distinction between this world like you guys can. Like, in the first place, only shut-in otakus that couldn't accomplish anything great in their past lives would be happy about reincarnating into a fantasy world after all." (Mackey)

“..... You.....” (Velt)

“In my opinion, you guys that easily made a distinction and are living carefreely, are awesomely more pitiful.” (Mackey)

No, that’s not true..... no matter how you think about it, the pitiful one is.....

“You really are a miserable guy. You can go die on your own while holding those feelings and cursing the world.” (Velt)

He’s too pitiful. I can’t watch this anymore.

“Hmm, then what about you? Say for example in high school..... you worked hard to win Mina-chan’s heart and finally became a couple with Kamino Mina, but died immediately after, restarting as a baby in another world? You would only be able to think that this world is an awesome shithead!” (Mackey)

That’s true..... it’s just as you say.

I was the same in the past.

“Yeah, that’s right. It’s just as you say. There was a time when I thought this world was a piece of shit too. I wasn’t as much of a riajuu as you were in my past life though.” (Velt)

I couldn’t fit in with this fantasy world.

My blood-related parents just looked like strangers.

In this world where no one knows Asakura Ryuuma, where nothing that I knew was here, I felt hopeless.

“Why I was reincarnated. Why I recalled Asakura Ryuuma’s memories. I was always thinking about that. But you know, encountering people changed me. It’s not like I was a riajuu like you, but even so, I was somehow able to make a distinction. I decided to live as Velt Jeeha.” (Velt)

That’s right.

If I was unlucky, I would’ve ended up just like him.

To be honest, the only difference between us was that he got unlucky.

“You’re miserable. Your life that was more satisfying than anyone’s, was suddenly knocked down to the very bottom, and although we would’ve turned out like you with just a slight change, we’re looking at you like a pitiful existence..... that’s the type of pathetic guy you are.” (Velt)

If sensei, Forna and the others weren't here, I might've been doing the same thing as this guy.

Thinking about it like that, I just can't bear it at all.

"You've already gone into an area where you can't come back from. There's no way you can be saved. So, if I can't save you..... I'll end everything for you right here and now." (Velt)

Since this guy is pitiful and nothing can be done about him..... and because I know that he can't be saved as long as he continues living in this world..... I at least want to put him at ease.

"Fu, fufufu, I didn't think the day would come where you would pity me. A useless delinquent shouldn't look down and pity people! Why is some guy that was basically scum in his past life, making a sharp face and trying to be cool! Who do you think you are!" (Mackey)

Yeah, that's true.

Who do I think..... I am.....

Sorry sensei, I can't save this guy.

Chapter 84: Bring to an end

The darkness is trying to swallow up the light.

“U-, why! Why is my power not working! Why is this happening to us, who have overcome many formidable enemies and harsh life-risking battles, against a peace idiot who just talks about weak things like affection and love!” (Ragaia)

Ragaia looks like he wants to say it’s clearly unreasonable.
The battle between them was already one-sided.

“Impossible, she, she’s strong! She’s too strong! Ragaia-sama is being this one-sidedly beaten!”

“Golden Comet Forna. To think she was this much of a monster.....”

Ragaia’s power and magic couldn’t reach Forna anymore.
The prodigious power in her that made her become the youngest general in history and gain the title of the Ten Heroes of Light, isn’t just for show.

“Why! Just because her lover came to the battlefield, why does that make such a difference in power!” (Ragaia)

His posing face is full of dissatisfaction and anger.
However, Forna smiled and wrapped up that anger.

“Why have you not realized that love is the power that changes the world?”
(Forna)

“What!” (Ragaia)

“Because there was love, I could endure years of pain and overcame every inescapable situation, swearing that I definitely cannot die.” (Forna)

The world will change if there’s love. And, it’ll be saved.
I’ve heard that kind of catchphrase before.
I laughed at it scornfully in Asakura Ryuuma’s time, but now I can’t laugh that much about it.

“Stop joking! In reality, you can’t overcome things with such weak feelings! People who lived by depending on others can’t change the world!” (Ragaia)

“That is because you do not know love! You cannot change the world without knowing love!” (Forna)

Putting aside whether I’ve changed or not, that brat is..... pitiful.....

“Ai Rai Velt!(Love Lightning World)” (Forna)

At that moment, the condensed lightning Forna fired, rained on Ragaia. However, after taking that lightning, far from showing anguish, Ragaia’s expression became refreshed as if the darkness in his heart cleared away.

“———! Thi, this is..... there’s no pain..... my heart.....”

(Ragaia)

“This is a technique to tell the opponent my feelings, through the use of the electrical signal in lightning. It is a technique that conveys what I am thinking and what I am feeling directly to their hearts, rather than through words.”

(Forna)

“..... What, is this, this warmth..... these happy feelings.....” (Ragaia)

“To tell him how happy I feel from just thinking about him..... or how much strength I get from loving him..... I developed this technique, as he is dishonest.” (Forna)

Ragaia probably wouldn’t understand it, since he obtained power through cursing the world without knowing love.

He wouldn’t understand how something like that can save someone’s life.

However, for Ragaia, who had only lived a life full of harshness and despair, making him know about it was the most effective way to weaken his fighting spirit.

“..... Good grief..... getting worked up over this is silly..... princess Forna.” (Ragaia)

Ragaia showed an expression with no regrets that looked like he had done everything he could and finally collapsed.

Many cyclopes shed tears and many members of humanity’s great allied forces scorched this sight into their eyes, despite being in a sea of blood, waiting for Forna’s next words.

The conclusion of a one to one fight between generals, decides the end of the war, no matter what the situation of the war is.

She says the concluding words, to the capital, to the sky, to humanity and to the world.

""""Uooooooooooooooooooooooooo!!!!""""

Even without looking at the reflection, I can tell they won through just the voices.

Which is exactly why I have to settle this fight.

“Kuh, haa, haa, haa.” (Mackey)

Controlling and tormenting his opponent through gravity is his way of fighting in this world.

“Haa, haa, haa, u-, Gravity Knuckle!” (Mackey)

“Guhoo!” (Mackey)

“Guaaaaaaa, ow, tsuaaaaa!” (Mackey)

He's always been teasing, mocking and laughing at other people from a high place where no one can reach him. That's his position in this world.

“Kuhahahaha, you’re really doing your best. Well, it was your mistake to talk

to a classmate all alone without preparing any subordinates or traps.” (Velt)
“Haa, haa, haa, haa.....” (Mackey)

Because the head of his costume came off, I can see his face distorting in agony and fatigue.

Well, I do have some hesitation in my heart to beat up Kagami’s face from his high school days, but I can’t just say that and not do it after all.

“What’s wrong, I’m going to punch you every time you stand up and make that cocky face you know? Why don’t you just take the chance to turn around three times, bark, prostrate yourself and then lick my shoes? My pity might actually save you.” (Velt)

“Fuu, fuu, fu~..... gravity magic, Gravity Field.” (Mackey)

“Oh! Fuwa fuwa complete reversal!” (Velt)

“Tsuo, gah!” (Mackey)

If he stands up and tries to do something, I’ll float his feet and turn him over. Over and over and over again, I threw his back onto the ground, so Kagami is already worn-out.

However, I won’t forgive him. Until his heart completely breaks, I’ll keep doing it.

“U, damn iiit!” (Mackey)

“Hohou, you’ve finally decided to go with that, huh. But can you even brawl properly?” (Velt)

He finally snapped, huh. Without even using magic, he ran at me, trying to punch me.

Even though there’s no way he could win against me in a plain fist fight.

“Rah! Sei! Rah!” (Mackey)

I knew it. He’s only ever fought battles that don’t have his life on the line. Even if he has the experience of killing someone before, he’s never fought a life-abrading battle.

I slip past his clumsy punch and hit him with a low kick.

“O, ow!” (Mackey)

I low kick his other leg too.

The instant his guard drops from pain, I hit him with a high kick.
And then, I drive a front kick into the pit of his stomach as he's staggering.

"Byuu, ue, ah, gaa....." (Mackey)

"Oya oya, a human who's repeated nasty things over and over again shouldn't be throwing up." (Velt)

"A, Asakura..... u, haa, haa." (Mackey)

"For a crazy playboy that has no guts, you're holding on pretty well. But what are you working so hard for? You don't have anything important to you after all." (Velt)

"Shu, shut up! You guys are the crazy ones! I'm just having fun watching war movies and action movies! But you're crazy for actually being in those wars and battles happily!" (Mackey)

This time, I kick his bare face with a soccer ball kick.
The feeling of breaking his jawbone and the response from crushing his nose remained in my leg.

"Gyaaaaaaaaaaa, guaaaa, go, goa, ahhh!" (Mackey)

"Oi oi oi, there's no point arguing about who's crazy at this point in time. There's only one thing you can do if you want to deny me. The one that wins in a fight is correct. That's the one and only rule in fist fights that this Japan and this world share." (Velt)

"A, Ashaku..... Asakura~!" (Mackey)

"I don't care about your circumstances or how much of a riajuu you were in your past life. I'm not interested in that. Not just me, no one in the whole world is interested in that." (Velt)

His eyes are warped as if he's going to curse me to death. Although he's about to pass out from the intense pain, he just barely endured it through anger. However, that will end soon too.

That's because he doesn't have a single thing that he would die to protect or can support him.

"You chose it by yourself. There's no place for you in this second life of yours. You don't have any allies either. No one's going to open their hearts to you." (Velt)

“Ah? Aaaaaaaaah? Like I care about that! I awesomely don’t give a crap!”
(Mackey)

“Like I said, no one will try to understand why you broke this much. Even if they believed in your story about reincarnating, no one will sympathize with you right now.” (Velt)

“Just cut it out and die alreadyyyyyyyyyyy! Maximum Gravity Output! Super High Gravity Field!” (Mackey)

And finally, he even ran out of mana.

“M..... my, my mana..... isn, isn’t coming out.” (Mackey)

I said nothing at all. I just quietly grabbed Kagami’s collar and punched him down again.

“That’s why..... the only ones that could understand your feelings..... should’ve just been us.” (Velt)

“U..... Asakura.....” (Mackey)

“Even if you didn’t do it yourself, you’re the reason why Miyamoto’s family died. Even now, Forna and the others are close to death. I can’t feel anything for you anymore.” (Velt)

It was at that moment. Kagami’s eyes, that had been glaring at me as if shooting me to death, suddenly returned to being gentle eyes.

All the power in his body relaxed and tried to collapse.

However, that was only for a second.

Kagami immediately stood up again and jumped at me, mustering the last of his strength.

“In that case..... if you don’t want to save me, then just kill meeeeeeeee!”
(Mackey)

And then, the man who mourned the death of his first life from the bottom of his heart desired death from himself at last.

To the end, you really were a pitiful guy.

“Fuwa fuwa panic.” (Velt)

I vibrate him at high speed in all directions. This is a technique that knocks

away the opponent's consciousness in one go.

Kagami, who was already being reckless, had his heart broken completely from that right now.

However, the words Kagami muttered at the very last moment before his consciousness was completely blown off, remained in my ears.

“..... You're seriously awesome..... Asakura-kun.” (Mackey)

With those final words, Kagami fainted and collapsed to the ground.

“Stupid idiot.....” (Velt)

A complete conclusion.

However, although I fought with all sorts of people since coming to this world, this is my first time experiencing such an empty victory that I gained nothing and didn't even feel a sense of accomplishment from.

Chapter 85: Simple and clear

When we went on the field trip, I saw Kamino's corpse just before I died and despaired.

I actually wanted to talk with her more.
There were a lot of things I was embarrassed to say.
I always wanted to say thanks, and the words 'I love you. Go out with me.'

"I regretted not doing that. I couldn't accept this world. So, it's not like I don't understand your pain." (Velt)

While sitting down against a large tree in the forest next to Kagami's fainted body, I mutter that.

Kagami isn't waking up.

In this world, it wouldn't be wrong to deal the finishing blow to him right here and now.

This world is different to the one we were in before.

Even if I kill him in this situation, the crime of murder wouldn't apply to me.

And yet..... even though I said I'll kill him over and over again.....

"Is that..... so....." (Mackey)

Kagami suddenly lets out a voice.

"Tch, you're still alive, huh." (Velt)

"Ahaha, that's funny coming from you~, you couldn't kill me after all..... ahh ow, I awesomely pushed myself." (Mackey)

That's right. I couldn't kill him.

Regardless of how much I wanted to murder him, in the end, I wasn't able to kill him.

I still have the chance to do it now. If I want to end his life, I can do it.

"It's fine, like that. Asakura-kun..... you're fine like that....." (Mackey)

"Kagami....." (Velt)

He probably doesn't have any more stamina to pull any tricks.

Kagami continues speaking while slowly getting his body up.

“Hey, Asakura-kun, I~..... looking at me by using this world as the norm, am I really that mad~?” (Mackey)

“Haa?” (Velt)

“You know~, all I did was prepare the situation and write the plot, right? It’s the other guys that actually carried that out. Everyone kidnapped, performed slave trade, killed Miyamocchan’s family and killed and raped the High Elves while smiling. It was the same when I was trading with the rich humans at Shiromu. They were playing with living things out of their own will. This war is the same too. I was the one that incited it, but it was ultimately prince Ragaia’s own will to start the war. In this world, fifteen-year-old brats hold weapons and get called champions, but from our world, that’s basically the same as a doting parent who’s crying proudly thinking that her son went to where god is after that son dragged people into an explosion from suicide bombing. Why am I the only one..... that gets called mad?” (Mackey)

Rather than a complaint, it seemed like he was testing me with that question. Is he trying to defeat me in an argument by thrusting the inhumaneness and common sense of the world, after I talked shit about him?

“That reminds me, although the content was different, I got asked a question by Samejima and couldn’t answer him either.” (Velt)

“From Samecchi?” (Mackey)

“Yeah. He said that he couldn’t do anything about his extreme thoughts as a demon king, of killing all humans..... and that he’s gone to a place where he can’t turn back anymore.” (Velt)

“Hm~m..... then maybe he was the same as me? Since we both can’t turn back anymore.” (Mackey)

“I wonder. You both have your own sides, but I..... don’t want to say he’s the same as you.” (Velt)

“Ahhahhahha, don’t dodge the question. If you can’t answer, then just say that. Well, if it was simple enough that you could answer it, war would’ve already disappeared from the world. You really are still inexperienced..... only enjoying this shitty world from the outside..... you’re awesomely inexperienced.” (Mackey)

Well yeah, there's no way I could answer that. I honestly don't know. There's no way I, who decided to not participate in war five years ago and just watch over the future of the world, could reach the answer to that. Surely even Forna and the other heroes of this world wouldn't be able to reach it. However, even so, if I had to say a few words.....

"Hmph, even after all that whining, you really are a worthless guy." (Velt)
"Oya?" (Mackey)
"Like, isn't it too convenient for you to bring out common sense and give a shitty lecture after cursing this world and living however you wanted to?" (Velt)
"Geez~, you're being too blunt!" (Mackey)

Even after the day Samejima died, I've been doing nothing but regretting. Because I regretted that day, I tried to save Miyamoto to prove that, but the result was questionable. Miyamoto seemed somewhat refreshed, but I personally don't feel like I did anything for him. And now, far from trying to save Kagami, I don't even feel like saving him. No matter what I, an idiot who has the least chance of being saved, do, everything ends up being incomplete, so I fell into a bit of self-loathing again.

"So, leaving that aside, what are you going to do from now? Well, you'll probably get caught and executed though." (Velt)
"Haha, I'm obviously going to run, don't say such awesomely scary things~. Besides, I still have my useful pawn Maney-chan and Love and Money. I can enjoy myself as much as I want to. I'll probably refrain from working at the crime scenes for a while though." (Mackey)
"U-, have you still not learnt your lesson! Seriously ending your life here is probably for the....." (Velt)
"It can't be helped. For some reason, I got a second life, after all, so rather than reflecting on it and dying, enjoying myself and dying sounds wa~y better." (Mackey)

Trying to punch this guy one more time, my hand had already started going towards him before I realized it. However, he disappeared from my sight, even though he shouldn't be able to

move from his injuries.

“Wha-..... he disappeared.....” (Velt)

No, he didn’t disappear.

Someone rescued Kagami.

Who?

At that moment, I heard a voice messing with me from right above me.

“I’m going to protect Mackey! I haven’t received my wages yet too!” (Maney)

“Waaao, you came at an awesome timing! As expected of my Maney-chan!”
(Mackey)

Maney Mouse! Why is she here!

“You’re the one Ura..... what happened to Ura?” (Velt)

“Geez, stop it already! Princess Ura scary! Scary! Maney ran away.” (Maney)

No way did something happen to Ura!

“Yo-, you! What the hell did you do to Ura! Answer me! I’ll kill you oi!” (Velt)

As I spontaneously shouted that.....

“Makyokushin Karate, Midair Kick!” (Ura)

“Uwa, uwaaaaaaaaaaaa, ruuuun!” (Maney)

“Tch, again..... fast!” (Ura)

There was a flash from behind Maney.

What, she’s totally fine..... on top of that, she’s uninjured.

“Yo..... Ura.” (Velt)

“Velt! It seems you were fine!” (Ura)

“Yeah. Rather, what happened to you? Weren’t you fighting her?” (Velt)

“U, umu, about that..... she ran from place to place with some strange ability, so I couldn’t hit a single decisive blow.....” (Ura)

Well, thinking about it carefully, there’s no way Ura would lose to a joke character like Maney.

However, considering Kagami still keeps her by his side, he probably has some kind of aim behind it.

“Hee~, you’re awesome~, Ura-chan. Karate..... nice~, I can feel Samecchi’s

dying wish.” (Mackey)

“..... This is the true face of Mackey Mouse, huh. It seems you were done in by Velt, but..... do you know about my father?” (Ura)

“I guess~. Like, we’re basically old friends. Along with Velt-kun too.” (Mackey)

At that time, Kagami started talking to Ura with deep interest while being held by Maney.

Then, he showed a broad, unpleasant grin.

“You’re pretty mad yourself too.” (Mackey)

“What?” (Ura)

“Your family and country were destroyed by humans, and you guys destroyed human countries too. And yet, how can you make that kind of face while moving with Velt-kun?” (Mackey)

Tch, this guy is really.....

“Kagami, do you seriously want me to show you hell again?” (Velt)

I point my hand towards Kagami, but right at that moment, Ura caught my wrist with an unconcerned face.

“Ura.....?” (Velt)

“I don’t mind, Velt. I am no longer someone who falls for these types of provocations.” (Ura)

Ura smiled with composure and pointed her finger at Kagami with a snap.

“Let me answer you. You ask why am I together with Velt? I fell in love with him, so that kind of thing can’t be helped!” (Ura)

“..... Wa~o.” (Mackey)

“Even if Velt was a demi-human, I would still have fallen in love with Velt. That’s right. It is not about this and that of humans, I just fell in love with Velt, who was coincidentally a human.” (Ura)

I didn’t see that coming..... since it was too much of an answer, giving a tsukkomi just seems idiotic.

However, it might’ve actually been a lot more effective than a theoretical argument.

After all, questions from Kagami is just banter that doesn’t have any deep

meaning behind it.

And then, I remembered the words I said to Hanabi in the past.

——Hanabi, the demons and humans and whatever your neechan was talking to you about, doesn't matter at all. You love your niichan and neechan. Niichan and neechan also love you. The world is fine like that.

That's right, it's fine like that.

"That's how it is, Kagami. Regardless of the world you've seen until now or how the current state of society is, my world is fine like that." (Velt)

After all, I'm not interested in common sense Kagami talks about at all.

"You really are lucky, Asakura-kun. You were blessed with encounters."
(Mackey)

"Yeah, I was lucky. All the women I met are a hundred times better women than Maney-chan!" (Velt)

Yeah, that's right.

"Fuwa fuwa merry-go-round!" (Velt)

It doesn't matter who comes at me, if I just rotate Maney, who's wearing a costume, it's the end.

That's what I thought. However.....

"H, huh?" (Velt)

It was a misfire. Huh?

I tried it one more time just in case. However, there wasn't any change to the two.

What does this mean?

At that moment, Kagami burst into laughter.

"Ahahahahaha, unlucky, how sad, come again next week! This is Maney-chan's ability~." (Mackey)

"What?" (Velt)

"She's a mutant that can nullify every single magic in this world, a person with the[Magic Cancel (Magic Nullifier)]ability." (Mackey)

"Hah? Geh!" (Velt)

“She was originally merchandise that was going to be sold, but I bought her without putting her on auction! My Maney-chan is awesomely useful, right?”
(Mackey)

Magic Cancel? Does a power like that which literally breaks the rules exist? Well, even though I tried to use magic like usual, it didn’t activate after all.

“Wai-, wait a minute..... then.....” (Velt)
“Exactly. I defeat the enemies with magic, while Maney-chan nullifies all the enemies’ attacks. That’s our strategy for winning. How is it? Awesome, right?”
(Mackey)

No, it, it’s way too awesome!
Wait a minute, then how should we.....

“Leave it to me, Velt!” (Ura)
“Oh-.....” (Velt)
“Makyokushin Karate, Straight Punch Spirit Cannon!” (Ura)

Nevermind.
A shell of hardened energy came out from the fist Ura thrust to the sky.
Maney and Kagami dodged that shelling in a panic.

“Ueeeeen, Mackey, this is why I don’t like her~, princess Ura doesn’t use any magic after all.” (Maney)
“Ooh~, that’s pretty awesome. Maney-chan can’t defend against bare physical ability and sword technique! This is the awesomely worst compatibility!”
(Mackey)

I see. If she can nullify magic, then all you have to do is just not use magic to defeat her.
It’s probably an extremely rare ability, but her opponent was too terrible for her.
Then, dealing with these guys with Ura here should be.....

“Kagami, it seems like this is the end.” (Velt)
“Surrender obediently. The majority of the Maakai Demon Kingdom have already surrendered and been captured. Do you think you can get away from us?” (Ura)

At least turn yourself in.
I don't feel like killing him, but I don't feel like letting him go either.
I'll leave the empire and humanity's great allied forces to chose his fate.
Well, I don't care whether he gets executed or gets life imprisonment though.
I won't give him any pity.
However.....

"Ah~, this is an awesome pinch. I should've brought the management if I knew it was going to turn out like this~." (Mackey)
"You can't give up, Mackey! You always said it right, Mackey? Your life ends the moment you give up, right?" (Maney) (TI Note: A spin on Anzai Mitsuyoshi from Slam Dunk's quote apparently.)

That asshole..... he messed up the wise saying that everyone in Japan would know.....
However, what's going on? Even though they shouldn't have any more tricks to pull, what is this composure I feel from Kagami and Maney.....

"It can't be helped. I guess we have to use our trump card....." (Mackey)
"That's the spirit, Mackey!" (Maney)

Trump card?
Tch, what is this damn asshole trying to do in this situation.
Showing an evil smile, Kagami raises his hand to the sky.
An unpleasant atmosphere is hanging in the air.
What's he trying to do?

"Now, I'll show you! This is my trump card, it's awesome so don't get too surpr———" (Mackey)

However, at that moment.

"That is as far as you go!" (Forna)

Someone circled around their backs at high speed with a lightning flash and struck both of them down together.
That person was Forna, who had been having a struggle to the death against the enemy general until just before.

"Fufufu, it seems Ura was shouting something about love, but please do not

forget that I am the legal wife.” (Forna)

“Tch, even though I wanted to show my good side. Rather, since when did you become the legal wife?” (Ura)

“From ten years ago.” (Forna)

“You became the ex-wife five years ago though.” (Ura)

Furthermore, she’s super energetic.

“Guh! Ararararara, even the legal wife came too.” (Mackey)

“Owwwwwww, uueeeeeeen, Mackey, what should we do~.” (Maney)

That was something that Ura, Maney, Kagami and I personally hadn’t expected.

However, regardless of Maney’s ability and Kagami’s trump card, the war has completely ended at this point.

Chapter 86: An adult kiss

Kagami and Maney obediently got caught. Following Forna, who rushed to them, humanity's great allied forces surrounded them too, so they probably resigned themselves and got arrested.

Will there still be a trial? Or is it going to be a death penalty with no arguing? I don't know how it'll turn out, but this will probably be the last time I can properly talk to Kagami.

That's right, it should've been the last time.....

"Nyahaha, well, it can't be helped. I'll go eat some stinky meals for a while. I guess this is just another life experience." (Mackey)

"Hey, Mackey~, am I going too? What about shopping?" (Maney)

"Oh~, Maney-chan you valuable thing~. Let's go buy heaps once we get out of this corrupt world." (Mackey)

What is this composure?

"Take them away. Make sure to pay full attention to them." (Forna)

"Yes! I understand!" (Soldier)

After being ordered by Forna, Kagami was taken away while being strongly bound by chains.

Even though I'm seeing off a back that I shouldn't ever see again, I couldn't help but feel an unpleasant premonition at this time.

Am I going to meet Kagami again in the near future?

That was the kind of premonition I felt.

"Forna-sama, I would like to ask about how we are going to deal with them after this..... Muguh-." (Soldier)

A young soldier taking Kagami away tried to ask Forna about what they should do now, but their mouth was covered by a huge arm.

"Alright, just keep it at that." (?)

"Muguh-, ah, thi, this is, Galva-sama!" (Soldier)

The one that appeared was Galva.
It seems he had quite an intense battle with the cyclopes, but he only had some wounds and no serious injuries that stood out.
I'm glad he's fine.

"Yo, Galva, it's been a while." (Velt)
"Velt-kun....." (Galva)

I give Galva a light, reuniting greeting. Then, while staring at me, Galva's eyes suddenly became moist and in the next moment, he hugged me tightly while crying.

Wait, this hurts!

"Uooooooooon, Velt-kuuuuun!" (Galva)
"Ow, uoooo, owwww, geez, let go of me!" (Velt)
"Splendid! You have become splendid, Velt-kun! Ooooh, you have completely become a splendid man!" (Galva)
"We-, well, we haven't met for five years after all." (Velt)
"Ahh, ahh! When you came running to us, we were so happy! Really, thank you, Velt-kun." (Galva)

This is embarrassing. To be honest, all I did was beating up Kagami and I didn't do anything that stood out.

Rather, let go of me, it's hot, your armour's hard and it hurts..... is what I was about to say, but Galva suddenly let go of my hand.

"Well then, Velt-kun. I wanted to speak to you more in our reunion, but we can put it off for later." (Galva)
"Hah?" (Velt)

After saying that, Galva pointed to Forna who's beside me.

"Princess. For the time being, I will decide how to deal with this, guide the citizens that evacuated and give the reports. For now, please take your time and..... ah, I will make this place off limits, so please forget about your tough days just for today." (Galva)

While winking with a really happy face, Galva forcefully took the new soldiers away and left this place.

Then following him, Ura, while swelling up her cheeks with dissatisfaction,

briskly left this place too.

“.....Hmph, I’m going to meet up with Farga and the others.” (Ura)

“Oi, Ura?” (Velt)

“F, Forna! I’m just going to say this, but it’s just for today, okay! Well, since you had a five-year handicap, at least for today, or rather, it’s only for today!” (Ura)

Forna, who was told that, is blinking in surprise. However, she immediately smiled and nodded.

“.....” (Velt)

“.....” (Forna)

In the end, Forna and I were the only ones left.

I couldn’t feel anyone’s presence in the surroundings.

I feel like well~, everyone’s being tactful and considering our feelings.....

“Velt.....” (Forna)

From my side, Forna gently grasps my hand.

It’s warm. But also small. Even though our arms and legs should’ve both grown from when we were brats, touching her like this makes me think about how small she is. Even so, she’s burdened with such huge things I can’t even imagine while fighting and getting so injured, but since so many people expect things from her, she can’t throw it away or escape.

“Forna.....” (Velt)

Well then, although I grasped her hand back, what can I say to her?

It must’ve been tough?

You’ve grown?

You’ve become stronger?

It’s been a while?

You’ve become a good woman? Ah, this one is rejected.

No, I don’t need to think about it. I just have to say what I want to say.

“Forna. I wanted to see you.” (Velt)

“U-..... Vel.....t.” (Forna)

Huh? What? My body suddenly got heavier so I can’t keep my balance.....

“U, u-..... uaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaa!” (Forna)

By the time I realized it, I had fallen on my back.

Ahh, I see, Forna embraced me, huh.

I can strongly feel her will to never let me go, that there isn't even an opening.

“Ah, aaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaah! Velt, Velt, Velt!” (Forna)

Five years, huh. Of course that's long. During that time, she continuously risked her life in a world I couldn't even imagine, got all bloody and occasionally had to confront the deaths of her comrades. Was she able to cry at those times? Was she able to show her feelings? Right now, it looks like she's spilling out something she kept in for several years and is just crying.

“I, always, always, always wanted to see you, but, could not, because I, I didn't want to lose everyone, and had to fight.” (Forna)

“Yeah.” (Velt)

“Until I see Veld again, I definitely could not die..... I was always thinking, that I will definitely meet Velt again.....” (Forna)

Seeing her small body tremble and cry in my chest made me remember the past. By the time I realized it, I had been stroking her head.

Then, I realized something. There's a ribbon tying Forna's hair. It's a light blue ribbon that looks somewhat worn out, cheap and I feel like I've seen it before.....

“You, this ribbon.....” (Velt)

“Yes? Ah, this. This is my lifetime treasure.” (Forna)

I remember now. It's something I bought for her when we were brats. With the money I first earned after working at sensei's house, on a whim..... she's been taking great care of it, huh..... It's kinda like~, embarrassing or rather.....

“Every time I heard about your efforts through the newspaper or through rumours..... I thought you had already become someone that lives in a far away world.” (Velt)

“Eh? Eh! Wai, what do you mean by that! Since the past, I have never, ne~ver changed!” (Forna)

“Really~? Well, the fact that you still cry like this hasn't changed I guess.” (Velt)

“I only ever cry when it is something related to you, Velt! But although my heart has not changed, do you think I have become a good woman or whatever that you were talking about?” (Forna)

“Kuhahahaha, well, I guess your face changed a bit? Did you make any dreamy boyfriends in these five years?” (Velt)

“Velt, that was the worst, warped joke in history! Your lips are not there to make jokes, but to overlap with my lips!” (Forna)

“Ah~, stop it stop it, let alone being ten-years-old, fifteen-years-old is just out of line. That’s something that wouldn’t end as just a joke.” (Velt)

“My kisses have been serious since the past. In the first place, how many years do you think I have wanted an adult kiss that would not just end as a joke?” (Forna)

Ah, she..... closed her eyes, and is gradually getting closer.....

“Oi.” (Velt)

‘Hugya.” (Forna)

Remembering the past, I pinched Forna’s nose and twisted it.

“Ge, geez! What are you doing! It was not the kind of situation to do that!” (Forna)

“Kuhahahaha, idiot. Don’t overreach yourself, you precocious brat.” (Velt)

“Ah, how long are you going to be saying that! I am no longer a child!” (Forna)

Nah, you’re a child. Fifteen is like a middle-school student.

Velt Jeeha’s body and age are fifteen years old, but if you convert that to Asakura Ryuuma’s age, it’s different. Well, I don’t really feel that way, but since I’ve been watching over her since she was ten, she just looks like a slightly younger little sister.....

“Geez, I am not a child! So, I can do these kinds of kisses with you!” (Forna)

Ah.....

“Nn.” (Forna)

Our lips overlapped each other.

No, they didn’t just overlap.

While somewhat being nervous and also clumsy, Forna pushed her way through

my closed lips and teeth, entering a part of me.

As if twining around, as if entangling, Forna didn't separate from me.

Or rather, it took time for me to understand the situation too, so I just let her do it for a while.

I could only take in oxygen and take out carbon dioxide from my nose.

However, rather than being painful, the problem was that my heart gradually started beating faster.

“Puha..... haa, haa, haa, fuu..... I..... am no longer a child.” (Forna)

“Nn..... ye, yeah.....” (Velt)

My face is probably getting redder too, but Forna should be even more so. Even with her teary, blushing face, she showed a smile that hit my chest.

“Thank you for coming, Velt..... I love you the most in this world.”
(Forna)

The one there was no longer a precocious brat.
It was one woman.

Chapter 87: A complicated victory

I reunited with guys I've missed, and we won the war.

We should be spreading our happiness with smiles..... but we couldn't do that.

"Velt. You should not forget this scene." (Forna)

"This, how, how many people are there?" (Velt)

After enjoying my reunion with Forna, she made a serious face after some time and returned to the capital while pulling my hand.

Taken by Forna, who just silently headed to the centre of the capital from midway, we reached the plaza, where I became speechless.

Other than the huge water fountain established in the middle, it's a completely open area.

However, seeing all the stretched out people filling up that plaza took my breath away.

"Uu-, shit, shit, shit!"

"Liar! You promised me that we would graduate together! You, liar!"

"Uoooo, why! Why! Why did you have to die!"

"Hic, he, he protected me, and instead of me..... I was the one that was supposed to die!"

There are hundreds of sobbing, new soldiers. In front of my eyes, all I see are people next to the remains of new soldiers whose bodies tragically became only a shadow of their former selves.

"Humanity won, right?" (Velt)

"Yes, we won. Due to their sacrifices." (Forna)

"How many of them are there?" (Velt)

"There were around six hundred victims. We had this war result against a regular army of one of the Seven Great Demon King armies, despite our army being mostly configured of new soldiers. By tomorrow, the news of humanity's great victory should spread throughout the Humanity Continent." (Forna)

A great victory with six hundred victims?

In other words, the number of students in a whole high school died today.

“Although there are people whose bodies were played with by the cyclopes to the extent that not even any remains were left behind, I do not think it will take much time for the collation of the people that died in action.” (Forna)

Forna indifferently talks while grasping my hand. Her eyes were straightforward, without any waver.

This might be something natural to her.

She’s not the woman that was crying in my arms so much from just before.

This is probably the face of humanity’s great allied forces’ Golden Comet, Forna.

“Don’t think that the princess and we don’t care about it just because of that.” (Barts)

“This is the world that we are in right now.” (Shalt)

At that time, a voice called out to us from the back.

As I turn around, I see Barts and Shalt.

Shalt doesn’t seem to have many injuries, but Barts has bandages wrapped all around his body and it looks pretty bad.

“Barts, Shalt. Well done. You two have left behind outstanding achievements in this battle. It would not be an exaggeration to say that you both contributed to our victory, as Barts defeated a powerful general in the enemy army and Shalt splendidly led the army after the general’s death. I am looking forward to the medal awarding.” (Forna)

Medal, huh. So there really is stuff like that.

Well, without something like that, some people might not even know what they’re fighting for after all.

“Velt, you’re getting one too. No, you guys, including the prince, will get one.” (Barts)

“Hah?” (Velt)

“You appeared in an unfavourable situation for humanity’s great allied forces, splendidly regained the army’s morale and overturned the war situation with your power. Above all, you even captured the mastermind villain, Mackey Mouse, in a one to one fight. You won’t get a status raise since you’re not a soldier, but your reward will definitely be amazing.” (Barts)

Reward, huh. Well, I'll take what I can, but I can't really jump up and down in happiness about it.

There are people mourning for their comrades' death right in front of me after all.

However, sensing my complicated mental state, Shalt put his hand on my shoulder.

"Barts and I experienced days like today faster than everyone else. We had seniors and officers who helped us, and people that looked after us like siblings. I was told to powerfully salute them off if we lost them, rather than crying, and if tears still come out, then I should drink alcohol with my comrades and cry while smiling." (Shalt)

"..... Ho~, a rich, young master like you sure do say some militaristic condolence ways. But can you really keep on going like that?" (Velt)

"Hahaha, Velt..... there's no way we can keep on going like that. Growing accustomed to the death of your comrades is not something you can do so easily." (Shalt)

"Yeah....." (Velt)

"But you know, Velt. The enemy will still come attacking. We need to attack too. We need to fight too. That will never change unless war completely disappears from this world." (Shalt)

His eyes are strong. Those are eyes that the weak-ass Shalt from the past couldn't make.

"So, I cry when I need to cry. But if we gained achievements through my comrades' sacrifice, then I will be happy about it together with them. And, even if I cry, sinking in sadness today, if the enemy comes again tomorrow, we will swiftly run to battle. That is us, humanity's great allied forces." (Shalt)

At that time, I noticed something. They didn't just become stronger or sturdier.

Not only Forna, but these guys have become bigger than how I remember them to be.

"Keh, this is why I can't stand these prideful, great elites with strong hearts."

(Shipp)

Once again, someone called out to us. I look back and see my old friends gathered up with worn-out expressions.

“Shipp, huh.” (Velt)

“It’s been a while……. hasn’t it, Velt. Well, I might’ve been laughing like an idiot and high-fiving if it wasn’t this kind of situation.” (Shipp)

A man who’s usually always selfish is making quite a meek face. It seems he received a considerably big emotional scar in his first battle.

“It’s nice to see you, again.” (Pett)

“I really am glad that you came.” (Chett)

Pett, the daughter of a duke family and her twin brother Chett, who brought us here, gave me a superficial greeting.

“I agree. I didn’t think we would ever be saved by you though. But, really, thank you……. is what I should say.” (Hawk)

“……. Hmph…….” (Hau)

Hawk, the glasses committee chairman who was raised in the church, and Hau, the taciturn cool girl.

“Ggu…….uu, u.” (Sannu)

And Sannu, the high-class, cutest girl in the school who’s always smiling, isn’t saying anything right now and is just crying.

This is everyone.

These are my classmates that skipped a grade five years ago and headed to the empire.

“Hey, Velt. Do you remember Gau and Sea?” (Shipp)

Shipp asks me that. And, I nod. I wasn’t that close with them though.

“They didn’t get brought here. They were killed so cruelly in front of Sannu and me, that there weren’t even any remains of their body.” (Shipp)

“Yeah. I saw the reflection in the sky while coming here.” (Velt)

“Since we’ve become soldiers, it wouldn’t be weird for us to turn out like Gau and Sea. No matter how much we bawl or fall into a trance, as long as we don’t

retire or die in action, we have to fight in wars. And yet, Velt. You're probably going to say you're not interested or something, and go off somewhere."

(Shipp)

Even though we're risking our lives for the world, are you just going to run away? It seemed like he was asking me that.

"Come on, Shipp! Even if you say something like that to Velt, there's nothing you can do about it. The path he took had been different since five years ago."

(Shalt)

"Look, Shalt. Do you still think remarks you made when you were ten years old are still valid? Not to mention the fact that Velt was called a dropout with no talent, and yet is strong enough to defeat Mackey Mouse in a one to one fight. This guy, and prince Farga too." (Shipp)

These guys might've gone to the empire with aspiration in their hearts as kids. However, after studying to be a soldier, learning the reality of being a soldier and the harshness of war, it's understandable for them not to feel good about Farga and me who live how they want to.

Then, as if clinging onto me, Shipp held my shoulders and shed tears.

"Velt, I'm..... scared! I don't want to die! Gau and Sea's last moments keep flickering in my head! I just thought that entering humanity's great allied forces would make me rich, let me live easily and make me popular with girls..... but I don't want to fight anymore! I don't want to see any more of my friends dying anymore!" (Shipp)

No one called him a 'coward' after listening to Shipp's scream-like, crying voice.

It's because everyone in this place understood those feelings.

"But you know, we..... have no choice but to fight." (Shipp)

Those were very frail and helpless words.
His heart seemed like it would break into pieces from just a poke.
However, even so, Shipp talked.

"Because I don't want my mum, dad, and tiny little sister that I haven't met in five years, to experience something like that....." (Shipp)

By the time I realized it, the guys from my former class and the new soldiers in the plaza were all crying to his words.

These guys all understand.

Even though they're scared, don't want to fight and want to run away, they have to fight.

"Keh, I ended up saying something pathetic. Even though there's no point saying this to you." (Shipp)

After shouting for a while, Shipp wiped his tears away and made a really fleeting smile.

"Velt..... thanks..... for coming to save us." (Shipp)

That small thanks pierced my heart greatly.

Why are each and every one of them making such understanding faces.....

Even I was moved to tears.

However, since I didn't want to show my crying face.....

"Uoooooooo, ryaa!" (Velt)

To not let them see it, I raised a big voice and jumped into the water fountain. The water in the fountain made a noise and it splashed everywhere.

"Shit, shiiiiit! Ahh, damn it!" (Velt)

I splashed the water everywhere.

My old friends and the new soldiers are all dumbfounded by my strange behaviour.

I threw water on Forna and the others.

"Urya!" (Velt)

"Wai-, Velt! What are you doing at a time like this!" (Shalt)

"You wet me!" (Forna)

As if I care! I continued throwing it everywhere.

And then.....

"Uooooo!" (Barts)

"Damn it allll!" (Shipp)

Barts and Shipp ran up too, diving into the water fountain.

“Damn iiiit, we won! They died, but we won!” (Barts)

“Shit, I’m not going to die! There’s no way I can die! I can’t die for their sake too!” (Shipp)

We just made a racket, kicked up the water in the fountain, hit it and threw it all over everyone.

“You guys, what stupid…….. how dare you put it on me! Take this!” (Hawk)

“Guys, you’re all being weird! Aren’t you sad? Sea and Gau got…….. uuuuu!” (Sannu)

“That is exactly why…….. good grief, playing with water at this age?” (Forna)

“Wait, even princess is…….. uu, uwaaaaaan!” (Pett)

“You did it now…….. stupid boys.” (Hau)

By the time I realized it, we had all jumped in the water.

This is just bravado? Even so, we’re going to keep making a racket.

“”””””Uoooooooooooooooooooooo!”””””” (Everyone)

Trying to spill out everything they had kept in, we made a racket like idiots and just tried to desperately send our sadness flying. Our tears were hidden by the water.

Chapter 88: A nostalgic morning

——Ehehe, this is so fun, Asakura-kun.

Why am I having this dream?

It's a nostalgic scene.

Kamino's there, and people had naturally gathered around me.

By the time I realized it, I was smiling too.

However, I can't go back to those days anymore.

My reunion with Kagami determined that.

He's changed. He ended up advancing to a place he can't come back from.

However, I can't help but pray.

Kamino. I don't want you to change.

Thinking that pains my chest.

——Velt

Ahh?

——Nn, chu, you really are not waking up. In that case..... just a bit more, nn, chu.

My chest is in pain? No, something is suffocating me, or rather, I can't breathe properly.

"I love you. I love you so much. My Velt. Just my Velt. Nn~." (Forna)

Oi.....

"Velt, amazing. Thi, this place, is so.....when we entered the bath together as kids, it was not..... just like my seniors said, men really are like this in the mornings....." (Forna)

My head isn't working properly? Am I still dreaming?

"Fufu, I am happy though. You seem to think I am in your dream right now. Velt." (Forna)

Wait, I thought I was seeing a dream about Kamino, but instead, Forna, who's in her underwear, crept inside my bed and is blocking my lips?

“As, as a daughter of the royalty, I need to do this for my knowledge..... but since I have never done this before, I do not know if I will be able to do it well..... I wonder if Velt would be happy?” (Forna)

“..... Oi!” (Velt)

..... For the time being, I put her in a chokehold.

Yesterday was pretty tough, but my body unexpectedly wasn't in pain. Well, compared to my fights against one of the Four Heavenly Demi-humans or against Cleran, I didn't have as many injuries, after all.

After what happened yesterday, we postponed all the small things we had to deal with and stayed at Forna's residence to rest our tired bodies.

“““““Good morning, Forna-sama, master.”””””

As we left the room, more than ten maids were lined up on both sides. Geez, how many attendants does Forna alone need?

“Good morning.” (Forna)

“Forna-sama, breakfast has been prepared. Also, your older brother and company have already come down to the living room.” (Maid)

“Ara, as expected of niisama and the others, they are tough. I understand, Velt, let us have breakfast too.” (Forna)

Forna's residence is set up in the empire's high-class residential district. It's furnished with maids, a garden, a pool, multiple rooms and paintings everywhere.

Although humanity's great allied forces is a group of humanity's champions, new soldiers and people with low ranks live in the army's lodging houses or temporary houses, but as their ranks increase, they get all sorts of special rights. These are from being granted land, to getting workers, to getting treasure, and the things Forna, who's at the top ranking, is granted surpasses my imaginations by far.

Well, as expected of a princess, Forna doesn't have much greed and doesn't care about living in over-luxurious places, so although she has an extravagant chandelier, antique paintings and curios decorating the insides of her house, she doesn't have anything too gaudy.

“Oi, you're damn late. You're the one that said we should get up early for the

morning medal ceremony and to show up for his Majesty.” (Farga)

“You’re late. Otouto-kun..... huh? Why did otouto-kun and imouto-chan come out of the same room? Moreover, otouto-kun has a kinda guilty expression, whereas imouto-chan’s face looks glossy.” (Cleran)

“Oi, Forna..... only yesterday..... I only lent Velt to you for yesterday, but you better not have done anything, alright?” (Ura)

“Morning! Geez~, bro, you totally look like a newly-wed when you’re holding hands with your wife from the morning~!” (Doraueemon)

The first thing I see as I open the door to the living room, is a long table that has an imposing air. Does Forna really need this when she’s living by herself? Well, she probably needs it when she calls over other people though. Furthermore, compared to how surprised I am, as expected of royalty, Farga and Ura really fit in with this extravagant room and space. Like, seeing these members not have a single scratch on them after participating in a war yesterday really makes me think how monstrous they are. But, huh?

“Where’s Musashi?” (Velt)

“Huh? Now that you mention it, Musashi-chan isn’t here.” (Cleran)

“Apparently she wasn’t in her room either. We thought she had woken up already.” (Ura)

Musashi isn’t here? Where’d she go? But I only wondered that for a moment, as Musashi entered the living room after Forna and me. However, she looks a bit strange. She’s staggering with a bright red face.

“Au~, au~..... au~.” (Musashi)

“Ou, what’s wrong Musashi?” (Velt)

“Au~, au~, au~..... hah! Lo, lord! Go, goo, good morning!” (Musashi)

“Yeah. What happened to you? Your face is kinda red.” (Velt)

Then, Musashi suddenly tried to dodge my statement by shaking both her hands while panicking.

“N, no no no no no no no, it is nothing! I, I did not see anything!” (Musashi)

What did she see?

“Musashi. When Forna’s maid went to wake you up before, she said you

weren't in your room." (Ura)

"Wha, what, Ura-dono. I, since last night, I..... to protect lord, I stayed above lord's ceiling..... hah!" (Musashi)

Musashi closed her mouth while panicking, but that basically answered it. Forna suddenly showed an expression of shock.

"You, you said your name was Musashi, right....." (Forna)

"Yes, oh, lady!" (Musashi)

"Hey, you..... the fact that you stayed above the ceiling of Velt's room since last night means..... you saw me creep into Velt's room too?" (Forna)

"Ah, um, no, since you and lord are a couple, there is no necessity for me to talk about how you shared the bed with lord....." (Musashi)

"Ufufufu, that's the problem, but..... you were watching, right?" (Forna)

She was watching..... definitely.....

"I, I was not watching! Rather, what are you talking about? Last night, although you crept into lord's bed, since you were tired, all you did was just rest there!" (Musashi)

"Yes, that happened last night. But what about this morning.....?" (Forna)

At that moment, steam came out of Musashi's head like a train and ran around the room without being able to calm down.

"I I I, I was not watching! I did not see anything! When you awakened first and suddenly took off your clothes to make a morning assault on lord like kissing and————" (Musashi)

From early in the morning, Forna struck Musashi into the ceiling with an uppercut at lightning speed.

"Veeelt! You, why did you pick up such a careless demi-human?" (Forna)

"Eh? Ah~..... since it'd be funny?" (Velt)

"It, it was seen! My shameless appearance that only Velt was allowed to see! She definitely misunderstood me as a le, lewd person!" (Forna)

"No, thinking back to what you did to me in the morning, you seemed pretty pent up....." (Velt)

"Noooooooooooo!" (Forna)

Forna hit the ground with her head multiple times in shame.
A thunderous roar reverberated throughout the residence.

“Forna-sama, what exactly is..... u-, Forna-sama is going mad!” (Maid)
“Eeeei, Forna! Velt! You guys..... Musashi’s statement right now..... what were you doing from the morning!” (Ura)

“Bro, you’re a man!” (Doraemon)

“You guys really don’t have any fucking dignity..... I can’t keep going with this.....” (Farga)

“U~nn! The food here tastes so good. It was unfortunate that I couldn’t eat any cyclopes yesterday, but having this kind of cooking from time to time isn’t bad.” (Cleran)

What a lively morning. It seems as if the war from yesterday was a lie.
No, rather than that, this feeling.....

“Forna~ you, with Velt..... crossed a line, didn’t you!” (Ura)

“Uu-, uuuu~, that is, not yet..... since I wanted to do that when Velt properly got up.” (Forna)

“Don’t screw with me! What mouth is telling me they didn’t cross any after making a morning assault on him half naked!” (Ura)

“You, you have slept together with Velt too!” (Forna)

“I haven’t touched him in any sexual, inappropriate way! Damn it, in these five years..... I should have deflowered Velt without thinking about you!” (Ura)

“But Velt, who had become such a cool adult in these five years, was in front of me when I awakened after all..... I could not control myself.....” (Forna)

“Ah~, you sure have some nerve! In that case, I won’t hold myself back anymore from now on!” (Ura)

Forna’s here, Ura’s here, Farga’s here, Cleran, Musashi and Dora joined too.
It’s the first time we’ve all gathered together like this, but I feel like everything is ‘nostalgic’ from just Forna being here.
Although I had to risk my life for it, I really am glad I could have this feeling again.

Chapter 89: You have done very well

Around six hundred soldiers died in the battle against the Maakai Demon Kingdom.

However, if you include the ordinary citizens in the port city that was destroyed before the attack, there were several thousands of victims. Although they had won the war, because most of the recent wars had occurred in the Divine Being Continent, most of the citizens in the Humanity Continent weren't used to wars.

The sadness they had to the people who became victim to the attack wasn't something that could just be shaken off.

So, to clear away those dark clouds by even a little, a grandiose festival was set up in the empire for the people who played active roles in the war.

By announcing in public that the young soldiers who are burdened with the next generation, splendidly repulsed soldiers with long military services, humanity raised shouts of joy to try and clear away the sadness by even a little. Even though they should've submitted to sadness after losing close ones and seeing the distinct scars of war in the capital, the citizens still did that.

That was to say the people that died in this war weren't just victims that died in vain, but proud sustenance that let humanity to victory.

Well, to be honest, they probably wouldn't be able to go on if they didn't do that.

"Tch, why do I have to go too? This is just some exhibition." (Velt)

"Damn right." (Farga)

"Ahahaha, Farga seems like he's not good with things like this after all." (Cleran)

"You three are fine. However, it would be awkward for Musashi and I." (Ura)

"Indeed. We were accepted because they had to yesterday, but we are demi-human and demon. It must make the humans have mixed feelings." (Musashi)

"What about me~?" (Dorauemon)

We're on the main street that leads straight ahead to the empire's palace. As far as I can see around us, many citizens are in rows, and some of them are raising cheers from windows and rooftops.

Like a victory parade, the soldiers of humanity's great allied forces are waving their hands while slowly moving forward, and for some reason, we're in the middle of that.

"They're here! It's humanity's great allied forces! The champions are passing through!" (Citizen)

"Uoooo!" (Citizen)

"Forna-sama! Forna-samaaa!" (Citizen)

"Kyaa! Shalt-sama! So cool!" (Citizen)

"Commander Barts! Commander Barts!" (Citizen)

"Uoooo, Galva-sama's massive!" (Citizen)

With Forna in the lead, the major commanders are proceeding on horses while smiling at the citizens.

How do I put it, like, they really are pros at this.

However, I didn't think that I would be on the side that's walking through, rather than the side that's watching the parade.

This is making me pretty nervous.

"Amazing! They're so cool! Suns of hope! Humanity's great allied forces! I'm going to join them too one day!" (Citizen)

"Humanity's great allied forces banzai! Banzai! Banzai!" (Citizen)

From children to old people, they're all full of passion.

This is basically a type of religion.

On top of that, the only reason I'm on the side that's receiving cheers is because I have the achievement of beating up Kagami.

I'm being praised for dealing with my former classmate through violence. It's something that I never would've even thought about in Asakura Ryuuma's age.

If I was criticized, I could've turned defiant though.

However, now that I'm being praised, I just have a bunch of mixed feelings instead.

"Your face doesn't look cheerful at all." (Farga)

"Farga? Well, my life just never had any opportunities like this. Even if I was noticed in the town, this is my first time receiving cheers." (Velt)

"You sure do say some damn pitiful stuff. Look at Shipp and the others. Even though they were so depressed yesterday, they're properly responding to the

cheers. Why don't you at least do that much?" (Farga)

I could see Shipp and the others raising both hands while blowing kisses where Farga pointed at.

"Uoooo, Shipp! You did it! Your mum at home will be happy!" (Citizen)

"I knew you could do it, Hawk-chan!" (Citizen)

"Sannu-chan, you're super cute! Marry me!" (Citizen)

"Hau-chan, smile!" (Citizen)

They're pros too. Even though they should have all sorts of mixed feelings inside their hearts.

"Hey, Farga. The Elfarshia Kingdom obviously knows about Sea and Gau's death, right?" (Velt)

"Yeah." (Farga)

"I see. That's like..... pretty worrisome....." (Velt)

It's not just Sea and Gau's families. Many people in this battle and even the guys fighting in the Divine Being Continent have families too. However, that's the same for the demi-humans and demons too. The cyclopes that killed many of humanity's great allied forces had families too. This world is so troublesome since there's no end to things when you actually start thinking about it.

"Kagami..... the world that thought you're crazy certainly is troublesome..... but you know....." (Velt)

You can't just say that's how it is and leave it like that. After actually fighting and seeing it before my eyes, I've started to think like that.

"All forces, stop!" (Forna)

As I was thinking on and on, the whole army stopped cleanly at Forna's sudden order.

By the time I realized it, the surrounding cheers had gradually calmed down too and we had gathered in front of the empire's palace at the huge plaza. Everywhere I look, there are just people, people and people. There are enough people that it seems like all the people in the empire,

including the citizens, army officials and nobles wearing extravagant clothes, had gathered here.

Although I did hear that the empire is around ten times bigger than the Elfarshia Kingdom, I can accept that after seeing how big of a scale this is. Under this situation, our eyes were all looking towards the huge stage that seems to have been made in a hurry.

On the stage, there are higher-ups that are probably cabinet ministers, and.....

“That’s the empire’s king, huh.....” (Velt)

An old, weakened man that didn’t even seem like he could stand on his own, was in the centre of the stage.

However, the aura he alone had was different.

Thin limbs that seemed like withered branches, white hair and beard.

Even though his eyes don’t have any power in them, by just being there, he gave off a warm presence.

“That’s right. He’s the founder of humanity’s great allied forces, and is the king of the Archline Empire. His majesty Seekray Archline.” (Farga)

“He looks weak from old age.....” (Velt)

“Well, he is aged after all. However, his son and daughter are basically in your generation. You’ve known about the son since you were a brat right?

Humanity’s hope that was called the boy hero.” (Farga)

“Yeah. I knew he was a prince of the empire. So this guy is the father of that hero, huh. Well, he doesn’t just look like a doting parent of a cheat son. He like, gives off some kind of presence.” (Velt)

Come to think of it, this is my first time seeing a king other than the Elfarshia Kingdom’s king.

No wait, Samejima was a king too, so I guess that counts?

That being said, since there’s quite some distance from here and the stage, I can’t see him too clearly.

“Everyone, stay silent! The medal awarding ceremony will now begin!” (Army Commander)

While I was thinking about that, a middle-aged guy next to the king raised a

loud voice.

When I asked about it later, apparently he's a big shot that is in command of the entire empire army.

"First of all, the work you all did to splendidly save the empire from this crisis was truly incredible! I know that it was the first battle for many and that many of the soldiers are from other countries, for putting your life on the line to fight through to repulse the Maakai Demon Kingdom, we thank you from the bottom of our hearts as citizens!"

""""""""Uooooooooooooooooooooo!!!"""""""" (Everyone)

"Of course, including the champions that unfortunately died in action, if we did not have every soldier here, we would not have defended against humanity's crisis. Normally, everyone should be valued highly, but today we are especially giving awards to the people that left behind remarkably great achievements!" (Army Commander)

Normally, everyone should receive praise. Those words are probably what he really thinks.

However, even so, especially awarding the ones who left behind exceptional achievements would raise humanity up.

That's because they're achievements that the citizens, soldiers and everybody wouldn't be able to complain about.

"First, Ten Heroes of Light, princess Forna Elfarshia, come forth!" (Army Commander)

The first one that was called up was Forna.

"Uoooo, it's Forna-sama!" (Citizen)

"So, so cuuuuute!" (Citizen)

"Forna-sama, Forna-sama!" (Citizen)

"Princeeeeeess!" (Citizen)

Forna rises onto the stage with excited cheering coming from behind her. But man, she really is used to this, isn't she. She's boldly walking forward without any hesitation.

Standing in the centre of the stage, Forna faced the king and the army commander and cleanly saluted them like a soldier.

“Princess Forna defeated prince Ragaia, the supreme commander of the Maakai Demon Kingdom army, showing her military power and humanity’s pride to the world. And, while being royalty from another country, she plunged into the severe and fierce battle faster than any other empire citizen, leading the war to victory! This achievement that is greater than myriads of thanks, will be carved deeply in human history, history of the empire, and in our hearts. That is something that has to be especially praised, so I thank you from the bottom of my heart, as a representative of humanity. Thank you.” (Army Commander)

“Thank you, princess Forna.”

“I will accept this gratefully.” (Forna)

“Uoooooooooooooooooooo!!!” (Everyone)

Amazing, this loud cheer is overcoming me with passion.
The world is shaking.
I thought a medal awarding ceremony would be the same as a principal giving certificates in front of the whole school.
However, this is different.
I’m truly in the presence of a historical moment right now.

“He, hehe, there’s sweat on my hand..... Forna’s amazing.” (Velt)
“Stupid younger brother. She’s going to be yours, you know?” (Farga)
“..... Even though she’s that amazing, why does she still like me? I thought she would’ve made me into a memory already.” (Velt)
“I’ll ask my stupid younger sister next time. I’ll probably get sent flying the moment I ask though.” (Farga)

Even though she really does seem like a resident of a faraway world, that woman crept into my bed this morning and did all sorts of stuff didn’t she. It feels kinda strange.

“Next, Barts Kuruntape-dono, who splendidly defeated a general of the enemy army! Come forth!” (Army Commander)
“Ou!” (Barts)

Uoooo, e, even Barts!

“Uoooooooooooooooooooo!!!” (Everyone)

Amazing, he’s walking so boldly.

He’s not the brat that I used to mock.

Although he still talked about wanting to end the era of darkness, he’s grown up from his brat self and accumulated the power and achievements to realize his dream.

“Third, Shalt Liberal-dono, who exceeded his position to put the scattered soldiers in order after the chain of command was destroyed and successfully carried out his role as a commander! Come forth!” (Army Commander)

“Yes!” (Shalt)

“Uoooooooooooooooooooo!!!” (Everyone)

Even Shalt.....

Good grief, every single one of them.....even though they’re all residents of a place I can’t reach anymore, they still hang out with me.....

“Now then, I will announce the final ones to receive a special award!” (Army Commander)

Forna, Barts and Shalt are all lined up on the stage with their medals and treasure swords.

Like, they really are amazing. They’re all people from the Elfarshia Kingdom. Despite that, they’re receiving this much cheers from the empire citizens. They’re being treated like popular stars.

“The final people are not from humanity’s great allied forces nor the empire army! However, despite not being soldiers, they dashed to this empire’s dilemma while humanity had been despairing over the Maakai Demon Kingdom’s great strength, releasing a great light from their powerful presences which raised the morale of the army and without their help, the Archline Empire would surely have fallen! As expected, we would need to give them the same, deep gratitude we would show to soldiers!” (Army Commander)

..... Hm?

“Although there are several people that came as reinforcements, we would like to have just one person come up as their representative! That person

defeated the mastermind that guided this war from the back, Mackey Mouse
Desneyland! Velt Jeeha-dono! Come forth!” (Army Commander)

“..... Hah?” (Velt)

.....?

Chapter 90: Hold hands

I'm getting awarded?

"""""""" """""""" (Everyone)

While all of humanity stayed silent, I unintentionally shouted out in this incomprehensible situation.

“Wait, I wasn’t told about thiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiis!!” (Velt)

And yet, why is Farga and the others making faces that look like they’re saying it’s only natural?

“Get going, stupid younger brother.” (Farga)

“Velt, it’s your big moment.” (Ura)

“Lord! I, I! I truly am glad to have served you, lord!” (Musashi)

“Go for it, otouto-kun.” (Cleran)

“Bro, you’re our representative!” (Dorauemon)

These guys..... totally knew about it, didn’t they!

“Eh, no, eh? Wh, why me..... what about you guys?.....” (Velt)

“I declined since it would be troublesome.” (Farga)

“There is no way a demon like me would be able to accept it.” (Ura)

“I have the same reason as Ura-dono.” (Musashi)

“I wouldn’t mind if they’re going to give me tasty food, but I’m not interested in medals.” (Cleran)

“I wasn’t really sure.” (Dorauemon)

I don’t want it either! Like, why me! All I did was beat up Kagami! Weren’t we just going to participate in the parade and meet the king afterwards?

Ah! Forna and the others standing on the stage are trying to hold in their laughter!

“Get going already.” (Farga)

Getting my ass kicked by Farga, I staggered and fall down straight ahead.

“Ah.....” (Velt)

“”””””””””.....”””””””””” (Everyone)

Right now, I’m basking in the gazes of everyone here.

Crap, I’m sweating and my hands, legs, whole body is shaking.

I didn’t have the courage to say, “I’m not interested” and run away in this situation.

Like a robot that ran out of oil, I slowly, slowly walked towards the stage.

“Puh.” (Citizen)

“What’s up with him, he’s frozen solid.” (Citizen)

Pathetic.

The surrounding people started getting noisy from seeing how nervous I am.

“Hey, is that princess Forna’s lover?” (Citizen)

“Yeah, he’s the one everyone’s talking about. Apparently they’re in love with each other so much that regardless of who asks for princess Forna’s hand in marriage, whether they’re a famous noble or distinguished general, they get declined instantly.” (Citizen)

“Eh, eh hh? His eyes look scary though.” (Citizen)

“Hm~m, but he did look cool yesterday when he appeared.” (Citizen)

“He did have an amazing appearance against Mackey Mouse after all.” (Citizen)

“But he looks weird. He’s walking like some kind of metal toy.” (Citizen)

They start laughing quietly at me. Crap, this is way too embarrassing.

I can feel my face getting bright red.

Like, this is my first time in my life getting this much attention.

Ever since Asakura Ryuuma’s graduation certificate ceremony, I think? I ditched the middle school one after all.

“Guh, u-, damn it.” (Velt)

Not good, my head’s getting shaky. Rather, there’s still quite a lot of distance until the stage.

At this rate, I feel like I might collapse from being too nervous.....

Then, at that time.

“Geez, even though you’re usually so cocky, you get nervous at times like

these!” (Shipp)

“But I feel like I was able to see a valuable side of you.” (Chett)

By the time I realized it, Shipp and Chett had come in front of me, laughing. Then, they went around to my back and lowered their hips,

“We couldn’t stand looking at this, so we came to welcome you! We’re here to pick you up, young lady.” (Shipp)

“Ahahaha, there, up we go!” (Chett)

——— Wha-!

The two held me from each side and made me ride on their shoulders.

“Ohhh!”

“Wait-, what is that!”

“Eh! Shipp! Chett! What are you guys doing!”

No really, what are you doing!

In an honourable ceremony, they started going forward with me on their shoulders.

“You, you guys, wha wha wha, what are you doing, let me down! It’s way too embarrassing!” (Velt)

“Shut up, a champion should just silently wave his hand with a smile!” (Shipp)

“We need to let everyone know about our Velt-kun!” (Chett)

With really happy faces, the two continued carrying me. The plaza obviously started getting noisy from that, but.....

“Good grief, it can’t be helped.”

“Haha, but I think this is fine.”

“Hmph, even after all these years, he still is an idiot isn’t he.”

“Alright, then.....”

——— Clap clap clap clap

Someone started clapping.

It was Hawk and the others that had shocked faces.

Following that, the citizens and soldiers that had gathered here started clapping too.

“Go get it! You’re still young!” (Citizen)
“Pyuu pyuu!” (Citizen)
“Ahahahaha!” (Citizen)
“Uoooo, Velt-kun! Splendid, so splendid! Are you watching, Bonapa-san, Anna-san! Your child has become so splendid!” (Galva)

I, I’m being made into an exhibition.....
While passing through the middle, the soldiers next to me are patting me, saying “well done”.
An, annoying.....

“Ooooi, Barts! Shalt!” (Shipp)
After slowly advancing forward, he finally arrived at the stairs of the stage. Shipp and Chett let me down there, and without going up the stairs, they just called out to Barts and Shalt who are on top of the stage,

“Take him!” (Shipp)
“Alright!” (Barts)
“Leave it to us!” (Shalt)

And tossed me to them.
“Wha, what the hell are you doing!” (Velt)
“Ohh! He’s here!” (Barts)
“Ahaha, we welcome you, Velt.” (Shalt)

Barts and Shalt catch me.
How could these guys laugh in this kind of situation?
I feel admiration for them again.

“What? Is he close with commander Barts and commander Shalt too?”
(Soldier)
“Yeah, the commanders seem natural too.” (Soldier)
“This is my first time seeing commander have such a childish smile.” (Soldier)

I can hear all sorts of things from the surroundings, but to be honest, I don’t have the room to catch those words.
Even though Barts and Shalt are with me, the moment I went onto the stage, I felt even more nervous.

So many people have gathered that the crowd continues to the other side of the horizon. Is it really okay for me to be here?
It's pathetic, but I'm feeling self-conscious.

However.....

"Hey!" (Barts)

"Well then, we will entrust this person to guide you through the next few steps." (Shalt)

..... Ah?

I raise my face after being told that, and see Forna in front of me.

"May I go together with you until then?" (Forna)

Forna holds out her right hand to me with the back of her hand facing up. It feels like she's inviting me to dance at a high-class ball. However, I felt a lot more at ease after seeing her face.

"Good grief, can't be helped I guess." (Velt)

"By the way, kissing the back of my hand before taking it would be better next time." (Forna)

"There's no way I could do that, idiot!" (Velt)

I felt like my nervousness had suddenly disappeared, and I held Forna's hand while laughing a little.

Then, Forna gripped my hand back and smiled.

"Velt, you said this yesterday, that I had already become a resident of a faraway world." (Forna)

"Well yeah. Like, I still think that though." (Velt)

"However, look at this. You have climbed up to the same stage as me, reached a place that has the same scenery and you are holding hands with me like this." (Forna)

I realized now that she said it.

That's right, I'm standing on the same stage as these guys that are being called the champions of all humanity.

"It has been like that since we were children. No matter how lost I had become, how deep I was in despair, how far away I had gone, you found me like

this, came to where I was and held my hand.” (Forna)

I see..... I had..... held this hand like it was only natural, huh.

“I love you!” (Forna)

“Y, you, you don’t have to say it so many times, I know that.” (Velt)

“Fufu, I will say it a myriad of times to my mean Velt.” (Forna)

“~~~, whatever, let’s go already.” (Velt)

“Ah, geez, Velt, wait for me! You need to walk more slowly.” (Forna)

“You have way too many orders. Like, why are you making me practice during the actual ceremony!” (Velt)

Crap, this is embarrassing. She pushes things too far when she sees my shy face, so I’m just going to go already.

Wait, huh? I feel like..... it’s gotten kinda quiet here.....?

Huh? Damn, did we push it too far?

Everyone fell silent with dumbfounded faces!

However.....

“Higuu, uu, higgu.” (Sannu)

“Hey, what are you crying for, Sannu.” (Hawk)

“Uuu, but, Hawk, your eyes are wet too, you know?” (Sannu)

While everyone had become speechless, my old friends are smiling with shining eyes for some reason.

What is it?

“Everyone had their hearts taken away enough to lose their words. They were all surprised. Even though they’re commoner and princess..... these two are.....”

“Well, it is regrettable but I have to admit that. It has been like that since the past after all. Even though their social status was so different, their combination just looked too natural.”

“I wish Sea and Gau were here to see this. That’s right, we..... love seeing princess and Velt-kun smiling like this!”

They were only silent for a moment.

In the next moment, they raised their biggest cheers of the day to me, no..... to us two.

In those cheers that shook the world, Forna and I continued walking.

“It must have been arduous, Velt-dono.” (Army Commander)

The strict-looking army commander and king had been waiting for me.

Seeing them up close like this really makes me feel their force.

On top of that, they aren’t smiling, but could they be angry at us for screwing around in this situation?

The moment I wondered that, the king presented the treasure sword to me while speaking in a clear tone.

“Your actions were great, but for committing the worst sin in human history, of stealing princess Forna’s heart and making her feel lonely, I will have you atone for that with your life from now on.” (King)

Everyone burst into laughter at the king’s words he said in a serious face. I take back everything I said. This king..... is good at playing along.

“I’ll..... I’ll do my best.....” (Velt)

Anyway, this experience was too embarrassing that I never want to go through it again.

Chapter 91: Cake-like sweetness

I imagined the capital would have rich, curly-haired high-class ladies and old ladies with fancy ways of talking in flashy dresses, while their servants would be holding boxes with many purchased goods inside behind them.

However, it was actually a lot more of a reasonable place.

“The price of the cakes here is suited for the working class, and yet the shaping and texture is profound, so it is very popular right now in the capital.”
(Forna)

The strong-willed part about humans is admirable.
Although scars certainly did remain, they still looked up and are reconstructing. In this capital that became a battlefield, although there are destroyed buildings, broken paths and smashed shops, everyone cooperated in reconstructing them and some shops have already reopened their businesses.

“Ufufu, I am glad this place immediately reopened. I have tea here with Sannu, Hawk and the others on my days off, but I did want to come here with you at least once.” (Forna)

“Keh, what a carefree princess. While everyone else is working hard reconstructing, you wanted to go on a date, huh.” (Velt)

“Ara, please say that I am contributing to their sales instead. Or rather, various shops in the capital have been inviting me to come together with you after that medal awarding ceremony the other day.” (Forna)

“Haa? Come to shops together with me? What’s the point in that?” (Velt)

I’m currently taking care of Forna..... or rather, we’re going on a date after a long time.

“But man, this cake really does taste good. It’s kinda similar to tiramisu. This is nostalgic~, they didn’t have this in the Elfarshia Kingdom after all.” (Velt)

“Teiramisu? What is that?” (Forna)

“Hmm~, nah, don’t worry about it.” (Velt)

“Ufufu, Velt, although that cake is delicious too, this cake I am eating right now tastes good too.” (Forna)

“Ohh, it kinda looks like crepe.” (Velt)

“Crepee? Is that what it is called? Since all the cakes were named after the chefs, I did not know of the formal name.” (Forna)

“Well, anything’s fine, and also, they aren’t called chefs, but patissiers.” (Velt)

While strong guys are busily working to repair the broken buildings, Fornia and I are eating cakes at a somewhat fancy open cafe that reopened immediately, since it didn’t take much damage compared to the other places.

“Well, that is fine. Rather than that, Velt, um, have a bite of this cake too. Here, a~nn.” (Forna)

“Hmm, ohh. Ho~, it has just the right amount of sweetness to keep on eating.” (Velt)

“Hey, Velt. Um, if you are fine with it, could you let me have a bite of your cake too?” (Forna)

“Hah? Aren’t you always eating it?” (Velt)

“It, it is fine, right! Come on, aann.” (Forna)

“Nn, well yeah it’s fine. Here.” (Velt)

I cut off a bite-size piece with my fork and put it in Fornia’s mouth. Then, Fornia happily stuffed her cheeks with a full face smile.

“Ku~, uu~~~.” (Forna)

“You-, what are you raising that strange voice for.” (Velt)

“Too, too, this is too much happiness. Then, next is mouth-to-mouth feeding. Nn~.” (Forna)

“Idiot. That’s way too dirty no matter how you put it.” (Velt)

“Geez~, Velt, you don’t need to get embarrassed over something like this~.” (Forna)

“I’m not getting embarrassed.” (Velt)

“No, you are getting embarrassed! You are embarrassed, right?” (Forna)

Well, she’s happy so I don’t mind, but isn’t it rude to carefreely have a date during this serious time?

Even though everyone should be working laboriously, wouldn’t they feel unhappy looking at us?

..... That’s what I thought, but.....

“Hey hey, did you see them? They really are close.” (Citizen)

“Kya~, princess Forna is so cute. She looks so happy.” (Citizen)

“She totally just ‘a~nn’ed so naturally right now.” (Citizen)

“Ku~, if only I was twenty years younger.” (Citizen)

“Geez, what a happy kid that guy is.” (Citizen)

“But I really am glad that the princess is happy.” (Citizen)

What does this mean? Their eyes are genuinely warm.
It’s the same eyes the people had when Forna was still in the Elfarshia Kingdom five years ago.

———Whisper whisper.

———Glance glance.

———Smile smile.

———Smirk smirk.

———Grin grin.

..... What are those..... eyes that are watching over us.

“Ohh, you’re already atoning for your sins the king told you about, huh.”
(Barts)

“My my. I am glad you two are close as ever.” (Shalt)

“Good morning, princess.” (Hawk)

“Princess! Velt-kun, Morning!” (Sannu)

Either because they’re patrolling the capital or because they have free time,
Barts, Shalt, Hawk and Sannu came to make talk to us.

“Look, Velt-kun. You are here on a date with the princess, so you should look happier.” (Hawk)

“Yeah~, princess always sighed sadly while seeing other lovers on dates here.”
(Sannu)

Hawk and Sannu. That reminds me, I wasn’t able to properly talk with these
guys yet.

Well, leaving aside Hawk, who was the committee chairman-type that looked at
me like an enemy when I still went to school, I don’t remember talking to Sannu

that much in the first place.

However, I remember that she was over-familiar, or rather, friendly, even though she's a high-class daughter from a good family, so she was popular with people.

"Like, why are you guys here in the first place? Are you on a double date?"
(Velt)

"Eh, eh hh? Da, date? A, hahahaha, doe, does it look like that~?" (Sannu)

"Nah, we're just patrolling the capital." (Barts)

"..... Barts..... fuu, Sannu, do your best." (Forna)

Barts casually denied my question of whether it was a date or not, but Sannu was clearly sad from that and Fornu is consoling her right now.

Ahh, was it that kind of correlation chart?

"Yeah, and I'm pretty sure Shalt is Hawk's....." (Velt)

"Wai-! Wait wait wait wait! Velt-kun! Why do you always say such important things so easily!" (Hawk)

"Nn, Hawk, what was that about me?" (Shalt)

"..... Shalt..... Rather, why is Velt the only one that is not dense here?" (Forna)

Yeah, and the honour student-type Hawk likes Shalt, who's an honour student like her, right?

Her face is bright red, but has she really not changed since when she was ten-years-old? Like, these guys should just realize already.

Even though they can beat up cyclopes, why can't they realize the feelings of such obvious brats?

"Well, whatever. You guys especially came here, so go get take some seats and sit down." (Velt)

"You, what stupid things are you saying! You know~, the princess wants to be alone with you more!" (Barts)

"That's right, Velt. Good grief, you should try and understand the feelings of women a bit more, okay?" (Shalt)

That's a total boomerang, you know?

Sannu, who's making reproachful eyes, and Hawk, who has a complicated face,

are both getting depressed.

“That reminds me, I just remembered, but what happened to Ura? I thought she would’ve been fighting over you with the princess.” (Barts)

“Ura? Ahh, she’s training with Musashi in Forna’s garden right now.” (Velt)

“Hee~, is that so. I thought she would definitely get in the middle of you two.” (Barts)

“She’s actually pretty thoughtful, so despite what she says, she’s letting Forna have me for a while.” (Velt)

“Really? Then does she still feel the same way for you right now?” (Barts)

“Yeah. She still loves me from the bottom of her heart.” (Velt)

Well, since she was considerably sulky, I’ll need to buy her a cake as a present.

“Hey, princess. Velt-kun isn’t dense but he has way too little delicacy, doesn’t he?” (Sannu)

“The princess and Ura must be going through hardships.” (Hawk)

“Well, he is Velt after all.” (Forna)

No, it’s not about being dense or not, you guys are just too obvious. Or would it be better if I didn’t notice?

They get angry if you’re dense and make complicated faces if you’re blunt, women really are troublesome.

“However, there are other reasons why Ura can’t walk through the capital.” (Velt)

As I said that, their warm faces finally changed a little.

“She’s a demon..... and that girl called Musashi is a demi-human.” (Shalt)

“That’s true. She was so natural with Velt and she lent us her power that we just normally accepted her.” (Barts)

“Yes, thinking about it properly, it is a bit of an abnormal situation. They flirt with no problem and it is weird that Velt-kun just gets called ‘lord’.” (Hawk)

“Hm~m, I haven’t really talked to them so I don’t know, but they aren’t bad girls after all.” (Sannu)

“Yes, they are not. No bad person could like Velt. Only people with wide hearts like me could love Velt, who is troublesome and has such a bad personality.” (Forna)

Well, I guess.

Also, Forna. The next time you say that with a straight face, I'm going to hit you, okay?

"Hey, Velt. Were there no problems with you and prince Farga journeying with them?" (Shalt)

"Ahh? Of course there were. Musashi tried to attack me for the resentment of the demi-human race at the start, and we almost died in a fight against Esamu of the Four Heavenly Beast Demi-humans." (Velt)

"Hee~, is that so. You guys were against one of the Four Heavenly Beast Demi-humans....." (Shalt)

..... Hmm?

""""""As if that would happeeeeeen!"""""" (Everyone)

The angry voices of the elites in the capital resounded.

"Velt, since when did you become a person that tells lies! There is a limit to how much you can make me worry! Ge, geez, my body trembled from just imagining that. Ve, Velt fighting against one of the Four Heavenly Beast Demi-humans..... even if you want to show off, you should not tell lies that make people worry!" (Forna)

"Look, Velt, the Four Heavenly Beast Demi-humans are the strongest in the world, that even the Ten Heroes of Light would all have to fight against one of them!" (Barts)

"Good grief. You surprised me, Velt. I was about to topple over because I thought you were saying the truth for a second." (Shalt)

"Ah~, that surprised me. Look, the fact that you were able to report that you fought against one of the Four Heavenly Beast Demi-humans, even though you're a normal human, is proof that you're lying." (Hawk)

"That's right~, because you would get killed if you fought him, without being able to report it. And if you were a human that survived after fighting Esamu of the Four Heavenly Beast Demi-humans, it would be on the headlines and everyone in the world would receive a shock from it." (Sannu)

I kinda just got called a liar.

That reminds me, the news of our fight in Shiromu wasn't spread that much,

was it?

Well, it's annoying to be called a liar but Forna seems like she's seriously about to snap from being too surprised and if she finds out it's true, she would probably beat me up, cry and trap me in a room for the rest of my life, so I'll just leave it as that.

"Ah~ geez, this is troublesome. Well, leaving that aside for now, basically, just a lot of things happened to us. But you know, that doesn't matter anymore. We aren't soldiers after all." (Velt)

That's right, because we aren't soldiers that go to war, it doesn't matter to us.

"Although there are pieces of shits that would kill my old man and mum, there are also funny people like Musashi among demi-humans. There are guys like those cyclopes from before, and there are people like Ura too. Even among humans, there are people like Mackey Mouse. There are people like them, and different people too. We're probably fine just leaving it like that." (Velt)

Well, I don't know if I would've accepted Ura and Musashi if it weren't for Samejima and Miyamoto.

In other words, I probably wouldn't have accepted other races without them.

"Hey, Velt-kun, are you actually some big-shot or something?" (Sannu)
"Of course not. I'm just not interested in deeply thinking about it." (Velt)

Because of this, I don't care whether they're demon or demi-human. Ura, who is important to me, and Musashi, who I like, were just coincidentally not human.

Of course, I probably wouldn't have been able to accept it in Asakura Ryuuma's world, but it's fine in a fantasy world.

That's my personal opinion.

"But, I do thoroughly hate people that I hate. Just like that Mackey Mouse." (Velt)

I don't care about the race of people I like, and I don't care about the race of people I hate.

And one of them is Kagami.

"Mackey Mouse, huh. That reminds me, have you heard?" (Barts)

“Heard what, Barts?” (Velt)

“A council was decided in a hurry today, and apparently deciding on how they’re going to deal with Mackey Mouse there.” (Barts)

Thus, today I would end up finding the meaning behind Kagami’s smile as he was taken away, and the complicated, troublesome structure of the human world.

Chapter 92: A farce

The important people of the empire, including the army staff, had gathered in the council.

Mackey Mouse, aka Kagami, is being bound by strong restraints and chains all over his body.

There's nothing within a ten-metre radius around him, and a waist-height railing was established in front of the listeners.

And now, I'm doubting my eyes and ears at the farce that's happening in front of me.

"Now then, I will report Mackey Mouse-shi's achievements." (TL Note: '-shi' means Mr.)

I don't know whether he's some famous noble or politician, but rather than talking about Kagami's charges, he started talking about his achievements.

"After establishing the company Love and Money, the number of thieves and pirates that joined is innumerable, and by managing all of them, they mediated marine transportation and land transportation agencies. Due to this, the crime rate of pirates and thieves in the Humanity Continent decreased by twenty percent. Furthermore, he founded an orphanage for war orphans to live in and assisted on finding foster parents, and constructed a brothel system that sharply decreased any trouble, after he managed all of the prostitutes. Furthermore, he developed a contraceptive tool called『Thin Thin Condo-kun』, that contributed in easily preventing pregnancies and acted as a measure against infectious diseases. Above all, by manufacturing this『Thin Thin Condo-kun』in a poor district, it offered work to the people without jobs."

This is surprising. He's basically treating him like a good person.

"Of course, his sin of causing this crisis in the empire is a serious crime, but I believe we should consider the results of his contributions to humanity. That is all."

Well then, as the person that beat up my classmate and sent him off as a criminal, I would've gone through all sorts of mixed feelings if he got executed,

but now that I've heard the long amounts of achievements he has made, this still makes me have mixed feelings in its own way.

I feel like the whole council is hesitating on whether or not they should judge Kagami.

Following the flow of my date with Forna, we dropped by here and ended up feeling vexed.

“As I thought, it turned out like this.” (Forna)

Forna talks as if she knew everything. What does this mean?

“Velt, there certainly is no end to the number of charges Mackey Mouse has. However, the current Humanity Continent has reasons why they cannot judge him.” (Forna)

“Why not? He was just about to destroy the empire and he's done countless dirty trades, hasn't he?” (Velt)

“Yes, however, the organization Mackey Mouse manages, has a great number of former thieves, pirates and criminal troops affiliated with it. If Mackey Mouse were to be defeated and the organization collapsed, they would all be let out in the Humanity Continent.” (Forna)

So that's how it is, huh.

The fact that he employed former thieves, pirates and even Hunters and gave them all money by giving them jobs, are connected to why his charges would be lowered.

“Furthermore, the goods he developed are things made by his original techniques. If those stop being produced, society would naturally be influenced by that. And, the people who manufactured those would lose their jobs, leaving them on roadsides.” (Forna)

To be honest, I feel like I got done in. Kagami knew that it would turn out like this.

As long as he doesn't exist, the organization wouldn't run. And, he knew how much of a minus it would be for humanity if he disappeared.

It seemed like Kagami, who was silently chuckling to himself in the centre, was telling me this.

———See? Isn't it worthless?

That irritated me, and I thought Kagami was amazing for being able to rise up this high in the world.

“You piece of trash. What a guy.” (Velt)

Before I realized it, I had climbed over the railing and was standing in front of Kagami.

“Eh, wai, Velt! What are you doing!” (Forna)

“Ve, that idiot! How can he just do that kind of stuff so boldly!” (Barts)

“Wait, Velt-kun! That really is not funny, so come back quickly!” (Shalt)

“Oi, who is this brat!”

“No, wait, he’s the guy that was awarded in the medal ceremony the other day!”

“That’s right, he’s princess Forna’s lover!”

The council, that was supposed to have been proceeding indifferently, started stirring up.

Well, I’m a big part of it, but compared to the medal ceremony where the whole of the empire was looking at me, I don’t feel anything to this much commotion.

I stood before the eyes of Kagami, who I thought I would never meet again.

“Kuhahahaha, you asshole. This is why riajuus with high communication skills are troublesome.” (Velt)

“Oh, yo. That was an awesomely fast reunion~, m~y friend.” (Mackey)

“You’ve really done it now. I even feel embarrassed for receiving a medal. From the start, panicking, losing in a one on one and even getting caught wasn’t that much of a problem for you, huh.” (Velt)

“Eh~, what are you talking about~? I, who is awesomely reflecting on my crimes like this, am silently waiting for my judgement, you know~.” (Mackey)

I won but lost overall. That’s how I feel.

“This sure is ironic. Even though you resent this world, this world is keeping you alive. You even became an existence that can change the world.” (Velt)

“Nyahahahaha, is that a compliment? Are you complimenting me? Can I be happy about it?” (Mackey)

“Ahh, when it comes this far, you’re awesome.” (Velt)

He sees deeper places than me, who's only interested in defeating the enemy in front of my eyes.

"Velt Jeeha-dono, we are currently in the midst of a divine deliberation. Leave that place immediately!"

A voice shouting at me flies past, but in this situation that only seems like a farce, I didn't hesitate.

"Ahh, fine. I'll leave. Regardless of whether he gets executed or released, as long as he doesn't get involved with what's important to me, I'll ignore him."
(Velt)

"Eh~, we specially met after all, so let's play again, Velt-kun♪." (Mackey)

"I refuse, even if I have to die. However, just as you said, we specially did meet after all. So, let's quickly exchange information and go." (Velt)

"Exchange information? About what?" (Mackey)

"It's simple. Who have you reunited with until now?" (Velt)

I don't have anything else I want to ask him.
I don't care about who won the fight against me and him. There's no point for me to think about the merits and demerits of him getting executed.
So, this is honestly the only thing I have to ask him.

"I see, so that's what you want. I guess there's someone you want to meet."
(Mackey)

"Yeah, that's right. That's an objective I found for myself, who isn't interested in the flow of the world." (Velt)

This dialogue is incomprehensible to anyone other than us two, but probably because they sensed something, the people that were criticizing me had become silent before I realized it.

"Other than you and Miyamocchan, two people. Ayase-chan and Biyama-chan. Unfortunately, I haven't reunited with Mina-chan." (Mackey)

"Tch, guess not. It wouldn't be so easy to find hints about her, huh." (Velt)

Well, I didn't think I would. If he had met Kamino, he probably would've used that to shock me while we were fighting after all.

The fact that he didn't do that, means he hasn't reunited with Kamino.

“Should I tell you where Biyama-chan is?” (Mackey)

“I’m good.” (Velt)

“Arara, how cold.” (Mackey)

“Look, I can’t keep making detours. Every time I reunite with one person, I risk my life or almost die, so I’ve had enough already.” (Velt)

I always just barely lived, like with Samejima, with Miyamoto, and with Kagami too.

Well, it might be a bit cold, but I don’t feel like going out of my way to find classmates that I wasn’t particularly close with and reuniting with them. Besides, I have Dora. As long as I know there’s a high chance that Kamino is in the Divine Being Continent, that should be my priority. However, at that moment, I suddenly had a thought.

“Hm? Come to think of it, I’m not particularly interested, but why Biyama? What about Ayase?” (Velt)

That reminds me, Miyamoto apparently reunited with Ayase too, so I asked about it since he didn’t talk about her. Then, Kagami started grinning.

“Ahh, that’s because you’ll probably reunite with Ayase-chan sooner or later.” (Mackey)

“Ah? What do you mean by that?” (Velt)

As I wondered that, the doors of the closed council place was vigorously opened.

“Excuse me for coming in during the deliberation.” (?)

It’s a young woman’s voice. Someone appeared. Straight, long, light blue hair. Dignified, cold eyes and well-featured looks. She’s young, maybe around the same age as me? She’s wearing a conspicuous, yellow long coat that I could see from far away.

“I doubted my ears when I heard you were captured.” (?)

Who is she? Who is this arrogant-looking woman speaking like a queen? Then, Kagami smiled even further.

“Ohh~, well well. I heard you were on an expedition, but you sure returned quickly.” (Mackey)

“Is that not reasonable? Although we did part ways, we did know each other somewhat.” (?)

Is she Kagami’s acquaintance? No, that’s not all, everyone in this room is getting surprised at seeing her appearance.

Seeing me beside her, that woman smiled softly.

“Also, I saw the reflection in the sky and heard about the medal ceremony. You are Forna’s husband, Velt-kun, right? I am honoured to have met you.” (?)

She even knows about me? As I was wondering who exactly she was, someone in this place raised their voice.

“Princess Arsha!”

Princess? Then, Kagami faced me and said this while holding back laughter.

“Oh right, Velt-kun, you don’t know, do you. She’s the princess of the Archline Empire and one of the Ten Heroes of Light,『Arsha Archline』-sama.” (Mackey)

A princess of the empire? Furthermore, one of the Ten Heroes of Light! I became speechless from that unexpected background information. She was that much of an outrageous, ultra VIP?

“Arsha, were you not on a northern expedition?” (Forna)

“It has been a while, Forna. I was supposed to go there, but I could not leave Mackey Mouse alone.” (Arsha)

“Is, that so?” (Forna)

“Yes. That being said, Forna. I am happy for you that you could reunite with your beloved person.” (Arsha)

Arsha is casually talking with Forna, but yeah, her atmosphere and manner certainly aren’t normal.

That being said, did Kagami make someone like her an enemy too?

However, the person himself, Kagami, showed a smile.

“Kukuku, ahahahaha, this is funny.....” (Mackey)

And..... in a small voice that only I could hear.....

“Arsha-chan..... rather, Ayase-chan.” (Mackey)

Eh.....?

I became even more speechless

Chapter 93: Unsinkable destroyer ship (lol)

The council unexpectedly closed pretty readily.

——Could you leave the matter of his treatment entirely to me?

Princess Arsha of the Ten Heroes of Light didn't say anything more. Although she is the princess of the empire and one of the world leading champions, I wonder if a brat in her teens should really have this much authority.

The cunning government officials lost their words and nodded to what Arsha said.

Even the people who hold authority in the council, said, "if the princess says so," and readily acknowledged it.

Straight after that, people wearing yellow, long coats that seem to be Arsha's close aids came in and took Kagami away somewhere.

Kagami didn't seem to be resisting or anything and was just grinning happily.

——Well, see you later, Velt-kun♪

After leaving just those words behind, he was taken away.

As far as I've heard today, it's doubtful whether he'll be given the death penalty or any serious penalties.

What exactly is Arsha trying to do with Kagami?

And, is Arsha's identity really that woman I knew?

I feel like something troublesome is going to happen again.

"Thinking about whether this world is simple or whether it's complicated is just troublesome." (Velt)

"Is anything wrong? I do not like Velt's face when you are seriously thinking about something difficult. You do not look at me at all during that time." (Forna)

We're currently in a dining hall of the humanity's great allied forces' lodging house, that Barts, Shalt and the others use as their base in the empire.

I'm not a soldier, but there's no way I'll get kicked out when Fornia, Barts, Shalt, Hawk and Sannu all gave their permission.

In this wide, clean dining hall with white-painted walls, where hundreds of

people could stay in at once, I sit down and think back to the council that ended in the blink of an eye with some random development.

“Also, you need to stop those sorts of actions from now on. We were panicking about what might happen to us.” (Shalt)

“That’s right~, Velt-kun. I didn’t think you would cross over the railing and quarrel with Mackey Mouse, like, there’s a limit to how fearless you can be.” (Sannu)

Sorry. I do think that was quite an embarrassing thing to do if I say so myself. However, I just wanted to face him and say something about how ironic that was.

“Anyway~, I’m changing the story, but what kind of person is that Arsha woman that came in all of a sudden?” (Velt)

At that moment, all five of them hit my head simultaneously.

“““““Don’t address the princess without an honorific! Rather, calling her ‘that woman’ is definitely no good!”“““““ (Everyone)

“O, o~w! And it’s not like it matters since she’s not the princess of my country or anything. Kings are different, but it’s fine to call presidents and prime ministers without their honorifics when you’re just talking with friends, alright?” (Velt)

Since they just suddenly hit me, all the other soldiers that had gathered in the dining hall for lunch became surprised, turned around all together and now we’re completely basking in the attention.

However, without seeming to care about that, Forna and the others drew closer to me.

“Listen carefully, Velt. Keeping the attitude you have when you come in contact with me is no good. The other person is the princess of the greatest country in the Humanity Continent, the Archline Empire. If I had to say, she would be one of the top-ranking people in humanity.” (Forna)

“Furthermore, it is said that her outstanding talent only comes once every hundred years, you know? Despite being in the same year as Barts and I, she graduated the great national military academy together with princess Forna,

who is said to be the fastest in history.” (Shalt)

“And, she is a person who holds the greatest, highest title in humanity, the Ten Heroes of Light title. Rather, do you even know how much of an amazing person princess Forna is?” (Barts)

“Even in the battlefield, she’s rapidly achieving lots of things, and especially the group she leads as the commanding officer,『Independent Special Force, Yellow Jaegers』, also known as the『Yellow Hunters』, are a top class force, even among humanity’s great allied forces.” (Hawk) (TL Note: Jäger, or Jaeger, is the German word for “hunter”, and describes a kind of light infantry. The J is basically a Y, so it’s pronounced Yaegers.)

“On top of that, she’s such a beauty, isn’t she? Well, princess Forna is popular with men too, but in proportion to the fact that princess Arsha doesn’t have a fiancé, her popularity is amazing~. Well, all the confessions seemed to have been shot down though.” (Sannu)

How much of a cheat is she? If it was a guy that had that much job history, that would be the type of character to die soon.

How blessed is she to be reincarnated into a princess after dying?

I over here am a farmer’s son..... no, speaking of blessed environments, I can’t say much either.

As expected, when they say this much, I was taken in by their words too.

Then, at that time.

“Ara, it sure is lively today.” (Arsha)

The person we were just talking about, appeared along with her group of comrades.

“Princess Arsha!” (Soldier)

“Princess! I heard you had returned, but it really was true!” (Soldier)

“Arsha-sama! And even the strongest newcomer knight in the empire, Doremifa is here!” (Soldier)

“They’ve returned, the champions of the empire have returned!” (Soldier)

A high-pitched cheer was sent to the yellow group. Arsha herself is acting cool and expressionless without answering any of them, but the ten people she brought with her are waving back with smiles like performers.

They're unexpectedly young. They're probably all in their teens or their early twenties.

"U~wa. What is that." (Velt)

"They are the main forces of princess Arsha's Yellow Hunters, also known as Arsha's bodyguards. They are all our seniors that are almost the same age. They're all top class, young soldiers that were picked from the capital." (Hawk)

"Fufu, they are as popular as always. The champions of the empire that bear the next generation have appeared." (Forna)

"Well, although they are the champions of this country, the meaning is different for them compared to us. Compared to other countries, the scale and population of the empire is different. Of course, the numbers of rivals in their year is overwhelmingly different, including us from the Elfarshia Kingdom. Their talent and ability to win through that competition is not just for show." (Shalt)

"Oi, what are you saying, Shalt! Aren't you always that one that says it doesn't matter!? In the end, we took the same education as them and graduated too! There's no difference between us!" (Barts)

"Ba, Barts, you're being too loud~, they're going to hear you!" (Sannu)

At that moment, probably because they noticed us making noise, the Yellow Hunters showed smiles and came close to us.

"Ohh! Princess Fornu, Barts and Shalt, you seem energetic." (Doremifa)

"Yes, Doremifa. Thank you for your hard work." (Forna)

"It really was. Our leader is too rough when handling her troops. The moment we had gone to the north, she made us return immediately, you know?" (Doremifa)

It was a man called Doremifa who started casually talking to them while smiling. He's the only person who cut the sleeves off of his yellow long coat, in other words, he's wearing a strange, non-sleeve long coat.

He's good looking and has a purple, short mohawk, that I've seen quite a lot in Japan.

He's tall and has a good physique too. It's different to Shalt's weak-ass body or Barts' body that has no excess fat to be as fast as possible.

That being said, he's not a gorilla like Galva either. His physique seemed like he had trained for speed, power and everything, in a good balance, like an all-rounder.

In other words, he seems strong.

"Barts, and Shalt too." (Doremifa)

"Yo." (Barts)

"It sure has been a while, Doremifa." (Shalt)

For some reason, the three silently exchange glances. Then, they suddenly stuck out their fists to the centre, hitting each other at the same time.

In the next moment, all three of them grinned.

"You guys protected the empire well against the cyclopes." (Doremifa)

"Yeah, it was a disaster." (Barts)

"There had never been a time where I wanted you guys to be there even more than that." (Shalt)

Although Doremifa is showing a careless smile, I could see his eyes are a bit wet.

"I heard about the people that died. I really do feel apologetic for that. But I won't let that happen again. We're going to be stationed here for a while, so we'll protect the empire this time." (Doremifa)

The dining hall suddenly got excited by those reliable words.

"Exactly! You guys didn't do anything!" (Soldier)

"You better fight next time!" (Soldier)

"Come on, it's not like we actively participated in it either." (Soldier)

"Yeah, the ones that did were princess Forna, Barts, Shalt and those guys that put their life on the line." (Soldier)

"Next time, we won't lose for sure!" (Soldier)

"I'll protect the empire! I'll protect the Humanity Continent! And, I definitely won't lose to the demons and demi-humans!" (Soldier)

Stopping their eating hand, the soldiers all stood up and raised their fists at the same time.

Everyone agreed and started shouting passionately, saying, "me too."

And, one step before that reached its climax, one woman stepped forward.

“Exactly, we will fight from next time too. But, it is true that we cannot fight alone.” (Arsha)

It’s Arsha. Contrary to her cold, cool expression, she gave forth a voice filled with quite a lot of passion to everyone.

“Everyone, Doremifa said this too, but I thank you again. For protecting the country, for protecting humanity, thank you so much.” (Arsha)

The room became noisy. Although she’s still expressionless, Arsha, while being a princess, lowered her head to everyone here.

Everyone let out their voices from that sudden action.

And then,

“Next time, it will not only be you, nor just the Yellow Jaegers. We will fight together! One for all. All for one!” (Arsha)

The feelings of the soldiers that almost exploded, gained even further energy and produced overwhelming passion in the next moment.

“Uoooooooooooooooooooooooooooo-!!!” (Everyone)

Even if she doesn’t show it on her face, I can feel her enthusiasm from her words.

The soldiers that had their hearts struck by those feelings, responded to them while shedding tears.

“Ku~, as expected of her, our leader-sama is raising everyone up as always.” (Doremifa)

“Well, I guess that’s why you can risk your life for her. But personally, I would be happier if she was a bit more social and held an interest in love.” (Soldier?)

“Oi oi, I’ll tell you this, but our experience points have gone up by so much after participating in the empire defence battle.” (Barts)

“Yeah, exactly. If you show too much composure, you might become burdens for us, you know?” (Shalt)

“Yes, we will not lose to the elites of the empire.” (Soldier?)

I feel kinda bad now that everyone’s getting all passionate, but I had to use all my might to hold in my laughter at Arsha’s enthusiastic speech.

“Kuh, pukukuku, one for all, hah~.” (Velt)

“Ara, what is wrong, Velt?” (Forna)

“Well, how do I put it, I just thought that we’re in such different worlds~.” (Velt)

Kagami, what did you think? What did you think about this princess that’s passionately living together with her comrades for the sake of world peace, in this world that you called worthless?

I bet you were laughing pretty hard.

“Fufu, even though we’re both women, I still admire her. That charisma. Princess Forna has it too, but it’s a different type.” (Sannu)

“Yeah, she’s normally cool and doesn’t smile, but her heart is burning and strong. She really gives off that ‘fighting woman’ feel~.” (Hawk)

That’s the assessment of this world, and the way you live, huh.
Well, I’m not particularly interested though. It must’ve been a tiring life, but it should be fine now since you’re surrounded by comrades.

“Well, that part of you that wants to take care of things alone doesn’t seem to have changed though.” (Velt)

By the time I realized it, I had been standing in front of Arsha.

“Ara, you are the person from before, right?” (Arsha)

Arsha, who noticed my existence, turned around.

“I’m Velt Jeeha. Nice to meet you.” (Velt)

“Yes, I heard. You subjugated Mackey Mouse, saved humanity’s great allied forces who were in despair, and you are Forna’s husband.” (Arsha)

Forna, how much have you talked about me? Like, sorry for thinking you had already forgotten about me.

“I am sorry for not being able to properly greet you before, Velt-kun. Nice to finally meet you.” (Arsha)

“Nn, yeah.” (Velt)

She greets me with a slightly slackened mouth.
Well, they say she’s cool, but it’s not like she’s gloomy or anything.

“Hey, princess, I want to talk about something.” (Velt)

“Ara, what could it be?” (Arsha)

“Hm~, ah~, this place isn’t that great, so come with me for———” (Velt)

———!

“““““———Eh!””””” (Everyone)

.....?

“Hah?” (Velt)

Huh? The atmosphere changed all of a sudden.

Why is everyone opening and closing their mouths?

“You, even though you are in front of your wife, how could you say you want to go somewhere along with another woman.....” (Shalt)

In the next moment, Forna had knocked the back of my head.

“Ve Ve Ve Ve, Velt! Yo, yo, yo, you, what are you saying! O, o, of all people, to think you would try to take out princess Arsha, there is a limit to how rude you can be! In the first place, you already have Ura and me!” (Forna)

No, wait a minute. You’re misunderstanding something.....

“Velt, you, why do you end up doing such things so easily! If you go too far, even we won’t be able to protect you!” (Shalt)

“Velt, you..... how could you try to have an affair with princess Arsha.”
(Barts)

“Why do you break common sense so easily? In the first place, why princess Arsha, the unsinkable destroyer ship that has continued declining requests from numerous champions and royalty from other countries.” (Hawk)

“Velt-kun, you’re the worst!” (Sannu)

Even Shalt and the others are joining in, say, saying as much as they want.

“Oi oi, that’s no good, Velt~ was it?” (Doremifa)

And, even Doremifa, a guy that I just met today, is getting shocked at me.

“Well, it’s not like I don’t understand why you would fall for princess Arsha. But you know, only a great hero that can change the world and lead humanity, is worthy of grasping the princess’ heart. Well, you became a champion from that medal award the other day, but it’ll still be a long time until you grasp the

princess' heart. Come back again later.” (Doremifa)

Damn, are these guys strange in the head or something? Why are they advancing the conversation under the premise that I fell in love with this woman?

They're even saying I'm trying to have an affair, a guy I just met today is giving me a trashy reputation and at the end of all that, he says I'm not worthy? So annoying~.

“Ahh? That's not it. I just want to talk to her in secret, so I don't want that many people to hear it.” (Velt)

“Haa? What kind of secret talk would you have with the princess!?” (Doremifa)

“Like I said, I don't want people to hear because of some circumstances.” (Velt)

“Then what are those circumstances?” (Doremifa)

“If I say that, then there's no point in it being secret, like, I'm actually going to knock you down!” (Velt)

“What? Knock me down? Oi oi, are you saying that while knowing about me?” (Doremifa)

I'm kinda irritated, so maybe I should use fuwa fuwa panic on him? However, as I thought that, Arsha let out a few words.

“Very well. I will hear you out.” (Arsha)

“Ah, seriously?” (Velt)

“Princess!” (Doremifa)

The soldiers became confused by those unexpected words.
But.....

“But you have to talk about it here.” (Arsha)

Like I said, there's no point if I do that.
This guy's troublesome too.

“I don't know what you want to talk about in secret, but I do not have any secrets that would trouble me if my comrades heard. Rather, keeping secrets from comrades only invites distrust. So, say it right here and now. If you can do that, then I will hear you out.” (Arsha)

You don't have any secrets? Liar!

Oi, you soldiers over there. Although you're feeling moved..... she probably is holding a secret, you know?

“..... Oi, are you sure?” (Velt)

“Yes, I do not mind. Besides, princess Forna will be more relieved that way, right?” (Arsha)

Good grief, guess it can't be helped. Then, I'll just say my main point.....

“Kagami muttered it before, but are you really Ayase?” (Velt)

“..... Eh?” (Arsha)

She made an unexpected, dumbfounded face at the name Ayase.

“““Kagami? Ayase?””” (Everyone)

And just as I thought, the others reacted like that.

See. She really hasn't announced her secret.

Then, the woman that had been wearing a cool mask, suddenly began trembling.

“Um, um-. U~m, hu.....h? Are..... you..... possibly,『that』?” (Arsha)

“Yeah, I'm『that』.” (Velt)

There was only one thing that could be talking about『that』between us.

Then, princess Arsha kept her head hanging down, and for some reason, I could hear a scary, intimidating noise from her.

“You..... you should have said that beforehand!” (Arsha)

Oi, your mask came off. Your comrades are all agitated.

She shouted at me loud enough to make my ears hurt.

Chapter 94: Cool beauty (lol)

It seems 'this' was unexpected.

The princess' mask fell off, and I could see the expression of my former classmate, Ayase.

"Ah~, but, you said to say it right here and now!" (Velt)

"Even so, there are things called exceptions! Ah~, geez. Wait, wait a minute! Does that mean you beat Mackey Mouse while knowing his identity?" (Arsha)

"Well yeah. Forna and everyone else is way more important than an idiot like him who became so crazy. Miyamoto wanted to kill him though." (Velt)

"E-, even Miyamoto-kun! I see it seems you are speaking the truth." (Arsha)

Arsha, rather, Ayase, seems to have finally understood everything.

"Yeah, there's no doubt. I didn't think you could say something like 'one for all,' that even middle-schoolers would be embarrassed to say, with a proud face though." (Velt)

"Th-, th, at is, bu, but..... haa..... you have quite a bad personality. Did you end up like that after spending time in this world?" (Arsha)

"Nah, not really. It's not like I'm making fun of you, I've just always liked mocking people who say really passionate stuff like Barts." (Velt)

"..... It seems I have..... reunited with a troublesome person in a different way to Kagami-kun." (Arsha)

While holding her head in her arms, Ayase started groaning.

Then, she nodded with her embarrassment from getting mocked, her nostalgia and her mixed feelings all showing on her face.

And after keeping her head down silently for a while, she raised her face and informed the soldiers in this room.

"The situation has changed a little. Forna, I will be borrowing him for a while." (Arsha)

"Eh..... wait-!" (Forna)

“Don’t worry. At the very least, we will not be having any talk that would worry you.” (Arsha)

“Arsha, what do you mean! Why, with Velt!” (Forna)

“I cannot say the circumstances, but it is okay. So, don’t look at me with such teary eyes.” (Arsha)

Of course, it wasn’t just Fornia who was against it. Barts, Shalt and the others became speechless since it was too unexpected, and all the Yellow Jaegers lost their cool.

“Pri, princess! Princess, what is happening! Why, with a man like this!?” (Soldier)

“He does seem to be fairly strong, but I do not think he is worthy of being your partner! Please, reconsider it!” (Soldier)

“Princeeeeeeeess!” (Soldier)

“No, princess Arshaaa!” (Soldier)

Oi, your subordinates are all panicking, treating me like a no good, dangerous person.

Although it’s honestly irritating when they go that far, Arsha controlled them with a dignified tone.

“Don’t worry. We are not going to be having any sentimental conversation that you people are thinking.” (Arsha)

“How, however~.” (Soldier)

“Who do you think I am? That sort of affection or love and the like is unnecessary for I, who walks the blood-stained path.” (Arsha)

“Princess.....” (Soldier)

“As I said, our conversation will not be anything like that. A connection..... yes, we just have a connection from the past that we cannot cut.” (Arsha)

Oh my~, how cool. She has some chuunibyou mixed into it, but she’s made her fighting princess character pretty well.

In reality, after she said that, her subordinates, Fornia, and the others weren’t sure what to say, and were just bewildered.

They have faces that show they’re so curious and just can’t help it, but well, this time we really can’t let them know.

“Ve, Velt, um, that, um.” (Forna)

So, don’t look at me with eyes like an abandoned puppy, Fornia.

“I don’t lack as much common sense as I did when I was a brat, to make enemies out of you and Ura. So, it’s okay.” (Velt)

“Uu-, u~~.” (Forna)

“Don’t worry about it. The princess said so too, didn’t she? It’s not like we’re going to have that kind of romantic story.” (Velt)

While stroking Fornia’s head as she sulks, I smile wryly at Ayase.

“Fufu, that being said, I was surprised. Kagami-kun was probably grinning so much because he was imagining this.” (Arsha)

“Yeah, probably.” (Velt)

“Well, no matter. Now then, let’s go. Ah, by the way, can you tell me who you were?” (Arsha)

“Sure. I’m Asakura Ryuuma, from your same class.” (Velt)

“Hee~, you’re Asakura-kun.

Hm~m.....
..... eh?” (Arsha)

Let’s move to have our secret talk..... is what I was thinking, but Ayase suddenly stopped.

“Eh..... A, Asaku, Asakura, Asakura-kun?” (Arsha)

“Yeah. What’s up? Why does everyone I reunite with make that sort of reaction?” (Velt)

“..... You are joking, right?” (Arsha)

“Haa? Why would I make that sort of joke.” (Velt)

“..... No way..... but, but, you.....” (Arsha)

Huh? What’s wrong? Why is she clattering and trembling?
Her teeth are chattering and she’s clearly agitated.

“..... Hey..... during the school festival..... do you remember the time when I collapsed?” (Arsha)

“..... Hah? Are you talking about the time when I carried you on my back?” (Velt)

“U-, uu, a.....!” (Arsha)

“Uoh!” (Velt)

At that moment, Ayase leaned forwards, grabbed my cheeks and looked into my eyes seriously.

“————— Nua-!” (Everyone)

Oi, you’re way too close. I can hear people screaming in the background.

“Th, those, those somewhat cheeky, rebellious eyes.....” (Arsha)

“Oi! What’s up with that way of remembering me!” (Velt)

Good grief. I forcefully twisted my body and released Ayase’s hands, but Ayase stayed rigid.

However, tears gradually overflowing from her eyes.....

“I thought I would never.....be able to meet you again. You..... after all, I thought..... you had not died.” (Arsha)

“We, well sorry about that. Even I can die if I’m unlucky.” (Velt)

“You are Asakura, kun..... you are that.....” (Arsha)

Even though tears were overflowing from her eyes, she was smiling.....

“..... But then, why?” (Arsha)

“Ah?” (Velt)

“You should have felt hesitation in your heart to hurt Kagami-kun..... and yet, why?” (Arsha)

“Why? Stupid. No matter how crazy that idiot gets, I’m not interested in that.” (Velt)

“! The, there it is..... Asakura-kun’s ‘I’m not interested’..... you really are Asakura-kun..... ! Asakura-kun!” (Arsha)

Being overcome with emotions, she smiled and spread both her hands, jumping towards.....

“Asakura-kun!” (Arsha)

“..... Uoh!” (Velt)

I reflexively evaded it.

“Hauwaaaa!” (Arsha)

Ayase, also known as princess Arsha, jumped onto a table head-first, diving

into trays and tableware filled with half-eaten food and turned into a mess.

“““““Gyaaaaaaaaaaaaa, princeeeeeeeeeeees!!!””””” (Everyone)

———Ah.....

“Gowaaa, pri, princeeeeeess!” (Soldier)

“Princess Arsha went maaaad!” (Soldier)

“Wha, what the heck! What the heck happened!” (Soldier)

“Impossible! Princess, ma, ma, ma ma, man, tried to hug a man while smiling!” (Soldier)

“Fur, furthermore, furthermore, this man dodged that! That kind of man..... no, is there any kind of creature like that in this world? To think he would evade the princess’ embrace!” (Soldier)

“Ahhh, what exactly is going on!” (Forna)

“Velt..... yo, you, what are you?” (Barts)

“E, even us childhood friends are trembling with fear.” (Shalt)

Crap, it looks like she hit her head with all her power.

Oooooi, you okay~? As I try to see how she is, Ayase energetically got up, while having soup and leftover food on her head and coat.

“Wh-, why did you dodge it!? It was our moving reunion!” (Arsha)

“I mean..... it just kinda happened.....” (Velt)

“Yo, you, re, really, really are Asakura-kun no matter where you are! Such a Tsunkura-kun as usual!” (Arsha)

“Who’s a Tsunkura, huh!?” (Velt)

Ahh, that reminds me, I feel like I used to get called that.

Although I shouted from getting irritated, I felt somewhat nostalgic and my feelings cleared up.

“Haa, it doesn’t matter anymore. Yeah, it doesn’t! I was able to meet you like this after all.” (Arsha)

“Ho~, it’s an honour to be told that by the former idol of the school. Well, now you’re a princess who’s the hope of humanity though.” (Velt)

“Stop it. I feel like I’m getting laughed at when you say that, and it is really embarrassing.” (Arsha)

Ayase’s smiling too, even though she is getting angry at me.

“..... Yeah..... as I thought, I had been waiting for a reunion like this the whole time..... Miyamoto-kun and Kagami-kun were no longer the people I used to know.” (Arsha)

“I see.....” (Velt)

“Yeah. But, you..... I’m glad you were Asakura-kun. I’m glad you were the one I could reunite with after so long.” (Arsha)

“Ayase. Kuhaha, well, we have a lot of details to fill in though.” (Velt)

“Yeah, let’s talk a lot!” (Arsha)

Ayase shows a carefree smile.

Ah, I’ve seen this smile before.

When was that again? Ayase was originally a cool beauty character from when she was in high school, so she only laughed in a cool way when she did, but I’ve seen her full-face smile before.

——That was amazing, Asakura-kun. We won thanks to you.

Ahh, it was that time. At the athletics festival.

I feel somewhat happier thinking back on the past.

“Then, we should go to a bench outside..... ah.....” (Arsha)

Let’s go outside once again. Even though she thought that, Ayase suddenly stopped still.

Furthermore, this time she groaned from looking at her body with a pale face and even sniffed her clothes.

And then,

“We should..... go in an hour’s time.” (Arsha)

“Haa?” (Velt)

No, seriously, haa?

“Oi oi, what are you saying all of a sudden? Isn’t now fine?” (Velt)

“One hour! Just one hour!” (Arsha)

“Why, do you have something to do?” (Velt)

“Noth, nothing in particular, that’s not it.....” (Arsha)

What’s wrong with her. The cool beauty (lol) is fidgeting while blushing.....

“Do you need to go toilet?” (Velt)

“-Of course not! I want to wash my body in the bath since it is dirty!” (Arsha)

“Oi, who cares about that kind of thing.” (Velt)

“I do! In the first place, since I came here immediately after returning from my expedition, I smell like sweat, and since I dived into the table before.....”

(Arsha)

“What are you saying at this late hour.....!” (Velt)

“Just do it! Um, so, let’s meet up at, oh yes! The cake shop in the capital!”

(Arsha)

“Nah, I already went there together with Forna this morning.” (Velt)

“I, in, in that case, how about the sky garden! Okay? In one hour’s time! Understood?” (Arsha)

After leaving those words behind, Ayase rushed out of the dining hall.

“Ahh, geez! If I knew this was going to happen, I could have changed my hair..... where did I put those clothes? Did I still have that perfume? Is my skin not too rough?” (Arsha)

“””””” “””””” (Everyone)

While dumbfoundedly gazing at Ayase’s back as she left like the storm, the dining hall stayed silent for a while, but after some time, the soldiers that finally couldn’t stand it anymore, all shouted at the same time.

“””””” “Like, really, what kind of relationship do you guys have!?” “””””” (Soldiers)

“What is your relationship with her!?” (Forna)

A~ah, this is troublesome.

Chapter 95: The worst reunion

SOMEWHAT IMPORTANT NOTE: When there's English in the actual raws, it looks like this: aaa. Thanks for reading~

—————

The sky garden. It was one of the most prominent date spots in the capital..... apparently.
However, because of Forna's one to one fight against prince Ragaia the other day, it's currently a crude-looking, destroyed park.

"....." (Arsha)
"Oi, first you prolong our talk, then you wear those hyped-up clothes but suddenly get depressed, like, you're another troublesome woman, huh." (Velt)

Ayase and I are sitting on a half broken bench.
After saying she would take a bath and change her clothes, she appeared one hour later, just as promised, but she came with a black party dress that showed her shoulders and a white shawl, like, where is she planning to go?
I was dumbfounded by her appearance.
However, as she came while looking out of breath, she looked at the sky garden that had completely changed from how it used to be, and hung her head down like a boxer after losing a game, and stayed silent for a while.

"No way, I, I didn't think it had changed this much." (Arsha)
"They had a massive fight, it can't be helped. Like, rather than that, I'm more curious about those supposed professionals that are looking at us while showing themselves in the open." (Velt)

From the shadows, thickets and trees of the park, my childhood friends, the princess' bodyguards and another princess are observing us from behind cover, while being completely visible.
Even if we're supposed to have a slow talk like this, I can't help but notice them.

"You sure are popular as always." (Velt)
"That goes for you too, right? Rather, I didn't know that Forna's fiance that she

had been boasting about from a young age, Velt-kun, was you.” (Arsha)

“Yeah, and I heard that you were one of the Ten Heroes of Light from Miyamoto, but I didn’t know you were the princess of the empire.” (Velt)

“I see. Wait a minute. After hearing I was one of the Ten Heroes of Light from Miyamoto-kun, why did you not ask anything more about me?” (Arsha)

“Hm? Well, I just didn’t.....” (Velt)

“You didn’t? Why?” (Arsha)

..... You’re not going to say it’s because you aren’t interested in me, right? When I answered honestly, she glared at me with a face that looks like it’s saying that.

“Anyway, when did you remember?” (Velt)

“Wait, we have not finished talking yet!” (Arsha)

“It’s fine. So, when did you remember yourself?” (Velt)

I averted the conversation since I didn’t really care. Then, Ayase paused for a bit and slowly started talking about her life.

“I first regained my memories when I was six years old. To be honest, I couldn’t understand what was happening to me for a while.” (Arsha)

“You didn’t know whether you’re your Japanese high schooler self, or yourself in this world. Something like that?” (Velt)

“Yes, it was. But since my mental age was that of a seventeen-year-old, people saw me as a mature child and praised me by saying I am a genius girl. I actually did have a talent for magic after all.” (Arsha)

“I was a rebellious brat. People found me cheeky, twisted, cowardly, stupid and cold drop out. Well, I didn’t have any talent for magic after all. If I didn’t have Forna and sensei with me, I would’ve definitely rotted away while hating this world.” (Velt)

We talk about our lives. At that moment, Ayase noticed one of my words and asked about it.

“Sensei?” (Arsha)

“Kobayakawa-sensei.” (Velt)

“Haa? Ko, Ko, Kobayakawa-sensei! What, e, even sensei is in this world too?”

(Arsha)

“Yeah.” (Velt)

It wasn't just the students that died.
Our teacher on that bus also died and reincarnated in this world.
Hearing that, Ayase kept silent with an indescribable face.

“I reunited with sensei when I was ten years old. Because he moved over to the capital and opened a ramen restaurant, we realized who we were.” (Velt)

“A ramen restaurant. I see, sensei did.....” (Arsha)

“That was just the start. I was saved by having someone that knew my circumstances and real self. I began to face forwards, and properly thought about living in this world.” (Velt)

“So that's what happened. Hearing that, I think it was a good thing Kobayakawa-sensei was the first person you met.” (Arsha)

“You were the opposite, so I'm sure it must've been tiring.” (Velt)

As I say that, Ayase clenches her fists tightly and nodded.

“That's true. Without even being able to think about who I was, my way of life was forced upon me. I had to throw my body into strife because of my life as a princess of a warring country, the obligations I shoulder and the flag of justice. In that time, I reunited with Miyamoto-kun, whose family had been killed by humans, and Kagami-kun, who was trying to destroy this world with malice. I thought that we wouldn't be able to go back to our old selves.” (Arsha)

Thought? Are you trying to say that it's different now?

No, there's no way that's true.

They can't go back now. That's something you should know too.

Otherwise, Samejima, Miyamoto, Kagami and everyone wouldn't have to go through such tiring feelings.

“Fufu, just kidding.” (Arsha)

Ayase showed a slightly lonely smile as if saying she understands.

“Forna told me about you. She said Velt Jeeha has no interest in war. That's why he didn't become a soldier. You might think that I have changed plenty too. But.....” (Arsha)

“I understand.” (Velt)

That's why I told her I understand.

"I understand that you want to say you still had no choice but to do it. Everyone said that too." (Velt)

"Asakura-kun?" (Arsha)

"My standpoint of it was that you could choose the option to not do it. So, I'm not planning to go self-importantly say whatever about you guys, and I'm not planning to persuade you either." (Velt)

Since I didn't have to shoulder anything important, I can't truly understand the pain in their hearts.

A half-hearted consolation is also unnecessary.

So, this is all I can say.

"Well, I'm glad that we could meet like this again." (Velt)

Regardless of what kind of life we had walked, we should at least enjoy our reunion.

Even if we can't go back to our old selves, if even our reunion is full of sadness, there's no chance of salvation.

"Yeah..... uu-, uu..... yeah!" (Arsha)

I didn't look to my side. I didn't look at Ayase's face right now, no matter how loud she sniffles.

"Fufu, but Forna is lucky~." (Arsha)

"Hah?" (Velt)

"Even though you aren't interested in war, she's so important to you for you to jump in and risk your life." (Arsha)

I became a bit embarrassed as Ayase looked at me with a somewhat teasing smile.

"Make sure to take care of that girl." (Arsha)

"Well, as long as she doesn't abandon me." (Velt)

"She competed with me a lot in the empire national military academy when we were ten years old. And every time, she always boasted about having a lover or about how many times she has kissed." (Arsha)

"That little precocious brat. No wonder everyone in the capital was grinning

while looking at us.” (Velt)

“It’s true. In mock battles, she would start talking about how she definitely wouldn’t lose against me, who doesn’t know of love. She really was rude. Even though I have fallen in love before. Not as Arsha, but as Ayase though.” (Arsha)

At that moment, Ayase came close and stared into my face as she winked while smiling.

I reflexively tried to take distance, but as if saying she won’t let me go, Ayase grabbed my hand.

I can hear people screaming, “kyaa,” and, “princeeeess,” but Ayase didn’t care at all.

“Before when I was Ayase, all sorts of people had relied on me. Since I knew that was trust, I was proud of it and was desperate to meet their expectations. I didn’t even rest cram school so that my grades would not be affected by being a class committee member, cultural festival executive committee, working as part of the student council and working as the president of a club, and I even lacked the time to sleep. Fufu, it was really weak compared to my life now though.” (Arsha)

I know. No, I didn’t know how much she was doing, but I remember that she collapsed from the fatigue of working too hard.

“One day, I collapsed from over working, but all I remember is the back of the person who carried me to the school infirmary, that for some reason seemed so reliable.” (Arsha)

“..... Ho..... ho~.” (Velt)

“You know, I hated that person. After all, he was a person that only came on important days like the athletic festival or the cultural festival. Without understanding how much hard work I put into preparing for those days, he just settled it with ‘I’m not interested’. What do you think about guys like that?” (Arsha)

“Well, he’s an extremely cringy chuunibyou guy.” (Velt)

“Exactly. On top of that, his behaviour is bad, his mouth is bad and his personality is bad too. He’s lived the exact opposing type of life that I did. On

top of that, when someone teased him for carrying me on his back, he just said 'I'm not interested in her'. What do you think about him?" (Arsha)

"Maybe he..... had someone else he liked?" (Velt)

"That's right. It's exactly as you say. Regardless of what he said, that person always followed a certain girl with his eyes. Even though he would be rude, he immediately gets embarrassed, laughs a bit and ends up trying his hardest to fulfil that girl's requests. But since he couldn't be honest, the people around him seeing it just got irritated." (Arsha)

"What a troublesome guy." (Velt)

"Yes. He really was a troublesome person. That's right..... I wonder why..... I had been following his troublesome behaviour with my eyes ever since the day he carried me on his back. I must have become curious since he was a person that was the exact opposite of myself." (Arsha)

Even though I get more embarrassed the more I listen, Ayase didn't let go of my hand, to show that she won't let me escape.

She was smiling at the start but gradually became more serious while fixedly staring at me.

Her eyes..... are passionate.....

"That kind of troublesome person came to the field trip and had an expression that showed determination in it. It came to me immediately. It was like, 'ahh, this person is going to confess to the person he likes during the field trip, isn't he.'" (Arsha)

"E, eh? Eh! Wai, you, how did you know that!" (Velt)

"That's why..... the moment I realized that, I also became determined. To tell that person that they are always on my mind and I just can't help it. I finally ended up doing it in the next world though." (Arsha)

No, wait. You wait.

The guys that are peeking at us probably find our conversation incomprehensible, but your face right now is totally showing what you're going to do. Wait a minute.

That's something even I.....

"Puh..... ufufufufufu." (Arsha)

“Ah.” (Velt)

“Just kidding. How was it? Did you get even a little shocked?” (Arsha)

Ayase suddenly lets go of my hands and starts laughing.

“Eh?” (Velt)

As I raise a strange voice from not understanding what’s going on, Ayase shows a someone painful smile and shakes her head.

“That was the love story of a girl called Ayase, who does not exist in this world. And, I am the princess of the Archline Empire, Arsha Archline, who is living in this world. Just like you live as Velt Jeeha and not Asakura Ryuuma.” (Arsha)

Yeah, that’s right. It’s just as you say.
Regardless of our details, we’re living in this world after all.

“It is the same for you, right?” (Arsha)
“Yeah, it’s just as you say.” (Velt)
“That’s right, you are cherishing your current life, instead of chasing after the illusion of the girl Asakura Ryuuma liked, right?” (Arsha)

..... Hm?

“Ara? What is it?” (Arsha)

Sile~~~~~nce

“Hey. What is it? You suddenly became all silent like that.” (Arsha)

Without being able to say anything, I felt awkward and averted my eyes. However, in the next moment, probably because she noticed something, Ayase stood up from the bench, came in front of me, looked at me with reproachful eyes and asked with a different tone of voice.

“Hey, Asakura-kun. Surely you don’t still.....” (Arsha)
“Wha. What? What’s up with you, making that kind of face.” (Velt)
“You..... surely you won’t say..... that you still..... like Kamino Mina, surely you won’t say that you still like Mina.” (Arsha)

..... Yeah, let’s become defiant.

“What, is, is that wrong?” (Velt)

“Of course it’s wrong!” (Arsha)

She hit me hard and I was sent flying over the bench.

“Wha, what the hell are you doing!?” (Velt)

“Hey~, what do you mean by this, Asakura-kun! I thought you were Forna’s lover?” (Arsha)

“Ah~, explaining that is too troublesome but basically, there’s just a whole bunch of reasons.” (Velt)

“Look here, you are Velt Jeeha! Have you not parted from your past as Asakura Ryuuma? Why are you still thinking about Mina!” (Arsha)

“Don’t just go saying selfish stuff like parting! In the first place, even the reason why I’m on a journey right now..... is.....” (Velt)

Ah..... I feel like she’ll get angry at me again if I say this.

No, it’s my life after all, so it doesn’t matter to Ayase and there’s no reason for her to get angry at me, but I reflexively stopped talking.

However, Ayase seems to have understood everything from just that.

From her reproachful eyes, she then started looking down on me with super ice-chilled eyes.

“That reminds me, why were you able to help the empire when you were supposed to have been living in the Elfarshia Kingdom without getting involved in war? Considering the distance, it would have taken at least one month.” (Arsha)

“Tha, that’s..... I was just coincidentally nearby during my journey.....” (Velt)

“Why were you on a journey? Hey? Asakura-kun?” (Arsha)

At that moment, from her ice cold expression, Ayase then tilted her head with a friendly grin, that held a terrifying sense of intimidation.

“Ufufufu, surely not, Asakura-kun. While saying ‘I’m not interested in war’ surely you didn’t think about the possibility of Mina being somewhere in this world..... and decided to go on a journey to find Mina, right?” (Arsha)

She’s amazing. As expected of a champion that’s given as much praise as

Forna.

Like, even though I haven't answered, she seems to have understood the answer already.

"Hm~~~~~m." (Arsha)

"..... What, is that bad?" (Velt)

However, she has no reason to get angry at me. I became defiant because of that.

Then, while strongly holding my collar, Ayase vented her feelings at me, without showing any part of her cool face.

"You must be joking! Why, why would you do something like that!? You can't say much about Kagami-kun! You are still being influenced strongly by Asakura Ryuuma too!" (Arsha)

"It's not like I'm causing anyone trouble!" (Velt)

"What are you going to do about Fornia! While knowing Fornia's feelings, while talking to Fornia in a suggestive way, while knowing that Fornia is fighting for the world with her life on the line, you were going on a journey to search for Mina? That kind of thing, I cannot allow it!" (Arsha)

Uwa~o, my ears hurt. Yeah, that's right. It's just as you say.

That's right. I'm a shitty asshole that was searching for a woman while everyone was fighting for the world, for humanity.

But you know,

"Of course, Fornia is important. But, since this is something I can't just give up, it can't be helped." (Velt)

"You rebellious Tsunderekura-kun, you have become defiant now." (Arsha)

"Rather than becoming defiant now, I've always been open. But the thing is, regardless of whether I'm Velt or Asakura, that's my objective in this life." (Velt)

"Wha, what was that?" (Arsha)

Ayase's fist is trembling. She's expressing her anger at me, saying this is too stupid.

Well, there's no reason why she can say that to me, but she does have the right to do so.

"Ayase. You knew what kind of shitty asshole I was from the start. I repeated

worthless things day after day, and was a man that had no worth in living.”
(Velt)

“That is.....” (Arsha)

“But you know, when I did actually die, I ended up regretting. That was because my life was so fun that I wanted to live longer. The person that taught me that, the person that made me think that way, was Kamino.” (Velt)

“Even so.....” (Arsha)

“I still haven’t said anything to her. I haven’t given anything back to her. And even though I normally wouldn’t be able to say anything if I die, I’m living like this. So, I want to tell her no matter what. That I was saved by you. That it was fun. That I’m grateful. And, if in this world..... she has any problems, I want to help her. That’s my way of putting a distinction to my past life.” (Velt)

That’s right. Rather than an attachment, this is a distinction.
And, it’s something I want to do from the bottom of my heart.

“Then..... what. Are you going to confess when you meet her or something?” (Arsha)

“I was thinking about that when I was ten years old. However, I’m not at that level anymore. I just want to repay her.” (Velt)

“Then, are you only going to marry Forna?” (Arsha)

“A, ah? I wonder..... well, she’s looked after me a lot and I’m grateful to her. Recently I’ve been thinking it would be okay to give the rest of my life as Velt Jeeha to her.” (Velt)

“I see..... then, if Mina says she likes you when you reunite with her, you would reject her confession, right?” (Arsha)

“Wha, what? Kamino, to me?” (Velt)

No, like, there’s no way that would happen.
Well, that’s probably impossible.
Yeah, that’s impossible.
Uh huh..... impossible?

“Why does your face look like you are imagining it!” (Arsha)

“Guho-!” (Velt)

I was slapped in the face.

“Ahhh, I see. You really are the worst! I cannot forgive you! I am really angry now!” (Arsha)

“Tsu-, it, it’s fine, isn’t it!? It’s not like I’m troubling you or anything!” (Velt)

“What about me, I am the one that is backing out for Forna’s sake, persuading myself that I am no longer Ayase and wanted to show off, saying that it was just something of the past!” (Arsha)

“Like I care about that!” (Velt)

“That’s unfair! Unfair! You just coincidentally met us without much care, but only when it comes to Mina, you say things like wanting to find her or wanting to be of power to her, it is unfair!” (Arsha)

“Who cares! In the first place, you have a countless number of strong allies with you anyway!” (Velt)

“No! I..... I was watching you all along! I liked you from long, long ago!” (Arsha)

Ah..... while crying..... she went and said it.....
Well, yeah. I knew since Samejima told me in the past, but would you really say it at this kind of timing?

“Giiyaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaa!” (Soldier)
“Gowaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaa!” (Soldier)
“Hogyaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaa!” (Soldier)
“Priiinceeeess Arshaaaaaaaaa!” (Soldier)
“hdfp23iurfdj2@lp3m;es, aaaaaaa amo3@0irfj2pl3;wm!!!”
(Soldier?)

—————!!!

Leaving aside stuff about Asakura, Ayase, the contents of the conversation and whether or not they understand it, the Yellow Jaegers, humanity’s great allied forces and the champions of humanity came out of cover all together and made me fall over.

And, I was pushed down in a horse riding position onto the sobbing

princess.....

“Ve Ve Vel Veltttt~~~.” (Forna)

While Fornia, who was wobbling while approaching me like a zombie, and.....

“Makyokushin Karate, Heaven Axe Kick!” (Ura)

“Uo, that was dangerous!” (Velt)

I reflexively rolled to the side to dodge it.

However, if I didn’t, it would’ve been dangerous. She would’ve totally killed me. The one who suddenly did an axe kick from the sky to kill us and ended up making a hole in the ground was clad in a dark aura.....

“Fufu, fufufufufu, I came to search for you since it was getting late..... and yet, what are you doing, Velttttt!” (Ura)

“Loord! Loord! I, I, who should I be calling your lady?” (Musashi)

Ura, whose bright red eyes are shining enough to make me want to call her a demon king, and Musashi, who flusteredly shouts.

“Ura, Musashi, I thought you guys were house-sitting.” (Velt)

She came to search for me since I was getting late, but..... I give up.....

“Gusu-. Who, who are these girls, wait, a demon!” (Arsha)

“Arshaaaaaa! I did not quite understand the contents of your conversation, but I heard you had liked him since long ago! What do you mean by that!” (Forna)

“You guys better stop saying you like someone’s man, it’s not funny! You damn thieving cats!” (Ura)

“Uooooon, who, who is my lord’s lady~!” (Musashi)

Well then, what should I do about this worst possible development.....

Kuhahahahaha, worst? This? That’s not even funny.

The word ‘worst’ isn’t something to use so easily.

I was about to really understand that in just a few more seconds.

That’s right, for me, the worst is.....

“Ara ara, what might this commotion be all about?” (?)

One woman appeared.
It really was sudden.
No, this is the empire.
I had forgotten that it was completely possible for ‘this’.
The moment I heard that woman’s voice, it felt like time had stopped.
Under this situation that isn’t even serious, my heart sprung up the moment I heard that voice.
No, it wasn’t just me.

“..... Eh?” (Ura)

Even Ura, who was overcome by anger, became dumbfounded at hearing that voice and seeing the owner of that voice.

“Everyone, I was searching for you. Did something happen for you to gather in a place like this?” (?)

That woman was beautiful.
She’s probably older than us, but I could see an adult seductiveness in her cute expression.
She’s wearing the Yellow Jaegers’ yellow coat and a black hat with a wide brim.
Her hair is iridescent, fluffy and long. Her body line is thin, and above all..... no, that kind of thing doesn’t matter!

“Ah, o, oh, vice chief!” (Soldier)
“Hi!” (Soldier)
“Hello, thank you for your hard work.” (Soldier)

The moment they saw her appearance, the Yellow Jaegers and humanity’s great allied forces gave a normal greeting.

“Wha, what is it. It’s not like it there is any problem with it.” (Arsha)
“Ara ara, for even the princess to be this flustered, is something wrong?” (?)

Even Ayase is talking to this woman normally.
However, in my heart, and in Ura’s heart, we can’t stay normal.
There’s no way we could stay normal.

“This woman.....” (Velt)
“Yo-..... you, you are.....” (Ura)

As Ura and I are so agitated that we can't make talk properly, Ayase sighs while introducing us, without knowing the circumstances.

"Ahh, it must be your first time meeting her, Asakura-kun. She was a former general of the empire but she is currently supporting me as the vice chief in the Yellow Jaegers, and like Forna and I, she is one of the Ten Heroes of Light. You have at least heard of her name, right? The smiling....." (Arsha)

Before Arsha says her name, Ura jumps out, covered in brutal, sinister anger.

"Gyanzaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaa!!" (Ura)

That's right. My trauma.

And, the woman that killed Samejima!

Chapter 96: Getting turned on by my first

An overwhelming atmosphere of crazy death. I feel chills as always.

“Ara. You are,-” (Gyanza)

Even though it completely changed from our warm, ordinary day, everyone took the precise actions in an instant.

“Gyanzaaaaaaaaaa!” (Ura)

Ura, who had become a lump of killing intent and hatred, couldn't see her surroundings at all.

Doremifa of the Yellow Jaegers reflexively tried to cut Ura down, as she's trying to attack Gyanza, his superior officer.

However, the moment Doremifa drew his sword, Barts crossed swords with him to try and stop him.

A magician of the Yellow Jaegers fires a single-shot magic at Ura. However, Musashi cuts apart that magic with a high-speed slash.

Gyanza relaxedly puts her hand on the sword on her waist. However, I steal that away with fuwa fuwa collection.

Gyanza opens her eyes wide in surprise, but she immediately points her palm to Ura and fires magic.

However, Forna tackled Ura at lightning speed just before it hit her, stopping it. That all happened in only a few seconds.

If the smallest thing had gone wrong we might've seen blood, but as a result, no one was injured and just silence hung in the sky garden.

“Fuu, fuu, fuu-! Gyanza..... Gyanza!” (Ura)

Ura's on the ground since Forna threw her down, but her bright red eyes were murky and hot like flames, overflowing with extraordinarily negative feelings.

On the other hand, the Yellow Jaegers and Barts and the others suddenly made serious looks.

Barts, Shalt, Hawk, Sannu and Musashi block the Yellow Jaegers to control them.

When I think about how a single mistake could've done something to Ura, I probably became agitated the most.

“Haa, haa, haa, Ura.....” (Velt)

There was a short while of glaring at each other in silence.

Then, after a few seconds, words flew out to each other as if they burst out of a dam.

“What are you doing! Barts! Princess Forna! And, Velt Jeeha! I heard the demon and demi-human assisted in defending the capital, but why are they attacking vice chief Gyanza!?” (Doremifa)

“Wait, Doremifa! There are reasons for this! We'll hold Ura down, so overlook what just happened!” (Barts)

“There is no need for questions. Hand over that demon immediately! We will thoroughly investigate her background, motive, connection and everything. With my magic, that much is simple. Shalt, give her to me.” (Solasido)

“Wait, Solasido! As a citizen of Elfarshia, I apologize for the crime Ura just made. So, make us take the punishment!” (Shalt)

Overlook Ura.

Give Ura to us.

While both thoughts crossed together, Ayase stood between both sides with remarkably intense eyes.

“Both parties, settle your staffs, swords and words.” (Arsha)

“Princess Arsha! However!” (Doremifa)

“Doremifa. Are you unable to listen to what I say?” (Arsha)

“! We, n, no.....” (Doremifa)

Ayase? No, she's not. This is Arsha.

With just her absolute words and intimidating air, she stopped both sides.

And, princess Arsha began to ask me, not Asakura Ryuuma, but my current self, Velt Jeeha.

“You will explain, right Velt Jeeha-kun?” (Arsha)

No lies or question-avoiding will work against her.
I resign myself and start talking about everything.
However, before I could start doing so, Gyanza stares at Ura and me and opens her eyes widely.

“I see..... well well, it has been a long time, princess Ura. And..... you have become bigger haven’t you, boy.” (Gyanza)

While being slightly surprised but also somewhat happy, Gyanza talks to us with a gentle smile.
Probably because they were surprised by our connection, everyone other than Forna, who knows the circumstances, became confused.

“Gyanza. Are you their acquaintances?” (Arsha)

“Yes. It was from five years ago. Princess, do you remember Sharkryu, one of the former Seven Great Demon Kings?” (Gyanza)

“Sharkryu? There is no way I could forget. He was the one that took to his heels at the end of his battle against my elder brother. Then, because you pursued and defeated him, you gained the title of the Ten Heroes of Light.” (Arsha)

“That is correct. And, these two are the ones that risked their lives to protect demon king Sharkryu. His beloved daughter, princess Ura Vesparda. And, the child that demon king Sharkryu said was his only human friend. That is, this boy.” (Gyanza)

“Eh, Vesparda?” (Arsha)

That’s right, that’s a name that was once famous across the world.

“The daughter of Sharkryu Vesparda, one of the Seven Great Demon Kings? She was still alive?” (Arsha)

“Please wait a minute, vice chief! Why would such an important person be in the Elfarshia Kingdom!?” (Doremifa)

“That was the Elfarshia Kingdom’s condition to avoid conflict.” (Gyanza)

Gyanza’s eyes stared at me, and at Forna, who’s slowly getting up.
Forna nodded and answered to that look.

“By taking complete responsibility for this girl at the time, Ura, we asked for Gyanza’s retreat.” (Forna)

“What? Fornia, why would a nation of humanity’s great allied forces, the Elfarshia Kingdom, need Gyanza and the others, who came to subjugate the demon king, to retreat?” (Arsha)

Forna didn’t know how to answer that question.
It’s only natural. After all, that was because.....

“Me.” (Velt)

“Eh?” (Forna)

“It’s because of me since I was fighting that woman. Fornia and everyone else risked themselves to save me.” (Velt)

“Velt!” (Forna)

“It’s fine, Fornia. I knew this kind of thing would happen someday.” (Velt)

That’s right. Everything started with me.

“What do you mean by this? Velt Jeeha-kun. And, what did Gyanza mean by saying that you were Sharkryu’s friend?” (Arsha)

Arsha’s eyes became all the more intense.
It’s reasonable since her comrade was almost injured.
Even the Yellow Jaegers are prepared to send our heads flying.
Then, even in that situation, this woman was the same as ever.

“It is simple, princess. This boy was manipulated by the demon king and princess Ura, and was simply being used by them.” (Gyanza)

I want to be praised for not reflexively hitting her.
Well, although I don’t like this woman, it’s not like I’m feeling nervous.

“Kuhahahahahahahahaha! You reaaally aren’t able to get into a conversation as usual. I really do want to smash your head in some time.” (Velt)

“Is that so, boy. In the end, it seems you are still under the brainwashing. How pitiful.” (Gyanza)

“I’m glad you haven’t changed how irritating you are.” (Velt)

It’s no good. I feel like I might punch her if I get another motive.

“I really should have saved you at that time. No matter what kind of trick I

had to use.” (Gyanza)

“Fuh, I regret it too. If only I was stronger back then, I could’ve killed the hell out of you.” (Velt)

“You do not change, do you boy. That kiss at that time still could not save you back then.” (Gyanza)

“Ahh, that reminds me, I had my first kiss with Forna, but the one that took my first deep one was you, wasn’t it. Thanks to that, I get both irritated and turned on by you.” (Velt)

I’m not good with her as ever.

She’s different from Kagami.

Kagami has proper malice behind his crazy thoughts and actions. That’s why he did those things.

But she’s different. She genuinely thinks that what she’s doing is the correct thing.

That’s why I don’t like it.

At any rate, since we are in a somewhat serious situation, these guys shouldn’t respond with, “deep one?”

Then, probably being afraid of the conversation derailing and because she wants to know herself, Forna crossed her arms and started talking to me.

“Velt. It is a request from me too. Could you please say the truth here?”
(Forna)

“Forna?” (Velt)

“Five years ago. We accepted Ura into the Elfarshia Kingdom. However, the truth is that you even prostrated yourself to the king, and directly requested it, saying it was your once in a lifetime wish. We accepted it, as it was a request from your heart that you had never shown before, but we had not heard the truth about it.” (Forna)

That was something Barts nor Shalt and the others knew about.

From the guys that knew me since we were brats, they’re probably thinking, “he even prostrated?”

That was something Arsha…… no, Ayase was probably thinking too.

“You went as far as prostrating yourself? That is very interesting. Can you talk about it?” (Arsha)

At the time, I didn't say the truth since I thought no one would understand it. However, the situation is a bit different now. That's because Ayase is in front of me now. The reason why I'm a friend of demon king Sharkryu and the reason why I'm protecting his daughter, Ura, could be settled with a few words because she's here.

"Ura, is Samjima's daughter." (Velt)

"..... Hah?" (Arsha)

"Demon king Sharkryu's identity, is Asakura and Ayase's classmate, Samejima. That's the truth." (Velt)

"Wh..... at..... Same, jima, kun. That Samejima-kun was..... Sharkryu?" (Arsha)

Considering Ayase's current feelings, well, it must be complicated.

"No way..... Samjima-kun was? Then..... Samejima-kun was, by my brother, and Gyanza? That kind of thing is....." (Arsha)

It's a story from five years ago. However, although she didn't know nor was she related to it, for Ayase, it wasn't a problem that she could settle so easily.

"Gyanza once..... or rather, the empire once feared a trick or motive of circulating humanity's information behind the peace offer made by the queen of Vesparda, and rejected it. They captured the queen and then executed her." (Arsha)

"Yeah. That was Ura's..... mother." (Velt)

"A, and then, that person was, Sa, Samejima-kun's..... wife..... in this world." (Arsha)

Yeah, it's just as you say.

I didn't hear too much about that, and I had chosen to not ask Ura, who was living together with me, the details.

Of course, I know that Ayase can't do anything about that right now.

"A-, Asaku, ra, kun. Asakura-kun. I..... I..... cannot apologize for that! I cannot make up for it either!" (Arsha)

I know. I understand your feelings of wanting to say that that's just how war is.

“I cannot say that the decision Gyanza and the military authorities made was wrong, as they were assuming the worst case scenario. If for example, the same thing happened now, I might have still made the same decision.” (Arsha)

Yeah, that’s why you guys are different to me.
You’ve been living in that kind of world after all.

“I know, Ayase. I painfully understand what you’re feeling.” (Velt)
“Asakura-kun.....” (Arsha)

“So, this is my greatest request. I beg you, please overlook what Ura just did. Think of it as the last request made not by demon king Sharkryu, but by Samejima.” (Velt)

I want her to let me use the card of considering his feelings as a former classmate.

I pleaded to Ayase like so.

“That is unfair, Asakura-kun. Even though you did not come to save me no matter how much of a tough time I was going through..... you try to be of help to Mina and Samejima-kun.....” (Arsha)

Because I know Ayase’s feelings for me, I was too ashamed to face her, and unintentionally hung my head down.

“U, uuuu, uuuuuuu!” (Ura)
“Ura.” (Velt)

At that time, I saw Ura’s tears for the first time in five years, as she stayed lying down.

“I’m sorry. Velt..... I’m sorry. I just couldn’t control myself no matter what.” (Ura)

Despite covering her eyes and face with her arms, her overflowing tears endlessly kept flowing down.

That’s only natural. It’s reasonable.

“Father, mother, Ruuga and everyone, she killed them..... even I did the same thing to the people of Bolbardie..... although Musashi was able to endure it even when she was in front of her enemy hunters..... I..... couldn’t endure it.....” (Ura)

It can't be helped. That kind of thing depends on the person.

"Yeah, I know. I know, so stop making that face." (Velt)

There are times when you just can't endure it.

"Get away from the daughter of the devil, boy." (Gyanza)

Much less if it's this woman, it's all the more so.

"You cannot let yourself be brainwashed by the devil's tears. Now, come, boy. That in itself may be your fate. It has taken five years, but now is the time for you to become one with me and set your soul free." (Gyanza)

"Shut up, be silent." (Velt)

"It is okay. I know that those words are not your real thoughts." (Gyanza)

But you know, Ura. If you fight like this, you'll be making the whole of humanity your enemy.

"Princess Arsha. There is no need to overlook it. I will dispose of Ura Vesparda right here and now." (Gyanza)

"W-, wa, wait, Gyanza!" (Arsha)

"I believe that my decisions on the battlefield are correct, princess." (Gyanza)

That's the one thing I definitely can't let happen.

"Ayase. As I said right now, I want you to overlook Ura's actions. But..... I don't mind if you don't do that for me." (Velt)

"Asakura-kun!" (Arsha)

That's because I'm Ura's family, and above all, it was a promise to my friend. And before I had realized it, I was relaxedly standing in front of Gyanza. She's ominous as always, and the air around her seems like it suggests death or something.

However, I can't get cold feet like I did when I was a brat.

"Boy?" (Gyanza)

"I'm different to how I was five years ago. Now I can even beat you up." (Velt)

At that time, Samejima ended up betting his life to save Ura and me.

"O, oi! Velt Jeeha!" (Doremifa)

“Stop it, Velt!” (Forna)

“Wait, Velt!” (Ura)

“Lord!” (Musashi)

In the end, Farga and the others ended up saving us back then.
However, I’m not how I was in the past.

“Gyanza. Just try even putting a single finger on Ura. I’ll make that yellow coat of yours covered in vomit. Or do you want me to make it covered bright red?”
(Velt)

I’ll protect her.
So, when the time comes, I’ll beat this woman up.

“Boy. Even though you are being brainwashed, I am asking you this while wishing that some part of your human heart is remaining. Do you think your actions are correct?” (Gyanza)

“Kuhahaha, worthless. I’m not interested in that. I don’t base my actions on whether they’re correct or incorrect. I base them on the people involved. Even if a survivor of Bolbardie tried to take revenge on Ura, I’ll still protect Ura.”
(Velt)

“Ahh, how pitiful. To think you would not even question your selfish and contradicting thoughts.” (Gyanza)

“Yeah, pity me. Well, the one that continued living so selfishly in this world..... is the most stupid and idiotic race, the delinquent. Remember that!” (Velt)

There’s no point arguing with this woman from the start.
She’ll always derail the conversation towards the day after tomorrow after all.
So, I’m not going to make any more excuses towards this woman.
If she does something, I just have to thoroughly fight against her.
Then, Gyanza made a small nod and looked at me.
She narrowed her eyes as if pitying me.

“.....Is that so..... boy. I will save you, although I could not five years ago. You just have to endure for a bit longer. I will definitely save you, even if I get pregnant.” (Gyanza)

“Kuhaha, don’t even try it. Someone like you can’t deal with the greediness of

a person that's continued being a virgin since their past life! My seven-coloured finger technique will make blood spit from your body!" (Velt)

"My, well well..... that is making me numb!" (Gyanza)

"Kuhaha, that's where you're supposed to be shivering!" (Velt)

At that moment, Gyanza disappeared from my field of vision..... and had already jumped right up close to me.

However, my head that seemed hot was calm, and I had started my fuwa fuwa time.

Chapter 97: Been five years

What a dreadful scene.

You could even say she's like a god of death wearing a pure white wedding dress.

A combination of her innocent smile and bloody atmosphere.

This amazingly beautiful woman made such a traumatic scene five years ago, killed Samejima and tried to take my first time.

"Bring it on, asshole!" (Velt)

However, I'll mow down all of that deception and trauma.

Regardless of whether my opponent is humanity's strongest or the champion of the world, I exchanged a high five with Samejima at that time to protect Ura from everything.

"Fuwa fuwa panic!" (Velt)

I cause a concussion by rocking her in all directions. It's something I couldn't do five years ago.

Now's the time to do what I couldn't do back then.

"Ara. My body is..... or rather, this is to my clothes....." (Gyanza)

..... Is what I was planning to be doing, but I guess it won't go so easily.

"Wha-, just the coat!" (Velt)

Is this a ninja's so-called substitution technique?

Gyanza threw her coat off in an instant, and just her coat was moving around in the air.

Gyanza herself had already gone behind me by the time I let out my words and had put her hand against the nape of my neck.

"I do not understand what kind of attack you were planning on using, but for now, this is the end." (Gyanza)

"Uu....." (Velt)

Something I couldn't do back then? In the end, it was over before I could do anything.

No, I can't let it end like this!

"U-, damn it! Fuwa fuwa..... ah?" (Velt)

Twisting my body, I turn my face around and jump backwards.....

"There we go." (Gyanza)

When I turned around, Gyanza was no longer there.

And then, although I tried to jump back to take distance, Gyanza had gone round so fast, that she was already there waiting for me to hold me tightly.

"Okay, it is over." (Gyanza)

Those words she whispered right into my ear, made me get goosebumps all over my body.

"Y..... ou!" (Velt)

"Ara, geez, you are rebellious as always." (Gyanza)

What is this?

Why am I being treated like this right now?

"Haa, haa, haa, haa." (Velt)

"Fufu, you don't need to be embarrassed, boy. Even if you don't breath so roughly, I will not run away. Now, it is time to set you free." (Gyanza)

There's no way this should be happening!

"Uraaaah!" (Velt)

At this rate, it'll just be a reenactment from five years ago.

To not let something like that happen again, I.....

"Okay." (Gyanza)

"U..... o....." (Velt)

The moment I almost punched her, she had caught my wrist before it could reach her.

"Shit! Uraaaah! Rah! Rah! Uraah!" (Velt)

"Hoh, oh, okay." (Gyanza)

The moment I tried to kick her, a hand had approached the thigh of my stepping leg.

In that case, I'll headbutt her!

"Nnno, get crushed!" (Velt)

"Welcome. Chu-." (Gyanza)

She easily grabbed my head tightly with both hands and gently kissed my forehead.

"A..... ass, asshole....." (Velt)

"Do you still need more foreplay? Boy. You can insert it if you cannot resist anymore, alright?" (Gyanza)

The smiling Gyanza. She isn't even fighting me.

As if dealing with a rebellious brat, she parried all my attacks.

She can kill me whenever she wants..... she made me feel that she can take my first-time when she feels like it.

"Ve..... It....., just, keep it to that, Velt! Come apologize together with me, even if means you have to prostrate yourself." (Forna)

"Forna....." (Velt)

"If something were to happen to you, what will happen to me, what will happen to Ura!" (Forna)

I should be able to beat up Gyanza now? I wasn't trying to be conceited.

I survived against one of the Four Heavenly Beast Demi-humans.

I defeated monster master Cleran at the end of a struggle to the death against her.

I overwhelmed Kagami through power.

I've passed through quite a few fights and overcame all of them.

That had become my confidence.

And yet, what is this? There's a problem from before whether or not I fight.

"Velt..... although you fought Gyanza five years ago, that was a story from five years in the past. Gyanza, who has overcome an endless amount of life or death battles and flourished her blessed natural talent and ability..... is one of the top five within the Ten Heroes of Light!" (Forna)

I became stronger after five years? Gyanza was the one that really got

stronger.

You could say Gyanza, who was fifteen at the time back then, only continued growing.

Now that she says it, I should be imagining Forna, who enhanced her experiences and qualities to the limit in these five years.

So, I'm basically confronting a monster that has completely matured.

"A, as always..... the vice chief is terrifyingly strong. She's completely treating that Velt Jeeha, who overwhelmed Mackey Mouse, like a child."

(Doremifa)

"Fuh, it, it's only natural. She's the strongest in the empire. That's exactly why the king put Gyanza-sama next to princess Arsha as the vice chief." (Solasido)

"Velt is....." (Barts)

"E-, even, even if we all fought her at once, she would probably be able to kill us in an instant." (Shalt)

This is the type of thing that makes even allies shudder in fear.

Despite her destroyed pattern of thinking, how can she still be recognized as a champion in this world?

It's simple. It's because she's exceptionally strong.

At the very least, she's overwhelming enough for a big fish in a little pond like me to not even be able to challenge her.

"Le-, let go..... of Velt!" (Ura)

"Lord-! I will come right now!" (Musashi)

Stop it! Don't come!

Ura and Musashi try to jump out to save me.

However, before I can shout, and before the Yellow Jaegers try to hold them down.....

"Fufu..... how sad..... a demi-human and demon..... as expected, I have no choice but to massacre them all." (Gyanza)

A chill ran through the air, and the condensed, ominous coercion held down Ura and Musashi, who tried to jump out.

Their bodies stiffened as if they became paralyzed, and a waterfall of sweat ran down their foreheads.....

“Sto, stop it oiiiiiii!” (Velt)

“Kuh, it seems there is no choice.” (Forna)

Ahh, everything’s going to be over in an instant.

Forna’s trying to jump out, but she probably won’t make it in time.

Even though I can’t see the future, a vivid image of Ura and Musashi’s heads being sent flying passed through my head.

With just one different opinion, you can lose everything.

Even though I know that’s how this world is.....

“Composite magic, Ice Earth.” (Arsha)

At that moment, a cage of ice appeared without any previous notice, and Gyanza was locked in it just before she reached them.

“..... Stop it, vice chief Gyanza. As the commander and as the princess of the Archline Empire, I order you.” (Arsha)

It’s Ayase.

Clad in her firm dignity as a princess, she ordered Gyanza, making her know that she won’t let her object.

“..... Princess..... do you not think that decision is incorrect? Or else..... excuse me, but is there any chance you are brainwashed too, princess?” (Gyanza)

Gyanza, whose movements are sealed in the cage, asks Ayase without smiling. However, without getting her attitude thrown off balance, she asks an allied soldier.

“Solasido” (Arsha)

“Yes!” (Solasido)

“Could you check whether there is any sort of brainwashing or hypnotism magic cast on me right now?” (Arsha)

“Eh, well, however, there is no need to even check..... princess.....”
(Solasido)

“I thought so. That is what he says, Gyanza.” (Arsha)

Ayase is emphasising that she’s making that decision while not being manipulated.

“Moreover, regardless of their true intention, ignoring their achievements of protecting the capital and disposing of them will show the world the empire’s narrow-mindedness. Velt Jeeha and his comrades have shown their existence to the world through that after all.” (Arsha)

“However, if you don’t make a decision because you fear the criticism towards the empire, the people that will cry when the time comes will be the innocent citizens. Are you saying that while understanding this?” (Gyanza)

At that moment, I got goosebumps from the atmosphere Ayase let off. Without being pressured by Gyanza’s sinister atmosphere, her calmly standing appearance seemed ever so radiant.

“The citizens crying? I definitely will not let something like that happen. I will protect them, no matter what. As one of the Ten Heroes of Light, and as the princess of this country.” (Arsha)

“..... In that case..... if princess Ura and this boy were to betray your consideration for them, what would you do?” (Gyanza)

“In that situation..... I will kill those two. Even if it makes the Elfarshia Kingdom resent me.” (Arsha)

It’s not a bluff.

Ayase’s words right now definitely had resolution behind them.

They aren’t just words to overcome the current situation.

It was probably the same towards Kagami too.

This empire itself is the thing that Ayase can’t yield on.

Regardless of her feelings to me in her past life, she’ll suppress her emotions and deal with it when she needs to.

I could sense those feelings from her.

“This is fine, right? Velt Jeeha-kun.” (Arsha)

“..... Yeah.....” (Velt)

In the end, Ayase just accepted my request and said that to me, who couldn’t do a single thing.

And then.....

“Forna.” (Arsha)

“Yes.” (Forna)

“I painfully understand how glad you were to reunite with him and how much happiness you were going through. But the thing is, for the sake of the empire, and for his own sake..... I want you to accept that this is the only thing I could do.” (Arsha)

It looks like Fornia already understands what Ayase’s going to say next. With her head hanging down, Fornia tightened her fists and bit her lip to hold back her tears.

“Velt Jeeha. Ura Vesparda. From now on, I forbid both people to ever enter the empire again.” (Arsha)

That was the condition given to us, in exchange for being overlooked.

“I am thankful for what your achievements, but as expected, the empire needs to show where it draws the line. This is my maximum compromise. We will exile you from the empire in a few days.” (Arsha)

And, that also signified the second parting with Fornia and the others, who I finally reunited with.

However, that was too great of a compromise for me, who couldn’t do anything, protect anything and ended up relying on others again this time, to protect the people that are important to me.

I could only lower my head and say my thanks.

“Ahh..... thank you..... very much..... princess Arsha.” (Velt)

It’s been five years.

It’s been five years since I felt so weak, frustrated, pathetic and hateful of myself, that I felt like I wouldn’t calm down no matter how many times I bet myself up.

——Sorry, Ayase.

I muttered that in a voice that no one could hear.

——I’m sorry..... Asakura-kun.....

Ayase muttered that in a small voice that only I could hear.

Even though she’s already living a tiring life, I ended up making her feel even

more troublesome feelings because of me.

I really am..... weak..... pathetic and just talk, no matter how many years pass..... what do you think? Samejima..... sensei..... Kamino..... old man, mum.....

Chapter 98: In my heart

After returning to Forna's mansion, we explained everything to Farga, Cleran and Dora who were having tea in the living room.

I was kinda afraid that Farga might get angry at our actions, since he had just been listening silently from start to end, but when I finished talking, a sigh and some unexpected words came out of his mouth.

"Well, I was naive." (Farga)

"Hah?" (Velt)

"In the first place, I have the responsibility of watching over you and that damn demon. It's my fault for letting you guys play around in the capital." (Farga)

Farga isn't angry. Rather, he's blaming himself.

However, that hurt us instead.

Farga wasn't being negligent about us, he just trusted us to not cause any problems.

The ones that betrayed that trust was Ura and me.

Without being able to think of any words of apology, Ura and I just kept hanging our heads down.

"Well, it's a good thing depending on how you look at it. It would've been a problem if you got restrained, but being exiled means you don't have to take any blame, right? You already helped imouto-chan~, so you don't have anything else to take care of, right?" (Cleran)

"That's right, bro! I've been waiting for ages, so let's go search for goshujinsama now~" (Doraemon)

Well, they are right.

I don't have any other business in the empire, and I was wondering when I should leave.

"However, I still cannot accept it. Although she holds a general class status, that Gyanza woman..... even I have heard of her military prowess, but her thoughts are too dangerous. Princess Arsha seemed like she was worried about

her.” (Musashi)

“It just means she’s that fucking strong at fighting. In reality, compared to the risks that woman brings, the war results she’s made are way higher. We’re in a warring period of survival of the fittest. Regardless of whether you talk about spirit, a great cause, justice or fairness, if you’re strong, you’re in the right. There aren’t any substitutes for that woman anyways.” (Farga)

“Nevertheless, I cannot accept it. If you swing your sword without any investigation and just make an assumption that is convenient for you, you cannot be saved.” (Musashi)

Musashi knew of Gyanza’s name from before, but it seems she didn’t know how abnormal Gyanza was until now.

Well, it was enough for me to get a trauma from her, so it’s understandable.

“Ayase……. I mean, Arsha probably knows though.” (Velt)

“Lord?” (Musashi)

“She knows that the antagonism between humans, demi-humans and demons……. will never disappear. They won’t ever be able to mix together. So, rather than holding a poor ideal, she’s trying to keep us at a distance, especially before it all gets crushed.” (Velt)

It shouldn’t just be Ura and Gyanza.

Ayase, who has gone to the battlefield multiple times, should’ve seen similar things too.

From people who have unjustified resentment toward others, to people that still have room for sympathy.

“That’s right. Those were my thoughts when I was ten years old.” (Ura)

“Ura?” (Velt)

“In this day and age, life stories are just about losers’ worthless unjustified resentment.” (Ura)

It’s the same for Ura.

Well, she couldn’t endure it this time, but that’s just how it goes for most people.

Really, the deeper I think about it, the more confused I get, that it’s such a troublesome and tiring world full of problems that are just too much for me.

“Ahhhhhhhhhhhhhhhh~~~~~~,, shit!” (Velt)

I scratch my head. As if trying to vent my irritation, I let out a voice from the bottom of my stomach at the ceiling.

Like, it’s over already.

Because I rashly participated in a war and because the reality of this world was in front of my eyes for these past few days, my way of thinking has just become hesitant.

Even though it was supposed to be something I’m not interested in.

“I just kinda……. want to go somewhere far away…….” (Velt)

I suddenly muttered that.

Then, Farga, who hadn’t been angry at what happened before, reacted.

“Oi, are you going to run away?” (Farga)

“Ahh?” (Velt)

“Even though you split paths five years ago, you finally reunited with my stupid younger sister. Are you going to leave her again? Or is it because you’re scared of Gyanza?” (Farga)

“Hah? Who’s scared! That brainless woman doesn’t matter.” (Velt)

It’s a lie. I’m scared of Gyanza.

However, I don’t want to go somewhere else because I’m scared of Gyanza.

I just want to calm down.

I was pampered and treated like a champion when I just half-heartedly did something, but when I actually tried to do something, it turns out that I wasn’t even that strong.

In the first place, too many things have happened in these past few days.

Honestly, I’m just tired.

“Farga-dono! I cannot let you insult my lord! Certainly, my lord was easily held down despite telling Gyanza he would make her split blood with his seven-coloured fin……. ger……. technique? But lord would not let it end like this!” (Musashi)

“Are you trying to respect me, diss me or what!?” (Velt)

“But like, we have to leave the empire soon, right? Then, it can’t be helped either way.” (Cleran)

“Hah? That doesn’t fucking matter. In the first place, why are you trying to take control? You did help out, but you aren’t even journeying together with us.” (Farga)

“Eh? I thought Cleran-neesan was bro’s friend!” (Doraemon)

“Ah~, now that I think about it, you kinda just came with us in the confusion, but are you going with us?” (Velt)

In the end, nothing changed.

My original destination was the empire, but since Dora is here, it’s no longer my destination.

So, what I should be doing now is.....

“Why..... do you have a,『well whatever』, sort of expression?” (Forna)

Forna said that to us immediately after coming back late, since she had a bunch of things to deal with afterwards.

“Forna..... yo, welcome home.” (Velt)

“..... u-..... you really, are mean..... by tomorrow, I..... have to..... be all alone, and yet, you, you harass me like that.....” (Forna)

Those eyes seemed like they were appealing to me, and it looked like she would start crying with a single poke.

“Uooooooooonn, Velt-kuuuuuuun!” (Galva)

And she even brought someone unnecessary with her.

The tough, gorilla-like man, Galva, noisily entered the living room and hugged me while crying.

“Whyyyy, why are you guyyyyys! Even though, even though you were finally able to meeeeet!” (Galva)

“Ah~, shut up already.” (Velt)

“I was finally able to see the princess smile from the bottom of her heart again, and I had plenty of things to talk to you guys about!” (Galva)

That reminds me, I wasn’t able to talk to Galva much.

Well, it was because he considered our feelings and tried to let Fornia be alone with me though.

“Well, it can’t be helped.” (Velt)

“It can be helped! We should be trying to oppose them! The princess and I will volunteer to object this regrettable punishment!” (Galva)

“Don’t just get all passionate by yourself. We aren’t demonstrators. All reason had passed by the time we lost.” (Velt)

“Uooooon, how can you be so calm! Velt-kun, this is just too much..... the princess!” (Galva)

Why are you crying the most.

He’s so sickening and over the top, and he’s always prioritised Forna and me since the past.

I just, feel so ashamed.

I mutter an apology quietly and put a hand on Galva’s shoulder, but Galva burst into even more tears.

“Velt..... are you leaving tomorrow?” (Forna)

“Yeah. It would just cause you trouble if I stay for too long after all.” (Velt)

“..... You could cause as much..... trouble as you want to.” (Forna)

Ahh, I thought we would split up after properly saying good luck to each other, but I didn’t think we would be forced to split up like this.

I should’ve treated our dates with more respect, but I guess this will become another regret.

Even though I was finally able to see her smile again, I made her make this kind of face again.

I actually want to talk more.....

No, there’s still time.

“Forna. It’s kinda cold, so wear something on top.” (Velt)

“Hah?” (Forna)

“Guys, I’m going out for a little.” (Velt)

Tonight is the last time. Then, what should I talk to her about?

A few days ago, she confessed all her feelings that haven’t changed since five years ago.

Then, I have no choice but to respond to that.

I’ll confess everything about me.

There's only one thing to tell her about.

"Wait, Velt..... where to?" (Forna)

"I went to the cake shop in the morning like you wanted. This time you have to listen to my request." (Velt)

"Eh, um, eh?" (Forna)

"I'm inviting you on a flying date through the night sky." (Velt)

I force Forna to wear a coat and head to the balcony while pulling her with me.

"I'm going to sleep now." (Farga)

Farga muttered a few words.

It sounded like he was telling me to talk to her to my heart's content.

Well, it might become a bit long though.

"Velt..... um, it is pitch black. The lights in the sky garden have disappeared too. No shops are open at this time either." (Forna)

"We aren't going to any shops. We're just going on a walk. Well, a fly I guess." (Velt)

"Geez! Why do you quibble like that!" (Forna)

"Kuhaha, but it's not like it's pitch black. Look outside." (Velt)

I pull on Forna's hand and fly into the night sky.

A pitch black sky spreads out in front of us.

However, there are small, flickering lights below us.

"Ara..... that is true." (Forna)

"It was the same in the Elfarshia Kingdom, right? Sensei's restaurant was still going on until late at night, and he even had to prepare for the next day too." (Velt)

"..... Yes..... everyone..... is living with utmost effort in their own ways." (Forna)

I was about to say, 'everyone's fighting to protect those small lights, right?' but I stopped because it sounded kinda conceited.

We float through air as if there was zero gravity.

In this sky and in this world, it's just us two here right now.

From just this atmosphere, Forna, who was feeling down, seemed like she had calmed down a little.

“So.....” (Forna)

“Hm?” (Velt)

“I do not think you took me out to go on a conceited and romantic date like this. What is your objective?” (Forna)

“..... Kuhaha..... as expected of you.” (Velt)

“..... Um, I knew, but that should be the part where you lie and say, ‘I just wanted to go on a date with you’, right?” (Forna)

Forna asks me that while grasping my hand tightly.
She really knows me well.

And now, after putting on airs for so long, I decided to finally tell her.

“Today, I want to tell you everything in my heart.” (Velt)

“..... In your..... heart?” (Forna)

“That’s right. It’s not like the world will change or anything between us will change once you know about it. From this world’s perspective, it really doesn’t matter at all. However, I still want to tell you. I’m going to tell you everything you’ve been wondering about this whole time.” (Velt)

So, I told her everything.

“About me. About sensei. About Sharkryu. About Musashi’s parentage, Mackey Mouse, and Arsha too.” (Velt)

Because she’s the woman that’s cared about me the most in this world since we were brats, I wanted to tell her first.

I told Forna everything about Asakura Ryuuma.

Chapter 99: Yours

There was a completely different world to this one. Magic didn't exist there, and demons and demi-humans only existed in fairy-tales. Wars were definitely going on, but he was a student in a peaceful country that wasn't involved in it. He brawled, skipped school, played with others, occasionally went to school, and liked a certain girl. Asakura Ryuuma was a brat you could find anywhere, living in that kind of world.

“And then, during a class trip, we were met with an accident and died. By the time I realized it, I had become Velt Jeeha, a five year old.” (Velt)

Together in this night sky, we gazed at the stars while holding hands as I talked about everything.

About Asakura Ryuuma and that world.

About sensei, who was actually my homeroom teacher in my past life.

About the demon king Sharkryu being the reincarnation of my former classmate.

About Musashi's demi-human grandfather and even Mackey Mouse being my former classmates.

And...

“I had a classmate called Ayase, who was a class leader type of woman. That's who princess Arsha is.” (Velt)

Who would believe this kind of story? This kind of absurd story. A different world exists, and we have memories of our past lives as people who lived in that world.

My classmates who were originally human, became a demon king, demi-human, boss of an evil organization and a princess.

It's understandable if she thought it was a made-up story with no chain of

reasoning.

However, Forna didn't laugh at all.

She believed my words more than anyone and was making a pondering face instead, as she had finally found out about the mystery around me.

"Velt... so that was why you were so close with demon king Sharkryu and Arsha." (Forna)

"So, I'm actually older than you by a bit. I feel like my body is catching up to my mind these days, but that's the reason why I always treated you like a brat when we were kids. Do you believe me?" (Velt)

"It is an unbelievable story, but it is troubling as everything until now would make sense if it is true." (Forna)

Forna makes an amazed smile as she says that.
Rather than believing it or not, it might've been too big of a story that Forna doesn't even know how to react.

"However, to be frank, nothing really changes because of that. It's not like it'll effect this world in any way. I really think my dead old man and mum are my true parents. Well, it was too late by the time I started thinking that though." (Velt)

"That..... is true..... from my point of view, I will not say any more as long as you stay as Velt. No matter how much Arsha calls you 『Asakura』, I will never call you that in my life." (Forna)

"Yeah, that's fine. No matter how much I keep dragging on Asakura Ryuuma, I'll always be Velt Jeeha to you. That's why I don't mind it being that way." (Velt)

I am Velt Jeeha. And, that fact will never change.

"So..... what will you do?" (Forna)

"About what?" (Velt)

"I would appreciate it if you did not play dumb. There could only be one part I would be the most curious about from your past and your relationships." (Forna)

Then, Forna pouted a little and made a sulking expression.
For now, she's probably fine as long as I'm Velt.
Even if I'm a 'friend' of a demon king or a princess, that's still fine with her.

Well, the princess confessed her love to 'Asakura', but I'll leave that aside. The problem is my feelings.

"Kamino Mina. A name you have muttered multiple times when we were young. The person you..... Velt..... in, in the past." (Forna)

"Oi, stop making such a frustrated face." (Velt)

"Of course I would! Why do I have to refer to the name of another woman you used to like!" (Forna)

What am I going to do about Kamino, huh..... that's pretty cute. Even though I told her all this stuff about me, she cares more about the woman I used to like, rather than a different world or a demon king.

"When I regained my memories as a kid..... even though it was already lively with you, my old man and mom, everyone called me Velt, but not Asakura. Nothing that I knew was in this world, and no one knew about my real self. Even though I was never alone, my chest was always tight from an indescribable loneliness and sadness." (Velt)

I still haven't forgotten those days. Even though I wasn't alone, I was always alone in my mind.

"That's why I sulked. I didn't have any motivation, and this world just seemed idiotic. I might've turned out like Kagami if I had taken a single wrong step. However, sensei was the one that saved me." (Velt)

I still remember it; that feeling when my dark world was filled with overflowing happiness.

"And, I realized. Ahh, it's not just us two that reincarnated. It must've happened to her too. Then, I want to meet her. I want to meet her to tell her my feelings I regretted not saying, words of gratitude, and to try and save her if she's going through the same pain. I want to do anything that could help her." (Velt)

That was the vow I made five years ago.

"To let Asakura Ryuuma's soul rest in peace, I wanted to find Kamino Mina, who's living somewhere in this world." (Velt)

That was the thing I couldn't yield on five years ago, even if it meant parting

with Forna and the others.

“Although I feel frustrated.....” (Forna)

“Hm?” (Velt)

“That woman must have been quite a lovely person. You are making a sparkling face while talking about her after all.....” (Forna)

Forna said that with mixed feelings as she looked the other way.

“Yeah, maybe. She was dumb, and honestly, for her looks, Ayase was several times prettier than her. But..... I was completely fascinated by her.” (Velt)

“..... Uuuuu~~~~~.” (Forna)

Now she gripped my hand even tighter.

‘I definitely don’t want to give this hand to anyone else’. That’s the kind of frustration I felt.

“But..... no matter how much『Asakura Ryuuma』thinks about『Kamino Mina』..... I will be the one who loves Velt Jeeha the most in this world.” (Forna)

I know.

That’s why I say this to her.

“Yeah, that’s right. Velt Jeeha has been yours since a long time ago.” (Velt)

“Yes..... heh?” (Forna)

Well, that’s all I can say to her for now.

“Um, um um um um, Veveveve, Velt! Riririri, nownownow, right now, right now!” (Forna)

“Ahh? What, do you not want me?” (Velt)

“I, I dyo! I dyo! I do, I do! I do want you! Yes yes! I want you!” (Forna)

Her downcast eyes changed completely, becoming bloodshot as she grabbed me in great excitement.

That’s dangerous, we might fall you know?

“U, um..... real, ly?” (Forna)

Her depressed mood from before disappeared, and she’s making sparkling, upturned eyes.

Cu..... no, if I say that now, she’ll just get cocky instead.

“Then, um, if I become a good woman..... do you remember the promise about that?” (Forna)

I won't say this either. You were a good woman since a long time ago. Like, it was just that we didn't really balance, and I was the actual problem.

“So, I'm really sorry about what happened. Forgive me, Forna.” (Velt)
“Ve..... It?” (Forna)

“This time, we're going to leave because of what happened with Ura, but I don't blame her. She's part of my important family..... and the daughter of my close friend. So, I'll be her ally no matter what happens, and I plan on being by her side..... well, I was planning to leave her behind in the Elfarshia Kingdom when I was setting off though.” (Velt)

“..... That is..... are you saying that while understanding the feelings Ura has for you is not just familial love?” (Forna)

“That's right.” (Velt)

“..... On top of that, are you..... going to search for Kamino Mina?” (Forna)

“Yeah. That's the one thing I can't yield on after all.” (Velt)

Even though we were finally able to meet, it wasn't completely a happy ending where I could promise her when we'll see each other again. We, who didn't try to go against that, accepted that and will be gone by tomorrow.

From Forna's perspective, it's a cruel story.

“How cruel. You are leaving me because of your close friend's daughter and a woman from the past.” (Forna)

“Yeah, that's right. I'm a cruel guy. Well just think that the one who falls for the other lost, and give up.” (Velt)

“Ara, I will not give up. From now on, I will continue improving myself so the one that falls for the other can win.” (Forna)

“What are you going to do by improving yourself even more than that.” (Velt)

“Ufufufu, tricks to make me negligent will not work on me.” (Forna)

Then, Forna fixedly stared at me, and gradually brought her face closer.

“Words are not enough. If you really feel sorry, you have to show it through your actions.” (Forna)

Hearing that, I stretched my arms and legs out.

“Kuhahaha, then starting from now..... you can do whatever you want to me for a minute.” (Velt)

“Eh, what?” (Forna)

“I won’t counterattack. You can punch me as many times as you want until you’re satisfied.” (Velt)

Now, come. I say that in a teasing way, and just as I thought, Forna was about to blow her fuse.

“Eh, um, uh.” (Forna)

“Ten seconds have passed.” (Velt)

“Tsuu, eh, eh! O, only a second has passed, nn~.” (Forna)

And in the end, she overlapped her lips with mine..... she really is the same as ever.....

After that, we talked to each other to fill up the five year period.

I told her about sensei’s child being born, that she was seriously the cutest, and that Ura and I were deredere to her.

About my ramen making skill was finally recognized.

Forna talked about her tough battles, the comrades she respected, love stories among her friends and just about everything.

We happily talked about the things we saw, the things we experienced, good things and bad things, and promised to bring an overflowing amount of stories to reminisce about when we next meet again.

Chapter 100: Our new starting point is heaven

As I open the morning newspaper, I see the heading, “Humanity’s great allied forces’ steady advance” along with a passage about the fight against a certain demon king army.

There was an exaggerated fuss about hope, and endless sentences of praise to the heroes were written as if trying to erase all the anxiety of humanity.

Probably because of that, the achievements I’d made just a few days ago weren’t on the newspaper, and even when I go out in the capital, rather than looking at me as a champion or as Forna’s boyfriend, they greet me like some guy in the neighbourhood.

At an early time when the morning mist is still there, there aren’t many people at the front of the gate, so it’s a good time slot to leave without causing a commotion.

“Well, this suits us more, I guess.” (Velt)

“Oi, Cleran. Are you coming with us too?” (Farga)

“Of course I am. If I’m with you guys~, I can probably eat tasty things~, and..... if I’m not there, you can’t use the tunnel to the Divine Being Continent.”

(Cleran)

“Well, it is fine. Cleran-dono being with us is reassuring.” (Musashi)

“I’m begging you, please don’t eat me!” (Doraumon)

Under Ayase’s judgement, we were made to leave before causing any more problems.

A moderate amount of people gathered to say goodbye as we made our preparations.

“Uuuuu, uooooooooo, uoooooooooon.” (Galva)

“Don’t cry, Galva.” (Velt)

“But, but, Velt-kun.” (Galva)

“..... Take good care of my wife.” (Velt)

“! Yeah, yeah! Definitely! Definitely! Even if it costs me my life!” (Galva)

Forna, Galva, Shalt and my other childhood friends had come to see us off. And, with Ayase at the head, all the Yellow Jaegers other than Gyanza had come too.

“Yo, Ayase. What happened to that psycho woman?” (Velt)

“I made her go adjust the defence in the port district along with another team. You would be less worried that way, right?” (Arsha)

“I guess. To be honest, I didn’t think there was that much of a power difference between us. I don’t ever want to meet her again.” (Velt)

“Yes, I do not want any more irreversible things to happen too.” (Arsha)

It was a blink of time.

Despite talking about the past and enjoying our reunion after coincidentally meeting through Kagami, we can’t separate with a completely happy end. The fact that we’re parting with a subtle, bad aftertaste remaining, felt somewhat regrettable and made me have mixed feelings.

“I actually wanted to get along with you more, Velt.” (Doremifa)

The one that’s over-familiarly putting his hand over my shoulder while saying that, is the muscle-brain jock from the Yellow Jaegers, Doremifa. Since he seems to be close with Barts and Shalt, he probably isn’t a bad guy, but we’re going to say goodbye without really understanding that. And, Doremifa is also bidding me farewell while not knowing me that much. Because of that, Doremifa asked me something in a small voice that only I could hear.

“Hey.” (Doremifa)

“Ah?” (Velt)

“The Yellow Jaegers don’t actually like you.” (Doremifa)

“Haa? What, that was blunt. Is it because I caused a problem?” (Velt)

“Nah, it’s because the princess is always showing her real self when she talks to you.” (Doremifa)

Ayase showing her real self. Well, right now, she’s a human that has to drag humanity under the mask of being the empire’s princess, so she can’t whine or say how she really feels that easily.

That is unless she’s with, “us,” that know her as Ayase, and not princess Arsha.

“So..... I want to ask you. Could you..... become the princess’ wing?”
(Doremifa)

“Wing? What, do you have chuunibyou or something?” (Velt)

“Chuuni? I don’t know about that, but if the princess had someone like you who she could be her real self with, her gracefulness will come out more, or rather, her kindness will come out more, and I think she’ll be able to reach even higher places.” (Doremifa)

Why do the woman in this world end up rapidly going up to far away places because of their strength?

What’s Ayase going to do by becoming more amazing than she already is?

Boys, you better work harder.

“There’s nothing good about flying too high, you know? You’ll just be in more pain when you fall. Besides, I’m not a human that’s at a high enough point to let everyone fly up.” (Velt)

“I see..... I would’ve liked to fight with you once.” (Doremifa)

As he said that, Doremifa looked a bit relieved and patted my back strongly. This guy’s seriously a jock.

“Velt, let’s meet again someday for sure.” (Shalt)

“Next time we meet, I’ll be huge enough to save humanity.” (Barts)

“Stay safe, I’m glad I met you.” (Hawk)

“Leave the princess to us. We’ll protect her for you.” (Sannu)

“Bye.” (Hau)

“Let’s meet again at our hometown someday.” (Chett)

“You better survive until you can drink, so we can have a party.” (Shipp)

Shalt, Barts, Hawk, Sannu, Hau, Chett and Shipp say their farewells one by one.

To be honest, I’m not sure if everyone here will be able to survive and meet up again.

These guys will return to their daily lives on the battlefield where they could die whenever.

Together with the feelings of the guys that died this time.

“Yeah, with everyone.” (Velt)

Once again, with everyone if possible; I bid my farewell with that thought behind it.

“Are you fine now?” (Arsha)

“Yeah, that was plenty, Ayase.” (Velt)

“I see..... I will report to..... father about you myself.” (Arsha)

“Alright.” (Velt)

I don't need any more than this.

I've exchanged all the words I need to.

“Well then, Asakura-kun. Do you have any words of farewell to me as I expel you?” (Arsha)

“Kuhahahaha, to you who dismissed us? Let's see~, well, don't overwork yourself, I guess?” (Velt)

“Ara, of course, I will overwork myself. If we do not overwork ourselves, who will be forced to do it?” (Arsha)

She said such a handsome phrase with confidence.

“Then, I don't have anything to say to you guys. We're walking a completely different life. In the first place, the fact that we crossed each other is just unnatural.” (Velt)

“I see..... you really don't spoil me, do you.” (Arsha)

“I already have a couple of pampered women with me, after all.” (Velt)

This is the end of these casual conversations with her too.

Although feeling reluctant to end it, as the person who's exiling us, Ayase can't drag it out forever, so she took a firm attitude and informed us.

“Even if you and Forna find happiness together one day, you and I will probably never meet again. So..... goodbye, Asakura-kun.” (Arsha)

“Yeah, let's meet again someday.” (Velt)

“..... yes..... someday.” (Arsha)

It might be the parting of this life, but even so, someday..... I put those feelings behind it, and Ayase wiped her tears for a moment, then smiled softly.

“Let's go.....” (Velt)

I turn around after finishing all my farewells, to see Farga, Ura, Musashi, Dora

and Cleran, looking cunning for some reason, with their preparations set.

“Bro, do I have to grow big again?” (Doraemon)

“If we ride you, we can reach there faster than a train or a ship.” (Velt)

Dora grew and leaned over so we could jump onto its back.

“Machine dragons are amazing. Velt, you found something even harder to find than the person you are searching for.” (Arsha)

It’s huge and heroic..... well, not really, but while everyone who saw the steel dragon had their eyes taken away from them, we got on its back and I raised my hands again.

“Forna. I can’t stay by your side forever. So, I won’t get angry if you want to have an affair, alright?” (Velt)

“Ohohohohohoho, you are always by my side in my heart. Rather, if you were to have an affair..... I will punch you harder than the Seven Great Demon Kings and the Four Heavenly Beast Demi-humans.” (Forna)

“Kuhahahahahaha..... seriously?” (Velt)

We laughed together.

Well, I finished my farewells to Forna last night, so it’s fine.

I was able to part with her while smiling after all.

“Don’t work yourself too hard, stupid sister.” (Farga)

“Madam! Please leave lord to me.” (Musashi)

“See you later!” (Doraemon)

“Bye bye, imouto-chan.” (Cleran)

Dora’s wings gradually flapped higher and higher as we waved to them. In a few more seconds, everyone will look tiny, and we’ll immediately go somewhere far away from them.

Until then, we kept waving our hands at them.

And then.....

“..... For, Fornaaaaaaaaaaaaa!” (Ura)

At that moment, Ura, who had been silent for the whole time, shouted at Forna.

“..... So..... sor..... ry..... because of, me..... sor..... ry.”
(Ura)

While shedding tears, even though she should’ve had a lot of other words to say, those were the only words she could squeeze out.

However, that might’ve been fine for Forna.

Forna shouts to the sky while waving both hands and jumping.

“Do not belittle me, Ura! Rather than apologise to me, worry about yourself! Right now, I am the only one running in the competition for Velt, after all!”
(Forna)

We become dumbfounded, but those words made Ura shed even more tears.

“Let us meet again, someday for sure, my worthy rival!” (Forna)

“Yeah! Definitely! Someday, definitely!” (Ura)

Until the very end, that’s all you guys talk about, huh.

Well, whatever. Heavy stuff about races or politics or punishments doesn’t matter.

I’m not interested in stuff like that.

Yeah, this feels a lot more fitting.

“Go, Dora.” (Velt)

“Okay! I’m going to step on it!” (Doraumon)

We flew to the end we’re aiming for.

“Uuu, gusu, uu, uuuuu.” (Ura)

“Geez~, don’t cry, Ura-chan.” (Cleran)

“But, byut, I..... I..... even though Forna should stay with Velt more.” (Ura)

“Really? Otouto-kun and imouto-chan seem to have spent plenty of time already, you know?” (Cleran)

Cleran comforts Ura as her tears breakout like a dam.

Well, to be honest, rather than giving her a half-hearted consolation, I think Ura should just cry as much as she wants to.

Besides, although she’s shedding tears now, they’re being blown away the wind one after the other.

“Farga-dono, you seem quite relaxed. She was your younger sister, was she

not?” (Musashi)

“It’s not like that. I was just thinking my damn stupid sister..... became quite tough..... to be honest, all I can do for her..... is to send my stupid brother back to her.” (Farga)

“..... I also..... thought about all sorts of things because of what happened this time. I am still inexperienced.” (Musashi)

These past few days..... certainly had things to think about.
The ugliness of humans at Shiromu, and the problem between different races.
The survivors of a country Ura destroyed, and the humans that took everything away from Musashi.
The war in the empire.
And, the reality that was thrust upon us.
It’ll become dark just thinking about it.
So, I don’t want to think about it right now.

“Fly faster, Dora.” (Velt)
“Faster? I can’t fly that fast!” (Doraueemon)
“I see. Then I guess you’ll meet your goshujinsama later.” (Velt)
“Fi, fine! I’ll go! I’ll go faster! I’ll do it!” (Doraueemon)

Dora raised his altitude and steadily accelerated.
“Wow, so fast. You’re amazing~, Dora-chan.” (Cleran)
“Now we should be able to fly until the Divine Being Continent.” (Musashi)
“It’s impossible. Even on ships, it’s a damn long distance. His growth will come undone mid-flight, and we’ll all fall into the sea.” (Farga)
“But if we take rests from time to time on land, it’s only going to be a few days until we reach the『Countryside Port Town, Kokoikaanai』, that’s northwest of the empire.” (Cleran)
“Hmph. I didn’t think a seabed tunnel that only Hunters know about existed in a place like that.” (Farga)
“U~mu, Bolbardie is truly a terrifying country indeed.” (Musashi)

A strong wind blows at us as if cutting up our bodies, and it feels like all our worries and tears are being blown away.
Yeah, it’s fine like this.
So.....

“Kuhahahahaha, nice, Dora! Go faster! Now, pierce through that big, shining cloud, and fly away!” (Velt)

“Okay! It’s easy peasy for meee!” (Doraemon)

There’s a world of super huge clouds floating in front of us.
If we break through that cloud and the big world fills up our eyes, this gloomy atmosphere might clear up a little.

“Ohh, inside the cloud.” (Musashi)

“Wao. This is like, a first for me. Even I haven’t flown up this high.” (Cleran)

“Damn it. I can’t see shit.” (Farga)

After plunging into a huge sea of clouds, we pushed on deeper and deeper, seeking the light of the sun.

Then, at that time. Rather than breaking through the front, we broke through the top.

“Ohh!” (Velt)

It’s almost like the time I rode an aeroplane.

“Amaaazing, Dora-chan.” (Cleran)

“Good job.” (Musashi)

We broke straight through the top of the pure white world of clouds.

“Amazing..... so this is how it’s like above clouds.” (Ura)

Even Ura, who was hanging her head down, unintentionally muttered that from seeing the scenery.

We were fascinated by that big world.

“The world seems small, but it’s actually too big for us.” (Velt)

“..... Velt?” (Ura)

“The problem you have is big. But you know, compared to the world, it might unexpectedly be small.” (Velt)

It’s such a huge world that it feels like all the minor things are going to go away somewhere.

While looking down at the limitless sea of clouds, I patted Ura’s shoulder to try to cheer her up.

“Hahaha, since I cannot use magic, I did not think I could fly up to the clouds. In the past, I thought clouds were fluffy sweets.” (Musashi)
“I thought it was a cushion.” (Doraemon)

Everyone has probably thought that at least once in their lives. In reality, you can’t even touch it when you stretch your hand out like this though.

“Let me see, iaigiri! Hahaha, I used to think I could cut clouds with.....” (Musashi)

It happened..... when Musashi swung her sword at the cloud in front of her as a joke.

———Supaan.

“””””.....””””” (Everyone)

A portion of the cloud was cut off,『fluttered in the air』, and a ball-shaped cloud fell onto Musashi’s『palm』.

“””””.....””””” (Everyone)

We were silent.....

“Oro?” (Musashi)

———Grip grip

Musashi’s eyes became dots as she gripped the cloud. And then.....

“It..... it is soft and fluffy.....” (Musashi)

..... Eh?

“””””Ehhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhh!?””””” (Everyone)

Wait a minute!

“Ha, haa!? Mu, Musashi, you, what did you do!” (Velt)

“Ho ho ho ho, how did the cloud get cut, and why is it soft..... ehh?” (Cleran)

“Wha, what the hell is happening.....” (Farga)

“Wai wai wai wai waiiit!” (Dora)

“What..... was that?” (Ura)

None of us understood what had happened.
That's right, we had cut a cloud. Physically. Furthermore, it's soft and fluffy.
Speechless, we just continued flying forward in silence. This time, there's an even bigger cloud sticking out.
Without ordering Dora to do anything, we just continue going forward.
And then.

———Baiiiiiiiiiiiin

"Auwah!" (Doraemon)

———!

Dora bounced back as if he collided with an elastic wall, and we were all thrown out into the air.
However.....

"Wai....." (Velt)

"Ha?" (Cleran)

"Damn it....." (Farga)

"Oro? Oro? Wha, what is happening!" (Musashi)

"Thi, this is....." (Ura)

After getting thrown out, we had landed on a cloud.

"Why are we..... standing on a cloud?" (Velt)

Is this..... a dream? I instinctively fell down and lay on it.
It felt as good as when I jumped onto a soft and fluffy bed.
..... Comfortable.....wait, what?

"Hey, Farga....." (Cleran)

"Damn it..... is this....." (Farga)

At that moment, the two first-class Hunters seem to have realized something.
What is it?

"Is this place..... Demon Continent, Demi-human Continent, Humanity Continent and the Divine Being Continent..... the one that continues flying above all the skies in the world, and the place all adventurers in this world have been searching....." (Farga)

“The big three undeveloped worlds. The deep sea world, the deep earth world, and..... the sky world..... also known as, heaven.” (Cleran)

Wao..... I came to a different world after death, and now I’ve come to heaven even though I’m alive..... what’s wrong with my life?

Chapter 101: Angel

I finally realised at this point in time.

Nonhuman monsters, magic and dragons are things that only otakus or children would talk about back when I was Asakura Ryuuma.

Cushion-like cloud? Riding on top of a cloud? If you're not Goku, it just sounds like a child's idea.

That's why I realized. In a fantasy world, you can't make fun of a child's ideas.

"It's soft and fluffy." (Velt)

"Ohh, it bounces up and down!" (Musashi)

"Beds can't even compare to this~." (Cleran)

"This is a weird-ass fucking situation." (Farga)

"Uhoo~, it's so fun~." (Dorauemon)

"What's going on?" (Ura)

Everyone's on top of the clouds, making different reactions.

Some are frolicking to have their childhood dreams granted, and some are making serious, pondering faces as they look at this extremely strange occurrence.

"Well, I'll just give in for now since this is a fantasy world, but Farga, what's that sky world you were talking about before?" (Velt)

"..... Ahh....." (Farga)

He muttered something, probably because he still can't comprehend this situation, and opened his mouth.

"As you guys know, humans, demons and demi-humans exist in this world, each with their own continents. However, there are still another three unknown worlds in existence, that aren't affiliated with any of them. They were only handed down through books and legends, and no race knew the details..... all they knew was that they definitely exist, but no one could clarify it." (Farga)

Hm, hmm~, seems like we ended up bumping into quite an amazing legend without even asking for it.

Like, wouldn't the adventurers of the world cry if we told them how we reached it?

"I don't really get it, but it's just a mysterious world above the clouds, right? Is there something else here?" (Velt)

We can ride clouds and touch them. Sure it's a dreamlike story, but there's no way the world would say that's a legend by itself, right?

Farga nodded to my question.

And in the next moment, that 'something else' occurred.

——Pann!

It was a somewhat dry sound as if gunpowder had burst.

A gunshot? No, there's no way it could be.

Gunpowder? I don't know, but I just suddenly heard it out of nowhere.

Then in the next moment, I heard a voice in the world, no, a voice resounding inside my head.

——Urgent report, urgent report. Just now, trespassers were sensed in the centre of the east section. Nearby『Sky Maiden Knight Order』, hurry to the location at once. I repeat———

Now, who are the trespassers in this situation?

No, rather than that, I heard someone's voice in my head. Well, I don't know if it was a human or not though.

"Oi, that thing right now." (Farga)

"I heard it too." (Doraemon)

"Is it some kind of telepathic communication? Rather than through my ears, it resounded in my head. Did every creature in this sky world hear that?" (Velt)

"Impossible. They used that kind of high-grade magic?" (Ura)

"Sky maiden knight order, huh~. Never heard of that before." (Cleran)

"Oh, wait. Are we not the trespassers in this situation?" (Musashi)

We probably are.

As proof, I'm starting to hear a wind-cutting noise.

It's the sound of something heading to us from far ahead in the sky.

"Lord, please stay back." (Musashi)

“Tch.” (Farga)

Musashi and Farga immediately go to the front, standing ready.

Ura and Cleran are in the middle.

Dora, who’s trembling fearfully, and I, the weakest one here, are at the back.

I can’t even guess what will happen.

Now, come.

“..... This is.....” (Velt)

And then, we saw them.

Human-type creatures flying from far away.

No, they’re people.

As they come closer, I see their human forms better.

There’s a group of around ten people flying towards us.

They’re all women. Yeah, armed battle maidens.

“What’s that?” (Velt)

There were a few things I was curious about.

First off, although they’re each holding weapons like swords, bows, axes, etc, they’re wearing lightweight equipment.

Everyone’s wearing super tight, completely white wetsuit-like armour, that shows their body line completely.

And, they’re all young girls in their teens and twenties? Furthermore, I can’t say for certain without looking at them closer, but rather than demi-humans or demons, they seem more human.

Despite that, it was still obvious that the girls flying at us weren’t human.

Why you ask? It’s simple.

How do you think the girls are flying?

“Among the demi-humans, there is a birdman race that has wing arms.”
(Musashi)

“Yeah, but..... those guys are fucking different.” (Farga)

“Wings are coming..... out from their backs.....” (Ura)

“Wh, who are those ladies!?” (Doraemon)

“I see. So that’s the race that only inhabits the sky world..... the sky race..... everyone who saw their appearances all called them this.....”

(Cleran)

— — — Angels

“What..... pretty.....” (Velt)

Even I unintentionally muttered that.

That they’re beautiful. That they’re pretty.

They aren’t powerful like Forna and Arsha.

They aren’t mysterious, ominous beings like Gyanza.

The moment I saw their appearance, I felt a warm light that made me want to entrust everything to them with a peace of mind.....

“Nice to meet you, how do you do?” (?)

The people of the sky race stop in the air and look down on us.

At the front, a commander-like woman said that with a smile.

My heart reflexively skipped a beat.

“This is a surprise. When I heard there were trespassers, I was completely under the assumption that it was『them』.” (?)

Her appearance, words and atmosphere had no overpoweringness.

Despite having a slender body, there was something swaying that seemed like it was going to burst out of her tight clothes. Those.....

“Wao.” (Cleran)

“That’s a great difference to my stupid sister.” (Farga)

“Huge!” (Velt)

“What is that!” (Musashi)

“Velt, that’s poison! Don’t look!” (Ura)

“They’re massive!” (Dorauemon)

Those, huge breasts! Does she have two melons in there or something?

“Pardon?” (?)

“N, nah, it’s nothing.” (Velt)

No no, I wasn’t looking at that.

Her straight, silky blond hair flowed down so long, that it looked like they reached down to her calves.

Well-ordered, beautiful face, and those huge breasts..... I mean, white, big wings that grew from her back.

If someone told me she was an angel, I'd believe it without question from seeing how divine she is, and those huge breasts.

"They're bouncier than the clouds, soft, and seem like they would feel good."
(Velt)

""""""Yeah."""""" (Musashi, Ura, Cleran, Doraemon)

"You fucking idiots." (Farga)

Wait, I mean, that's not what I was looking at!

"Princess! The, these guys look different to『those people』." (Angel)
"They are without a doubt people of the land. Their races..... seem to be mixed, however." (Angel)

The huge breasts at the front..... I mean, the other battle maidens following that commander-like woman, looked at us and said that.
While taking in those words, the huge breasts..... I mean, the commander-like woman talked to us without showing any disturbance.

"Nice to meet you, people of the land. We are the『Sky Maiden Knight Order』 of the『Sky Kingdom Holaiend』. Furthermore, I am the commander of this knight order and the seventh princess of Holaiend,『Eljiela』." (Eljiela)

Her aura made me want to stand at attention by reflex.
By the time I realized it, we had straightened our postures sharply.

"I am sorry for surprising you. Right now, our sky is on high caution because of a certain reason. However, if you have no hostility, we do not plan on causing any harm at all." (Eljiela)

Our sky, huh..... but at any rate, they're huge.
Even after growing, Forna and Ura still can't compare to hers.
But, I wonder why. Even though it should be erotic, it doesn't feel erotic.
It's almost like holiness was drawn on a painting. Is it like being fascinated by a nude drawing's beauty, rather than its sexiness?

"At any rate, they sure are huge..... hm? Princess?" (Velt)

Wait a minute. Didn't this woman just readily say something amazing? Like, what? Do all the princesses these days get flushed out to battle? My head's just filled up with this abrupt development.

Then, in this situation where no one's saying anything, Farga spoke first to try to comprehend the circumstances.

"It seems we surprised you. I'm Farga Elfarshia. I'm from the human race and I live in what you guys call the land world. We coincidentally reached this place midway of our journey. We don't have any intention behind coming here."

(Farga)

He's not wrong about anything. Although he did omit his lineage, Farga's words didn't have any lies in them.

However, would the armed angels really accept that without question? Since it's straight after meeting Gyanza again, a situation where they don't trust us comes to mind.

Above all, even though we came here without knowing, we're evidently trespassers.

A knight order that belongs to a country. Furthermore, a princess representing that country. To them, we're just a bunch of suspicious people.

I don't know what judgement they'll come to.....

"I see. I am sure that must have been a disaster." (Eljiela)

"Wait, you're just going to believe us like that!?" (Velt)

"Ara? But that is how it is, right?" (Eljiela)

I reflexively retorted, but man, this is amazing in its own way.

"If you do not aim any hostility or harm to our country, we have no need to take our swords. We cannot provide you with much hospitality, but we welcome you." (Eljiela)

Eljiela. That woman doesn't doubt people's words at all, and she's making extremely sparkly eyes.

"So that today, and the future, will be peaceful." (Eljiela)

This is like, way different to when we were at the empire.

"Aaaah, the princess doesn't doubt anyone as always." (Angel)

“Well, if that is what the princess says.” (Angel)

“Her heart is as wide and great like her ample breasts after all.” (Angel)

With an amazed expression that says it can't be helped, the other battle maidens smiled.

Usually, I might've thought 'suspicious' or 'is it a trap?' at times like these, but this time, it was different.

It's because I realized that they had no tricks behind it from just a glance at their eyes.

But exactly because of that, I felt like I wouldn't be good with them.

“Hey Farga, what are we going to do~? Should we just let them welcome us for now?” (Cleran)

“Ohh, I want to meet goshujinsama, but I'm curious about this too..... I'm also curious about whether those are real.” (Doraemon)

“U~mu, I will follow lord. However, Ura-dono..... what are those? Are they really breasts?” (Musashi)

“I don't mind..... well, I mean I don't mind about whether we stay here or not..... well, it would be better if we didn't stay for Velt..... I have no qualifications to decide..... after causing that much of a problem.....” (Ura)

“Good grief, how long are you going to stay depressed? Did you hear her, stupid bro?” (Farga)

Nooow, what to do.

As a man, I want to accept the invitation of getting welcomed by pretty girls. However, it was at that time.

Again, immediately after a bursting sound resounded, something flowed into our heads.

———Reporting to the sky maiden knight order. There are new trespassers. They number roughly three hundred and seem to be the people of the land from the other day. All nearby knights, gather immediately and deal with it. The coordinates will be sent to all knights.

We heard the robotic announcement in our heads once again.

“Princess! They are few in number, but are they the ones from the other day?” (Angel)

“Yes, and these coordinates are quite close. Everyone, ready your weapons. We will meet the enemy!” (Eljiela)

“““““Understood!”““““ (Angels)

The battle maidens change from a gentle smile to a sharp expression and stare at a certain direction.

What the hell is happening?

“Excuse me. I wanted to leisurely welcome you, but the situation has changed. Please stay away from us for a while.” (Eljiela)

I don’t mind that, but like, what’s going on?

“Starting from some time ago, we have been taking attacks from a certain land country.” (Eljiela)

“Hah? Attacks?” (Velt)

“Yes. Their objective is our sky airspace. We are fighting to protect our country, the world, and the people.” (Eljiela)

Oi oi, I thought this was a legendary place.

Why is a war happening for the usual reason on the ground, in a legendary place?

“No way, a country in the land world found the sky world? Damn it..... if I remember correctly, if a country monopolizes the airspace of this world..... and puts it to military uses, that country will gain a great power to fight against the three races fighting in the land world.” (Farga)

Of course you would. If you obtain a legendary place that no one can explain and make it your territory, you won’t have to be afraid of anyone invading you. Furthermore, you can move your country right above the enemy country, right? Every belligerent country would want to obtain this world if they hear about it.

“Here they come! Please step back!” (Eljiela)

We look to the front as we hear Eljiela’s voice.

Then, bright red monsters all revealed themselves by passing through a gap in the cloud.

“All units, chaaarge!” (Demon)

They have sheep heads and bipedal bodies.
They're covered in bright red body hair, have three pronged spears in their hands, and appeared with bat-like wings.

"They are『Lesser Demons』!" (Ura)
"No way, they're the ones that found this country!?" (Farga)
"Princess. I fear we will not be able to settle it with a conversation like the other day." (Angel)
"Let us fight for now to protect our people, our world." (Angel)

After the cyclopes, it's the demons again here.
However, we can't do anything just by knowing their identity.
One country is invading and the other country is defending.
That's the world spreading out in front of me.

"Of course. We will meet them in our heart formation." (Eljiela)
""""""Understood!"""""" (Angels)

The defending sky race, and.
"We've got an unexpected find in our reconnaissance! 『Sky Princess Eljiela』is here! Capture her no matter what!" (Demon)
""""""Understood!"""""" (Demons)

The invading demons.
At that time, I saw a fight between different races other than humans for the first time.

..... Was what I thought was going to happen.....
"Uwa~, I~ got~ bea~ ten~." (Demon)
"I can't wi~n, I surrende~r." (Demon)
..... The lesser demons rolled around and surrendered in a super forced way.
"..... Again.....?" (Eljiela)
Eljiela said that as if being used to seeing this happen.

"Um, princess?" (Angel)
"Of course, I will take them as prisoners. Please treat them as politely as you can to gain information from them." (Eljiela)

“Un, understood.....” (Angel)

What’s going on?

And like, the lesser demons are grinning happily too.

Didn’t these guys come to invade them?

“Gehehehe, commander, we did it!” (Demon)

“Yeah, we’ve been worked hard with cheap wages until now, but luck has finally come to us.” (Demon)

“Hehe, hehehe, the sky race only gives birth to females..... is what I heard from some other guys that were captured before..... hehehe, since their sexual desire is all pent up from being in an environment without any men, they’ll use us..... turn by turn.” (Demon)

“My friend that got caught last month said he saw heaven.” (Demon)

“Listen up, men. We’re going to give out some information, and enjoy the sky race to our fullest!” (Demon)

“Yeah! We can overthrow them some other time!” (Demon)

..... For the time being, leaving aside whether it’s the truth or not, if I make these guys take a lesson from Forna.....

Well, I guess I don’t have the right to say that when I’m not even a soldier.

Chapter 102: Selfless love

Despite their atypical appearance, in the end, they're male. The lecher-faced lesser demons are being taken away by the battle maidens while making cheerful expressions.

They're true to their instinct and quite honest to a fault.

"I am not very happy at this situation, but it is a good thing that no blood was shed." (Eljiela)

Eljiela shows a relieved smile, but like, she's sparkling way too much over every little thing.

Da, dazzling.

Other than her wings, she doesn't look that different to humans, but I'm sure something's different.

"But that sure was surprising~. The fact that there are only girls in the sky race, not those indecent demons, I mean." (Cleran)

Now that you mention it, they were saying something about that, huh. Eljiela replied honestly to Cleran's straightforward statement.

"Girls? Ahh, the gender distinction in the land world, right. Yes, under that basis, we are a female-only race." (Eljiela)

"But like, how do you prosper like that? If there are only girls, you can't give birth to any children, right?" (Cleran)

Well yeah. And it's not like a stork would bring them any.....

"No, the sky race can give birth to children by themselves." (Eljiela)

"Eh?" (Cleran)

"Certainly, it would be possible for our bodies to forcefully mate with another race, but a pure sky race would give birth alone." (Eljiela)

Oi oi oi oi, you aren't saying you lay eggs or something, right? I'm pretty sure there was a manga in the past where some people made monsters by spitting out eggs from their mouths. (TL Note: Good ol' dragon ball with their nameks.)

“Everyone, please let us lead you to our country, and we can talk about it there. We are extremely ignorant about information on the land world, so please let us hear about it.” (Eljiela)

“Oi oi oi oi, you sure? You really sure? Inviting us to your country so easily, even though we’re a bunch of mysterious people like those demons from before.” (Velt)

I just had to say it to this careless princess.
Then, what? Eljiela tilted her head with a wondering face, as if saying ‘why do you say that?’

“You are a very honest and kind person.” (Eljiela)
“Nah, I’m not kind. I mean, people call me trash and stuff like that.” (Velt)
“Really? But, I heard what you said. You said that you did not have any intention behind coming here, so I will believe your words.” (Eljiela)

Wao.
Even from my past life to now, this is my first time hearing someone say that.
This princess is hopeless. She doesn’t doubt what anyone says.
I just feel apologetic instead.

“Well then, excuse me for a little.” (Eljiela)
At that time, an unusual phenomenon occurred to our bodies.

“Wha?” (Velt)
“Mu.” (Farga)
“What!” (Musashi)
“!” (Ura)
“Ara.” (Cleran)
“Uooh!” (Dorauemon)

Our bodies started floating up.
“Is this, levitation?” (Musashi)
“Nah, it’s different. The feeling is different to my levitation.” (Velt)
“What? However, lord! In that case, what could this magic be?” (Musashi)

That’s right, we floated. But, this isn’t levitation.
That’s because I float clothes to move people, as levitation can’t move people

by itself.

However, this is different.

It felt like I was in zero gravity.

“Magic? Ahh, I have heard of that before. It is the ability used in the land world, right?” (Eljiela)

Eljiela giggled at our reaction.

“I do not know much about the magic you talk about, but this is one of the abilities that were handed down in the sky race. It is called 『Extrasensory Divine Perception』.” (Eljiela)

Ha, haa?

“Wait, wait, extrasensory divine? You have extrasensory perception?” (Velt)

Extrasensory perception is like, when you can bend spoons, see through things, teleport, float objects and stuff, right.....

“I’ve never heard of that before.” (Farga)

“I have not either.” (Musashi)

“Does otouto-kun know something?” (Cleran)

“As always, Velt only knows things we don’t know.” (Ura)

No, I might not be able to say I do know in this case.

Because like, I’ve seen magic tricks before, but I haven’t seen the real thing before.

Well, I guess that’s the same for magic.

After coming this far, I guess just anything goes.

“Then, was that voice we heard in our heads before telepathy or something?” (Velt)

“Ara, you are well-informed. Correct. There are people in our world that constantly have a net in the sky world to sense intruders.” (Eljiela)

I see.

Well, I don’t theoretically understand, but well, considering anything goes in this world, I see that this is one of those things I just have to accept.

“I have the ability to disregard the laws of physics to float or move objects,

cause shock waves and so on.” (Eljiela)

Haha, that’s like the perfect ability to make me cry. It’s basically an upgraded version of my fuwa fuwa magic I spent five years refining.
I feel kinda empty, or rather, just kinda sad.

“Well then, I will now start moving you. Our country is in a place far above this sea of clouds. Now, here we go.” (Eljiela)

Without noticing my sadness, the angel invited us to heaven like a tour guide. Well, I guess I’ll let paradise comfort my sadness.

Eljiela flapped her wings and flew even further up the skies, with us following behind her.

However, it was then that we finally realized the situation we were put in.

“Mu.” (Farga)

“Ara?” (Cleran)

“Nuoooo, thi, this is problematic!” (Musashi)

“Not good!” (Ura)

“Co, cooold!” (Dorauemon)

Yeah, it’s cooold.

Well, rather than cold, every time we rise through these clouds.....

“Ah, please be careful. Although the environment of our sky airspace is being managed, our abilities do not reach any other spots. Therefore, we wear these clothes that changes our temperature. And, our sky world exists further above this lower sea of clouds. It will be a little cold while we move, so please be careful.” (Eljiela)

It’s not at the level of, ‘please be careful’! Like, you wear those suits, but I’m not wearing anything special like that!

“At any rate, like the people that became prisoners before, land people are amazing. They can adapt to environmental changes through warm body hair and unique powers.” (Eljiela)

Ah..... at that moment, Ura realized it.

“That’s right, Lesser Demons can live in below freezing places due to their body hair and.....” (Ura)

To the sky race, it doesn't matter if we're human, demon or demi-human. They just lump them all together as『land people』. And, despite their different appearances, since Lesser Demons can adapt to environmental changes, this princess figured,『land people = okay with cold』.

“Damn it! I'm not good at the fire element, but..... Element Lance, Flame Trident!” (Farga)

“Magic Armament, Black Valkyrie (War Maiden of Darkness)!” (Ura)

“Miyamoto Kendo, Clear Mind Cold Endurance!” (Musashi)

“This one's good against environmental changes! Transformation,『Blizzard Frog』!” (Cleran)

“Uhhoo, I can endure it even if I get frozen!” (Doraemon)

And, everyone was able to deal with that.
Farga used his weapon as a medium to keep warm.
Ura and Musashi have tough bodies.
Cleran changed into a monster that's strong against environmental changes.
Dora has a steel body.

“Wait, you, stooooooooop!” (Velt)

.....Everyone..... other than me.....

“Crap, stupid brother!” (Farga)

“Gyaaaa, Velt!” (Ura)

“Lo, loooooord!” (Musashi)

“Otouto-kun!” (Cleran)

“Broooooooooo!” (Doraemon)

It was already too late by the time they realized it.
We've pierced through multiple layers of clouds, but how high are we?
There, we entered a world that's at a below freezing temperature.

There's no way I could endure that.

After that, I couldn't let out any noise.
Let alone that, I felt like I was looking down at my body from a higher altitude.
This feeling..... uooooooooh, is this an out-of-body experience?
Crap, my conscience is becoming distant..... hm?

———Velt, how are you?

———Velt, you've grown.

Ah..... old man..... mum..... why can I see them?

"Velt, Velt froze! No, no way! No waaaay!" (Ura)

"Looord! Looord! Loooooooooooooooooord!" (Musashi)

"Stupid brother! Open your eyes! Oi, I'll kill you if you die! You're fucking kidding the shit out of me! Stupid brother!" (Farga)

"Crap, his, his body is frozen to the core..... not good! He is in an asphyxiation state..... at this rate, otouto-kun will!" (Cleran)

"Broooo! Brooooo! Brooooooooo!" (Doraueemon)

Probably because we reached our destination, the harsh environments seem to have changed completely, but I didn't feel that.

Even though we reached our destination, no one's looking at the scenery.

I just watched my own body lying down from far up in the sky as my comrades cried and shouted desperately.

"No, no way, what, what happened to him?" (Eljiela)

Farga grabbed Eljiela with an expression of an oni as she become flustered from not understanding what had happened.

"You fuck!" (Farga)

"!" (Eljiela)

"No..... there's no point blaming you. It's my fault for not realizing he couldn't endure it first!" (Farga)

Farga hit the surface of the cloud in frustration.

"Wa, wake up, Velt, wake up! I, I will not let you die in this stupid way! You, you promised, that you would stay by my side! Even Forna, even Forna!" (Ura)

"Lord..... kuh, I..... I called myself my lord's right-hand man, and yet....."
(Musashi)

"Wai, Musashi-chan! What are you trying to cut your stomach for!?" (Cleran)

"Calm down! At this rate, bro's, bro's gonna, bro's gonna! That's right! Ar, artificial respiration! Anyway, just warm up bro's body!" (Doraueemon)

Ahh..... what's up with this..... this, is this Velt's Jeeha's end?

Asakura Ryuuma died in an accident, and Velt Jeeha froze to death?
Both curtains fell for me without warning, in the blink of an eye.
However, a divine light flowed in through these dark clouds.

“Everyone..... please step back.” (Eljiela)

Eljiela spoke with a serious expression as a dazzling aura of light covered her body.

“I am sorry. It was my fault for thinking that land people could all stand environmental changes. Therefore, as atonement..... I will definitely not let him die. I swear to the sky.” (Eljiela)

Then, for some reason, Eljiela ripped open her wetsuit-like clothes and became completely naked.

“You.....” (Farga)

“What are you doing at a time like this!” (Ura)

“Eljiela-chan?” (Cleran)

“What are you attempting!” (Musashi)

“Uoh.” (Doraemon)

Ha? Haaaaaaaaaaaaa!? Wait, like, Eljiela just became naked all of a sudden!
Furthermore, she’s not covering anything up! Wait, I get that you have a super model’s figure!

Like, I can see everything! Your huge mountains and even your valley!

“I will nurse him.” (Eljiela)

It happened in an instant.

Eljiela pointed her hand at my body, breaking my frozen clothes to pieces.
Wait, wha, what are you going to do by making me naked too!?

“Excuse me.” (Eljiela)

Everyone had become dumbfounded.

No, it’s not like they were dumbfounded by Eljiela’s naked body.

Every single one of her movements were extremely noble, that everyone watched in fascination under this situation that seemed like it shouldn’t be disturbed.

Eljiela then hugged my body gently but in a strong way.

“I will pour the sky’s healing power into you. Please, open your eyes.” (Eljiela)

It was as if a mother was hugging her newborn child with selfless love. And then, Eljiela wrapped up my body with her big wings, completely covering my figure.

“Please, come back. Back to this world.” (Eljiela)

Eljiela’s face comes closer and her lips pressed against mine, pouring in warm power, a breath of life and deep affection inside my body.

As she did so, my heart pumped. By the time I realized it, I was no longer looking from a third person perspective, but from my own body.

I felt warmth from the center of my heart, and it felt like even my heart had been washed.

There’s an angel in front of me, smiling while shedding tears.

The angel hugged me gently, and whispered.

“Welcome back. I am glad..... you are safe.....” (Eljiela)

“..... Am I..... alive? I.....” (Velt)

“And..... sorry..... because of me..... you.....” (Eljiela)

Even though I honestly have a bunch of things I want to say from almost dying in a stupid way.....

“Velt Jeeha.” (Velt)

“Eh?” (Eljiela)

“That’s my name..... satisfied? Also..... tha, thanks..... like..... you saved me.” (Velt)

As I somehow squeeze that out from my body that still hasn’t thawed completely, the angel’s smile transformed into one of a lovely woman.

“Yes. Please treat me well, Velt-sama!” (Eljiela)

A miracle might’ve happened right now.

Even though delinquents don’t pray to god, an angel saved my life.

“Ku, haha, good grief, I didn’t think I would be able to reunite with my dead old man and mum like this.” (Velt)

“You cannot move yet. Please stay like this until your body returns to normal. Directly overlapping skin like this is the best way to stay warm.” (Eljiela)

It’s very warm, comfortable, fragrant and super soft.

And, I noticed something.

It was for the sake of artificial respiration and lifesaving, but the fact is, I’m embracing an unequalled, naked beauty who overlapped her lips with mine.

Cra, crap. By the time I realized it.....

“Ahn.” (Eljiela)

“!” (Velt)

“Wha, what is this? Something hit my leg.....” (Eljiela)

“Do, don’t, don’t moooove! Do, don’t grab it!” (Velt)

“Kyah! It, it moved!” (Eljiela)

..... This isn’t good. I definitely can’t let Forna find out about this. If she does, she’ll kill me so thoroughly that even an angel won’t be able to save me.....

Chapter 103: Immensely curious girls

At the summit of the clouds, there's a circular rampart and a church-looking building in the centre.

Rectangular tiles are lined up orderly, making a white floor. That white floor is made completely out of clouds. Clouds were hardened, maintained and then layed out as tiles. And with that method, they made houses from the same material too. There's even an artificial lake made out of melted clouds. It looked like a country town with no greenery. That world dyed in pure white didn't even have a speck of dirt, to the extent that it seemed abnormal.

In this calm and tranquil world, the beautiful angels were spending their lives just like the humans in the land world. Actually, calling them the same would be a misleading statement.

"Ara, what a lovely tune. This flute sound, it must be the sixth princess, Lenza-sama playing it." (Angel)

"My, how beautiful." (Angel)

By the side of the lake, there's a beautiful woman playing the flute. It's perfect for a picture.

"My, look! The third princess, Roala-sama, is here! The strongest war hero in the sky world herself." (Angel)

"Her figure is truly majestic." (Angel)

In the centre of the sky kingdom's town, there's a sharp eyed-woman, taking along her subordinate battle maidens.

The princesses, the people fascinated by them, and just everything was beautiful.

I feel like I might start doubting whether this place is really a heaven, that's detached from the present world.

“I see. The world is wide.” (Velt)

After getting brought back from the grip of death, I seared the scenery of the sky world, Holaiend, into my eyes, while Eljiela leads us around.

They were all things that seemed like you could see on land, but actually can't.

“Welcome! Today, I caught a lot of good sky fish from the sea of clouds in the east~.” (Angel)

“Hey hey, how about today? Wanna go for a drink?” (Angel)

Among them, there were hearty people that didn't even seem like angels, but I couldn't feel any wildness from them.

The lines of buildings, shapes and scale aren't that different from the Elfarshia Kingdom other than being white, but since this place is full of beautiful angels, I can't help but feel nervous.

“Velt, is your body fine?” (Ura)

“Yeah, sorry for worrying you.” (Velt)

“You really did. If something had happened to you..... sniff..... uu~, I would be purposeless for a while. My tears just can't stop.” (Ura)

“My bad. Rather than that..... could you do something about that dark aura you occasionally let out with your tears?” (Velt)

“No no, it's not like I'm angry or anything. You two were just naked in Eljiela's wings, your face was buried in, E, El, Eljiela's bo, boo, boooo, bs, brea, breasts, and she was, um, grabbing your thing.....” (Ura)

“It was to save my life.” (Velt)

“Ye, yeah. That's right. I believe that too. In, in heaven, that's com, commonplace, right?” (Ura)

It's almost as if I'm in an art museum in the west.

It makes me want to stop thinking about the little things.

“Fufu~n, hey hey, otouto-kun. So~, how were they? Eljiela-chan's~, hands and breasts?” (Cleran)

“It was to save my life!” (Velt)

Oh, children are running around happily. Among them, there are even kids that are flapping their child-sized wings.

Although they're all girls, the innocent angels are playing tag.

“Looooooooord! Looooooooord! I am so glad~, I am so glad~, I am so glad~.”

(Musashi)

“Oi, stop clinging to me so much. You’re literally covered in snot.” (Velt)

“My negligence is unfathomable for just crying and not trying to resuscitate you! This kind of incident will never happen again!” (Musashi)

“Ohh.” (Velt)

“Furthermore, as I now know how to resuscitate, if in the ten thousandth chance, if in the hundred millionth chance, the same thing were to happen again, this time, I will save you with that resuscitation method. I~, will pour life energy into you by passionately pushing my lips against yours and pressing my motherly breasts against you for your resurrection! So, please leave it to me!”

(Musashi)

“..... I’ll teach you the proper way of saving someone another time.” (Velt)

The sky world’s environment is being managed.

Despite how high up it is from land, the temperature and air aren’t that different.

There’s no rain, snow or seasons, so it seems like you could easily spend a year here without trouble.

“Broooooo, good for you! But, but, I was kinda jealous! Did you see Eljiela-neesan’s..... nipples?” (Dorauemon)

“It was to save my life!” (Velt)

‘What if we could monopolise this world and all of its power?’

I guess it’s understandable for the demons who thought that to have their eyes on this world.

“Stupid brother..... I won’t tell my stupid sister about this for now.” (Farga)

“Please do, my dear elder brother.” (Velt)

However, despite the demons aiming at this world and causing strife, the women in this town aren’t making any anxious faces.

To be honest, since they didn’t have any exchange with other races until now, they probably didn’t have any strife.

That being said, the town’s atmosphere isn’t stiff at all. That’s probably because of the cool women patrolling the town with confident faces.

“Roala-neesama!” (Eljiela)

“Eljiela. Good work. Did those people come from the land?” (Roala)

“Yes, they coincidentally arrived at our airspace during their flight. From the right, Velt-sama. Ura-san, Farga-san, Musashi-san, Cleran-san and Dorauemon-san.” (Eljiela)

An elegant woman stood in front of us while receiving a high-pitched cheer.

“I see. It seems my younger sister put you through extreme trouble before. I apologise from the bottom of my heart. And, I’m sure you have your circumstances, but you are a rare visitor so we’ll give you a heartfelt welcome.” (Roala)

She has a boyish, bright red shortcut. Her height is taller than most women, and she’s the only one wearing a custom made, green mantle-like jacket. A cool woman; a woman that charms other women. That’s the type of woman she looks like.

“I’m surprised. The demons are aiming at your country right now, but you guys hardly have any strife, right? So then, why do you guys have soldiers?” (Farga)

While I was thinking about how beautiful they are, Farga was thinking about something else.

Now that he mentions it, that’s true. Why do these guys have an army in a world that has no relation to the land world?

Roala smiled a little and answered that question.

“Ahh, that’s because we have had that kind of system due to a tradition that has been handed down to us.” (Roala)

“Tradition?” (Farga)

“Fufu, I’m sure you are hungry by now, so let me lead you to the palace, and we can talk about it there.” (Roala)

Hungry? Come to think of it..... we look at each other, and nod while smiling wryly.

That’s true, we should take up their offer.

And then, as we were about to accept Roala’s kindness.....

“Wait.” (?)

We heard a woman's voice.

"Mu." (Farga)

"Ah." (Velt)

"Kyaaa, so cool!" (Angel)

"She's always so lovely!" (Angel)

Their gaze at Roala expresses 'charm,' but they're reacting to this person like they're an idol or something.

That person has a senseless outfit of a white mini skirt with a sleeveless, black shirt.

Her emerald, long hair is tied up, and there's a scar from a sword on her face. However, rather than pitiful, the scar on her face is strangely displaying her charm as a woman even more.

"What is it, Lenza?" (Roala)

"Lenza-oneesama!" (Eljiela)

It's the woman that was playing the flute by the lake before.

"Come on, don't be so hard-hearted. I just heard some new land people came, so I wanted to see them." (Lenza)

Among all the women in the sky race, she's the only one that speaks in a rough way.

However, it's strange because I still sense some grace from her.

"Are they the ones? The castaways that are different to those red, hairy guys that keep coming at us?" (Lenza)

"Yes, they coincidentally arrived here. I thought we should definitely invite them." (Eljiela)

Lenza fixedly stares at us while crossing her arms.

Rather,

"Hey, Eljiela." (Velt)

"Yes?" (Eljiela)

"Are you, sisters?" (Velt)

"Yes, we are." (Eljiela)

They don't look similar at all. Well I mean, all three of them have huge

breasts, but the colour of their hair is different, and they just look totally different.

I just can't think of them as sisters.

"That reminds me, you said there are only women in the sky race, but they can give birth alone, right? What did you mean by that?" (Cleran)

"Ahh, yes. We are able to mate with the opposite sex from other races, but the sky race has one other method to produce children." (Eljiela)

"Yeah, that's what I was wondering about. Do you lay eggs or something?" (Cleran)

"No. We do something called『Division Birth』." (Eljiela)

Division? As in like, splitting your body?

"From their first menstruation to their twenties, women of the sky race enter a season called division period. The mother's life force, extrasensory divine perception and genes split into two between the mother and the child. As it consumes an extraordinary amount of power, it only happens once in our lives, but we still do our best to make sure that the delivery goes well, so our race will continue prospering forever." (Eljiela)

"Tha, that kind of birth method? Then, does no one have a father? Just a mother?" (Cleran)

"Ah, however, there are a few people who forcefully mated with a land race and produced a child so I cannot say it is unconditional, but almost everyone in our world has one parent and one child." (Eljiela)

I see. Well, at least it's not as grotesque as laying eggs.
But like, how would it feel to know you'll give birth to a child without marrying or having a lover?

Well, it's something I wouldn't know, since I've never had a child.

"Hm? Wait a minute. Then, why do you call these two your elder sisters? If you can only give birth to one child, there should be no sisters, right?" (Ura)

"Yes, our parents are different. However, the reason is with our royalty. That is———" (Eljiela)

It seems like the same on land, but it's actually not. Eljiela was earnestly answering the endless amount of questions that came up, but Lenza

interrupted midway.

“Whatever, who cares about that kinda small stuff.” (Lenza)

“Lenza-neesama!” (Eljiela)

“Kukuku, rather than that, you guys can’t deceive my eyes and noses. Those two over there are the same as the red, hairy guys from before.” (Lenza)

Those two over there? The ones she pointed at, was Farga and me.

“You two..... are men, right?” (Lenza)

“..... Hah?” (Velt)

“Kukuku, don’t play dumb. Even if you can deceive Roala and Eljiela, you can’t deceive me.” (Lenza)

..... Do I look like a woman? As I was about to say that, voices were raised as if a shock had run through all of heaven.

“““““Me, men!”“““““ (Angels)

I’m a man. So what?

“Is, is that a man? No way, this is my first time seeing one.” (Angel)

“But their looks and figure are definitely different to ours.” (Angel)

“The prisoners of war that attacked us were apparently men too, but they were all taken by the battle maidens.” (Angel)

Wha, what’s going on? I feel like we’re being exposed to staggeringly curious eyes.

Wait, why the hell is Eljiela getting shocked, even after seeing me my naked body?

“No, no way..... Velt-sama, and even Farga-san..... are men?” (Eljiela)

“I’m, I’m a guy no matter how you look at it, aren’t I!? Like, what the hell are you going on about now, even after touching my thing!” (Velt)

“Thing?” (Eljiela)

“..... You, you’re kidding me. You made me naked and became surprised from touching it, didn’t you!” (Velt)

“Eh..... wha, what! No way..... then, that was..... that was the rumoured..... body part that only men possess..... the penis!” (Eljiela)

“Don’t say it in such a loud voice, stupiiiiid! That’s the word an angel isn’t

allowed to say!” (Velt)

Then, Eljela said, “If I remember correctly, it was around this big. It was warm and strong,” as she fixedly stared at the hand she touched my thing with, clenched it a few times, and then looked at my crotch and her hand.

Wha, what is it?

“Shira~~~~~.” (Ura)

Ura, stop making that unamused face.

I don’t know what’s going on either.

“What? You, Eljiela! Di, did you..... touch the legendary sacred sword..... the penis!? Even I haven’t touched it before!” (Lenza)

“Is that true! So the rumours were true. I was not sure when my subordinates, who interrogated the captured land people, told me, but..... that thing you call a penis actually did exist!” (Roala)

Crap. These three angels are all having a penis talk with serious faces. Even we’re too troubled to react that we don’t know what to do. Then, Lenza came forth while scratching her head.

“Ah~, we’re princesses, so producing offspring in ways other than division birth is generally not allowed, and our mothers told us not to~. So like, although we captured the red, hairy land guys, we couldn’t take part in anything after that. But like, according to the ones that interrogated them..... they said they were glad to be women..... with a really happy face! Wouldn’t that make you curious?” (Lenza)

No, before that, what the hell are those battle maidens doing under the name of ‘interrogating’.

“So, you two. I don’t care which one it is, we’re going to give you a grand welcome..... so just give me a peek of your penis.” (Lenza)

Yeah, at first I was moved by heaven..... but like, these guys are just insane. What is this woman saying with such a handsome-looking face?

“Fumu. I see..... certainly, that sort of information is hard to come by for us. If possible, please let me see it with her.” (Roala)

“Ah, Velt-sama! Please, let me see your penis again!” (Eljiela)

Ah, Ura's..... making a 'can we..... leave already?' kind of face.
As for Musashi, smokes coming out of her flushed head, and she's staggering.

"Gyaaahahhahhahha! This is seriously crack up!" (Doraemon)
"Ahahahahaha, of, of all people, she asks Farga, to show his penis.....
ahahahaha, this is the best!" (Cleran)

Dora and Cleran are laughing like crazy.
Well, rather than laughing, I just because speechless.
As for Farga, he's staring at Eljiela and the others with disgusted eyes, as if he was looking at pieces of trash.
Well, they might just not be able to help it after being raised in an environment where there are only women, but if I reveal it here, it'll become my dark history for the rest of my life.
I'll just politely.....

———Pann!

A bursting noise was made, and something suddenly started resounding in our heads.

———!

Eljiela and the others who kept saying penis repeatedly, changed expression.

———Reporting to the sky battle maiden knights. There is a new intrusion response. They number roughly five thousand. All knights capable of moving, gather and deal with this. The coordinates will be sent. The trespassers have most likely crossed the lower strata of clouds already.

Five thousand!
Not only us, but the women started becoming flustered by this notification that was suddenly made.

"Everyone, prepare for battle! Peace talks have become impossible! Repulse them immediately!" (Roala)

"Heh, they were sending small scouting groups until now, but they've suddenly become daring. I'll annihilate them." (Lenza)

"Strife is going to happen again, is it." (Eljiela)

They had the same expressions as the soldiers I saw in the Archline Empire a

few days ago.

“Please wait here, we will drive them away.” (Eljiela)

“Yeah, but once we come back, you better show us your penises.” (Lenza)

“Let’s go.” (Roala)

They have the faces of soldiers heading to war.

“And off they go.” (Velt)

“In the end, there’s war in heaven too..... what a shitty age this is.” (Farga)

“I really have nothing to say.” (Ura)

“U~mu, however, they must be quite strong to try to attack a country of this scale with five thousand.” (Musashi)

“True. They must be very confident, or just big dummies.” (Cleran)

However, we still couldn’t do anything.

This world is full of war.

And unlike the time we were at the empire, there’s no reason nor obligation for us to get involved.

No matter who the opponent is.....

———New information has arrived. The enemy army’s supreme commander has named himself and declared his invasion. All members, stay vigilant. The enemy army’s supreme commander, called himself『Chirotan Popopo』.

Wait a minute, what’s up with that please-laugh-at-me name.

I almost laughed at that name even in this serious situation.

However.....

“What?” (Farga)

“No way!” (Ura)

“How!” (Musashi)

“You’re kidding.....” (Cleran)

Farga, Ura, Musashi and Cleran all became stiff.

It was just Dora and me that didn’t understand.

“I see, Velt. You don’t know, huh. Well, I only heard of that name when I was in the Demon Continent, but.....” (Ura)

“O, oi, Ura. Who is that Chirotan guy, is he famous or something?” (Velt)

“Ye, yeah..... Chirotan Popopo..... is the number one troublemaker in the demon world..... is what my father told me in the past. And, above all, Chirotan is.....” (Ura)

A troublemaker, huh~. There’s too much of a gap between that and his name, so it kinda just doesn’t click for me.....

“Chirotan is one of the Seven Great Demon Kings.” (Ura)

Oi, you should’ve told me that first!

Chapter 104: An overwhelming difference in power

Seven Great Demon Kings.

Now that's quite a global VIP visitor.

"Chirotan? You're saying one of the Seven Great Demon Kings is someone with that stupid name?" (Velt)

"Yeah. I don't know the details, but my father used to say, 'Chirotan will come to you if you do anything bad, alright?' a lot." (Ura)

"I don't get if he's supposed to be scary or not scary. Like, I've never even heard of him before." (Velt)

I didn't think the troops that were attacking the sky world, were being led by one of the Seven Great Demon Kings.

I've honestly never heard of that demon king's name before, but I could see Ura and the others making somewhat uneasy expressions.

"There is a reason why Chirotan is not famous. It's because despite being a demon king, Chirotan doesn't possess any fixed country in the Demon Continent." (Ura)

"Haa? How can he be a king if he doesn't own a country?" (Velt)

"That is... because he constantly moves from land to land, whimsically invading other countries and forcefully becoming the king. He constantly transfers from one place to another and aims at different places when he gets bored. Due to that, the countries don't develop and his personnel don't increase, so the troops he brings with him is only ever around a few thousand." (Ura)

"Eh, is that bad? He kinda sounds like the most natural demon king among all the ones I've heard of until now." (Velt)

That's like, totally the type of demon king that appears in games or manga. 'I don't care about politics, for I am the ruler of this world' is simpler and easier to understand.

"You idiot. Think about it carefully. In this warring period where armies fight against each other with developed magic techniques, battle techniques, group

tactics, etc, troops that just leave everything to their strength with no plan, can defeat an army of ten thousand, okay? Fucking realise how much that denies the idea of an『army』.” (Farga)

“Of course, the Demon Continent can’t recognise an existence like that. But even after bearing that in mind, since Chirotan destroyed a former country belonging to one of the Seven Great Demon Kings by rampaging with his mighty battle power, they had no choice but to recognise Chirotan as one of the new Seven Great Demon Kings.” (Ura)

Like, the more I hear about him, the atmosphere is becoming more and more dangerous.

If only his name was cooler, it really would be the birth of a demon king that could shake the world with fear, but I just can’t do anything about these complicated feelings.

“But, wait a minute. In that case, aren’t Eljiela and the others in danger?” (Velt)

“Yes, in extreme danger.” (Cleran)

“Let alone that, if the world found out that not only us, but even Chirotan found the sky world that the adventurers and astrologists in this world couldn’t find, the whole world would fall over in surprise.” (Farga)

“Lord, what will you do? Well, there is no reason for us to participate like when we did to save lord’s madam.” (Musashi)

“That’s true. She’s just..... the person who saved Velt’s life, right?” (Ura)

The person that saved my life, huh. Well, it’s not wrong. However, Eljiela and the others were brimming with confidence as they flew off, so I don’t know what will happen.

“Hey, come quickly!” (Angel)

“Yes, we cannot miss the princesses’ efforts!” (Angel)

At that moment, the angels of the sky race all started gathering in one spot. The place they gathered in, was the huge lake made out of a melted cloud. What’s happening there?

As I wondered that, the surface of the lake started shining, and a certain scenery was being projected there.

“Thi, this is! Lesser demon! The gargoyle race! Even the skull knight race of the undead are here!” (Ura)

It projected the large army of demons that could either fly or that were straddling flying monsters.

“Is this lake endowed with a clairvoyance ability? Seems like they’ve left another precious thing open to the public.” (Velt)

“I see. So you are able to see them fighting through this, huh.” (Ura)

The angels are frolicking as if an idol’s concert is about to start.
This is war. And yet, what is this difference in awareness?
Is it because the sky race just doesn’t know?
Or is it because they have absolute confidence in their comrades’ power?

“But Chirotan’s troops are surprising. He has all sorts of races.” (Cleran)
“Yeah. To make up for not possessing any land or territory, he controls the surrounding tribes and people, handpicking the strongest to become his subordinates.” (Ura)

“Is that so. Well, we will see whether they are strong, or whether they are a disorderly crowd.” (Musashi)

That’s right. So, start.
My actions from now won’t start unless I first see what happens...

However, frankly, it just ended without needing our needless anxiety.

“Advance! Rout the enemies!” (Roala)

Under the command of the supreme commander, Roala, the battle maidens used their breakthrough power and extrasensory divine perception to overwhelm them just as the war started.

“Who, who are these women, no, no!” (Demon)
“They’re monsteers!” (Demon)
“Gyaaaaa!” (Demon)

It was a head-on collision as both armies tried to break through the other in a drill-shaped formation, but the demon army was very easily cut up by the battle maidens’ powers.

Losing their breakthrough power, their army that had become scattered had

collapsed to the point where rearranging themselves would be impossible. All that's left is for the sky maiden knights to mow them down.

"Hiii! The red unit has been annihilated! The commander was captured!"
(Demon)

"The skull knight race that tried to circle around them, were crushed into pieces!" (Demon)

"The lesser demons readily surrendered!" (Demon)

"The enemy army is drawing near our headquarters!" (Demon)

Even though they're the ones attacking, the army of demons starts becoming flustered.

To be honest, I wasn't sure what would happen when they challenged the sky world with a small army, but there's an overwhelming difference in power that you don't even have to compare them.

However, the opponent is still one of the Seven Great Demon Kings. He's a warrior that won his title in the Demon Continent.

The demon king army that fights with just their strength and no plan, is being pressed down with power.

Basically, the sky maiden knights are just that strong.

"I'll show you the thunderstorm of the sky! Extrasensory divine perception, natural heaven calamity!" (Lenza)

In an overwhelming way.

"Hehhee! Alright, you guys! Take as many male prisoners as you want! We'll thoroughly torment them and break them so hard they'll never be able to step into this world again! Anyone who makes any achievements can embrace as many men they want to! Trample them!" (Lenza)

""""""Understood!"""""" (Angels)

"Now, anyone who wants to get crushed by my『Sky Grenade Axe』, come at me!" (Lenza)

Lenza, the sixth princess, causes a natural disaster in the skies. Using her abilities and an ultra-heavy battleaxe that's several times her height, she's routing demons one after the other with overwhelming power.

“Surrender, land people. Any more strife is useless. If you people have places to return to, people that are waiting for you, please do not dye these pure white clouds and this blue sky in blood.” (Eljiela)

Covered in a holy mother-like light, Eljiela told the opponents to surrender. Seeing her appearance, the daring and rough demons threw away their weapons with their heads down as they shed tears.

This is their power when they collided against them from the front.

The world doesn't know of this power and army that's always floating in the sky.

It made me shiver by just thinking about it.

“Guooooooooooooooooooooo, what the hell is thiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiis!” (?)

Then, an angry roar resounded, shaking the atmosphere so much, that I almost mistook it as an earthquake.

I reflexively covered my ears and jumped up in surprise.

Whose roar was that?

“Unfaaaaair, this is so unfaaaair! My brethren are such small fries!

Furthermore, they surrendered so easily, why would you do that!? Why doesn't everyone just move the way my great self wants them toooooooooooooooooooooo!” (?)

That came from a demon at the back of the army.

He's a muscular giant. A rhinoceros beetle-like horn is coming out of his forehead, and his body is covered in pitch black skin.

With just a worn-out red mantle covering him, the demon shouts with all his power to the skies.

Regardless of how idiotic and wild he looked, he was the only one with a different atmosphere.

“That's him! Chirotan!” (Ura)

So he really was, huh.

The supreme commander of this demon army, and one of the Seven Great Demon Kings.

However, he's currently sighing greatly due to how disappointing his allies are.

“Like, who are those old hags anyway! They’re way stronger than the reports! They weren’t just happy-go-lucky, erotic old hags! What the hell was the scouting party’s report!” (Chirotan)

“..... Um..... they were most likely enticed by the sky race.....” (Demon)

“You’re kidding me! They were ogling those ugly, old hags!? You disgraaaaaace!” (Chirotan)

He, he’s amazing in a way.....

Calling those unequally beautiful angels ugly, old hags in front of them, huh. He seems dumb, but since he’s fought wars after wars, he might actually be the straight-laced type that doesn’t fall for honey traps and stuff.....

“Listen up, you pieces of trash! In the first place, women are only women until they reach twelve years of age! Anyone older than that is a wrinkly, old hag! They can just go die!” (Chirotan)

I take back everything I said. He was just a perverted lolicon.

“You guys don’t understand anything! Children have the charm of being cute, that a brutal, unsightly demon king like me, doesn’t have! Risking your life to protect that, is what a real man would do! It’s the way a man and woman love each other! Rotten, old hags and uglies that don’t have any worth in protecting, can all just die! Massacre them! Alright!?” (Chirotan)

“How, however. Do you not think that logic is a bit too extreme..... please, look at that sky race! Their well-ordered looks, and, hu, huge breasts that you just want to jump, jump into!” (Demon)

“Damn it aaaall, why! Well-ordered looks? That’s just a sheet of skin on top of some bone! Breasts? That’s just a lump of fat! In the first place, what’s good about huge breasts!? Women with huge breasts just say their shoulders are stiff like the old hags they are, they’re noisy about heat rashes, and on top of that, even the shape of their areola is important to them! What’s more, they just sag as they become even older hags! Somewhat small, palm-sized ones are the most attractive, remember that!” (Chirotan)

..... Oi.....

“Wait! You guys are just sidetracking! You’re in a big pinch right now, so talk about the war instead! You’re literally being attacked right now!” (Velt)

He was being such an idiot that even I said that without thinking, and Farga and the others are holding their heads in shock.

“Tha, that piece of shit, is one of the Seven Great Demon Kings?” (Farga)
“..... Is the monster my father always talked about when scolding me, that thing?” (Ura)

“He is the one that had even been a legend in the Demi-human Continent..... “
(Musashi)

‘Just do whatever you want to.’
That’s the kind of impression I got from them.

“Natural heaven calamity!” (Lenza)

“Heaven crush!” (Eljiela)

“Heaven’s war emperor!” (Roala)

And, I didn’t understand what was going on anymore.

“Hii, hiii! They, they’re hereee!” (Demon)
“De, demon king, please, please escape..... how beautiful.....” (Demon)

An explosion of light that reverberated across all the clouds wrapped up the battlefield, making many demons soar in the sky. The three archangels descended until they were in front of Chirotan, who was raging in a loud voice.

“You’re the general, aren’t you.” (Lenza)
“Please surrender.” (Eljiela)
“If you retreat, your life will be spared. However, if you do not..... I will take the place of heaven and punish you!” (Roala)

All the demons in the headquarters faltered from that overwhelming presence, losing their fighting spirit.

“Man, you guys are such embarrassments~, I’m definitely pulverising you guys later.” (Chirotan)

Except for just one person.

“You say heaven, but that’s just a scummy word that doesn’t even make sense! I was only going to kick you down onto land if you had silently given me this country, you worthless old hags!” (Chirotan)

Chirotan came forth with a relaxed smile.
As if opposing the brilliant light, he's overflowing with dark miasma.

"Chi, Chirotan-sama!" (Demon)
"Chirotan-sama is directly-!" (Demon)

The atmosphere changed.
That's right, although he's a degenerate, the opponent is a demon king.
Someone that's earned one of the three big titles, the Seven Great Demon Kings.

"Remember this, you old hags! Remember this power you wouldn't even be able to imagine as you decay silently in the sky! I'll blast you all into pieces with my overwhelming, transcendental power that made me become one of the Seven Great Demon Kings! Go cry and shout as your piss leaks out!" (Chirotan)

And..... the decisive battle to reach the conclusion of the war..... was over in an instant.

"Hehe, just try it you pitch black bastard! Ora ora ora ora ora!" (Lenza)
"You annoying ugly!" (Chirotan)

She came in from the front with an ultra-heavy battleaxe in her thin arms.
Lenza swung her massive axe at Chirotan.
However, Chirotan doesn't use any tricks.
He just uses his fist to punch Lenza's battleaxe with simple power.

"Tsu-!" (Lenza)
"Gunununu!" (Chirotan)

There was enough power to cause a shock wave.
Both of them are fine, but that shock wave sent both of them flying.

"Hehe, you're pretty good! You're the first man that's ever endured my power! Considering you're such a strong guy, I really want to ravish you now!" (Lenza)
"Shut up, old hag! I'm just angry now! I don't care about a world like this! I'll kill you and all my useless subordinates that can't even do anything!" (Chirotan)

Suddenly, Chirotan crouched, contracting his whole body with all his power.
No, he's not crouching.

He's compressing his power to the limit.

In that case, what's going to happen to the compressed power? It's obvious, it's going to radiate outwards.

"Everyone can just disappeaaaaar! Burst End Distortion!" (Chirotan)

The devil's radiation. An overwhelming explosion that could plunder everything around it.

It had so much power, that it gave the impression of the world's end..... is what probably would've happened.

"Uoh, this isn't good! Eljiela!" (Lenza)

"Please leave it to me, Lenza-oneesama!" (Eljiela)

Before the light of the explosion covered everything, Eljiela stood in front.

"Pour all my divine power into this! Heaven Flowers!" (Eljiela)

What happened? That might've been a power similar to Forna and Ura's magic armament.

Her pure white wetsuit transformed.

Gauntlet, armour, helmet and a longsword. And then, both of Eljiela's wings evolved into dazzling, golden wings.

"I will protect our heaven from any phenomenon!" (Eljiela)

The coating of light wrapped up the explosion.

As if nothing had happened in the first place, the sky fell silent, and Chirotan showed an expression of shock.

"Ha, wha, my, my great power was..... what the hell is thaaaaaaaataat!?" (Chirotan)

And, everything was over as he finished shouting.

"It's over, king from the land!" (Roala)

"!" (Chirotan)

For the end, Roala thrust a spiral-tipped spear into Chirotan's abdomen. The large quantity of scattering blue blood and a shriek from Chirotan, informed the end of this battle in the sky.

"Hehe, it would've been dangerous if I was fighting him one-on-one." (Lenza)

“We need to treat him immediately. He can still be saved.” (Eljiela)

“Fuh, that was a foolish battle.” (Roala)

And, it goes without saying that we trembled in fear at those three.

Chapter 105: Love

The three big titles of the world had existed since before I was born. I don't know every single title-holder, but the war history in this world was made by those tremendously honourable champions. When Ragaia, a cyclops prince, attacked the empire, he said the three big titles are relics of the past, but Forna protected their honour. However, what about this? One of the Seven Great Demon Kings on the same level as Samejima, was easily caught by three angels and thrown into prison. We were dumbfounded by the pride and history of the land world being crushed so easily.

“Someone matching Forna and Esamu ended up like that, after all.” (Velt)
“Incredible. To think there were monsters unknown to the world, above the skies we would always look up at.” (Ura)
“It's fucking absurd.” (Farga)
“I still need to train more. There is always someone better.” (Musashi)
“If I eat them~, I actually think I'll get food poisoning~.” (Cleran)
“We definitely can't make those ladies angry.” (Dorauemon)

A parade was held above the clouds. People of the sky race sent cheers to the battle maidens that returned triumphantly.

“Kyaaa! Lenza-sama is so lovely!” (Angel)
“Roala-sama, that was stunning!” (Angel)
“Please embrace me, Eljiela-sama!” (Angel)

Affection-filled cheers are being sent to the women who fought. At one glance, they might look lesbian, but this is a part of their culture, so I shouldn't retort. Besides, the war from before was too shocking that I didn't even care.

“We captured the enemy's supreme commander. Now our territory should go

back to being peaceful. Good work, all of you! Let us drink alcohol today and celebrate!” (Roala)

“““““Yes!”“““““ (Angels)

Due to Roala’s words of encouragement, the battle maidens threw their armour and helmets to the sky in unison.

To express their joy, they jumped into the large lake with just their wetsuits on, and some had even become naked.

“Yahhou!” (Angel)

“Kyaaa, geez~, take that!” (Angel)

“Ahn, goodness!” (Angel)

“Ehehe, we did it.” (Angel)

“Of course we did. We combined our powers together. Now, face me, and let me enjoy your lips.” (Angel)

“Ahn, no, everyone is looking~.” (Angel)

“Ahh~n, I want a lover too~, I want a girlfriend~.” (Angel)

Eye candy.....

———Stab

“Guooooo, my eyes! My eyes! Ura, you-, eye jabbing isn’t funny!” (Velt)

“Shu, shut up. I will not allow you to get excited over anyone other than Forna or me.” (Ura)

“Wah~, I guess the fact that only girls are here makes them feel free~.” (Cleran)

“U~mu, how bold.” (Musashi)

“Uhhyou~, noseblood splurt! This is seriously the greatest thing ever! I’ve seared it into my brain!” (Doraueemon)

“This is stupid. One of the Seven Great Demon Kings lost to these fucking things. Disgraceful as a representative of the land.” (Farga)

However, the Sky Kingdom was undoubtedly strong. Especially the three angels leading the army, they were overwhelming.

That’s exactly why I couldn’t believe what would happen when I came in contact with them.....

“Velt-sama! I have just now returned!” (Eljiela)

“Oh, ohh. Elji..... wait, why are you naked!?” (Velt)

“Ah, sorry. We are having a party today, and everything had become dirty from war.” (Eljiela)

“What are you, a nudist tribe that just becomes naked if your clothes get dirty!” (Velt)

Eljiela jumps at me, trying to cling onto my back.
Furthermore, she’s doing it naked.
Crap……. I feel like, I’m going to…….

“No, get away from Velt already! I had overlooked it at the start as you were his lifesaver, but any more than this is……. hyaaa!” (Ura)

With a flushed face, Ura tried to tear Eljiela away from me, but someone grabbed the nape of her neck.
Lenza was the one that did it.

“He~.” (Lenza)
“What are you doing!” (Ura)
“Well like, you’re an amazing woman, and I didn’t know there were fine women like you on the land. You’re my type.” (Lenza)
“……. Hah?” (Ura)
“Come to my bedroom tonight. I’ll embrace you.” (Lenza)
“Ha? …… Don’t, don’t mess with me! I do not swing that way! I have a lover! Velt! Another woman is trying to take your woman, help!” (Ura)

Lenza, who’s already drunk, cuddled with Ura and started seducing her.
Normally, Ura would’ve just knocked her out, but she’s totally scared of her.

“Kyaa, who is this girl, she’s so cute!” (Angel)
“Waa, come here and talk with me.” (Angel)
“Ara, what a cute chest.” (Angel)

And then, the one that they targeted, was…….

“Re, release me~!” (Musashi)

Musashi, whose eyes are spinning round and round.
Her clothes are getting stripped one after the other, and they were doing whatever they wanted to her.

“Farga-san, let us go back to our conversation from before. Please, show me

your penis!” (Roala)

“Hey, you! It was great as a joke, but I won’t forgive you if you’re seriously saying that! Even I haven’t seen it before!” (Cleran)

Ohh, there’s an unexpected catfight.

Roala asked something incredible with a serious face and Cleran became a little mad.

“You pieces of shit.” (Farga)

““Don’t run away!”” (Roala and Cleran)

“Guoh!” (Farga)

Farga ignored them and tried to leave, but the two women grabbed his neck immediately.

Ohh, this is my first time seeing Farga being flustered.

“Dora-chan, you’re amazing!” (Child Angel)

“Gooo, flyyy, kyahahaha!” (Child Angel)

“I want to get on too!” (Child Angel)

“Wau, please don’t yell so much, line up~!” (Doraumon)

By the lake, the children were playing with Dora, who’s in his big form, as if he was a leisure facility.

He’s cavorting with the small angels on his back.

We might’ve already been swallowed up by them, regardless of our intentions.

“Were you not cautious of us because you thought you’d be able to capture us immediately if we caused any problems?” (Velt)

“No, Velt-sama. Your eyes were different from the land people before, so I decided to believe in you.” (Eljiela)

Is the war on the Divine Being Continent between humanity, demons and demi-humans worthless to them?

I felt frustrated as I thought about it. I felt frustrated as I thought about Forna, who has to live through every day with her life on the line.

Well, I don’t have the right to be that way, though.

“Fuu, I’m going to go take a rest.” (Velt)

“Ara, where? There is still plenty of food and alcohol, and the choir and the orchestra are going to perform too. It is a party to congratulate our victory and

to welcome you.” (Eljiela)

“Yeah, I’m thankful for that, but it’s pretty dangerous if I keep being close to naked, defenceless ladies. I’ll be killed by my wife on land.” (Velt)

My sense of reasoning is going crazy too, so I should go somewhere else.

“Wife? Ahh, your partner. I have heard of it before. It is when people of different genders in the land world share their futures. Do you have a partner too, Velt-sama?” (Eljiela)

“Well, yeah. So, she might say I’m having an affair and kill me.” (Velt)

“Ufufufufu, that sounds very blissful. If you don’t mind, could you tell me about it? We could talk peacefully in my favourite place, which has a wonderful view.” (Eljiela)

“..... Oi, I’m not going to die from freezing, right?” (Velt)

“Fufufu, it is okay. Although we have to move a little, there is no problem.” (Eljiela)

“Ha~..... well, sure. But just go wear something. I also wanted to say my thanks to you.” (Velt)

“Ara, you are a very sincere person, Velt-sama.” (Eljiela)

The angels were playing and celebrating, so I wanted to go somewhere quiet to calm down before I cross any lines, but I guess this is fine too.

Eljiela took me to the cloud mountaintop, away from the town and palace. The world I looked down on from there, was shining blue.

“Oh..... are, are we..... above the sea?” (Velt)

“Yes. This is the sea that occupies around seventy per cent of the land world. And, what you can see there is a continent in the land world.” (Eljiela)

Rather than looking down on the land from sky, it was almost like we were gazing at the stars from space.

Compared to the ever-stretching blue sea, the continents that humanity, demons and demi-humans live in might seem small.

However, lives have continued fighting in that small stage of the world, which makes it feel kinda miserable.

“Which way is your hometown, Velt-sama?” (Eljiela)

“Hm~, I can’t tell from here. Well, it was a good place.” (Velt)

“Ara, what kind of place was it?” (Eljiela)

“It’s a country where I was able to meet people who came to love me.” (Velt)

“Oh my, that is truly fantastic.” (Eljiela)

Eljiela asked that with a serious look.

Crap, I tried to dodge the question because it was kinda embarrassing, but my real thoughts just slipped out.

Ah~, this is embarrassing. I can feel my face getting hotter.

She really is a strange woman.

I have to change the topic.....

“Come to think of it, you guys don’t get married, right? And like, if you can only give birth to one child, how do you have sisters?” (Velt)

“Ahh, that is because of the system in our world.” (Eljiela)

“System?” (Velt)

“Yes, the sky world is not just this airspace. Our world is separated into multiple airspaces, that are scattered across the world.” (Eljiela)

“..... Eh! There are other places in the sky world?” (Velt)

She just casually said that, but isn’t that pretty serious? Was it really okay? Was it really okay for her to just tell me a secret of the world?

“Far back in the past, our ancestors gathered all the scattered people of the sky race. They were called the『Eight Sky Princesses』. Thereafter, we princesses call the other princesses who were born in the same period, as sisters. The eight sky princesses all gather, manage, protect and guide the sky race. Right now, our mothers, the current eight sky princesses, are formally managing the whole sky world. As people who will eventually succeed them, we were assigned to different places to learn as much as we can.” (Eljiela)

The children of the current eight sky princesses will manage the sky world after them.

The heritage system is inevitable, but if I had to name one thing that’s different to our world, is that there are eight princesses working together to manage the sky race, instead of just one.

Well, frankly..... I’m not that interested in it.....

“Well, the fact that your mums are still on active duty, and the fact that

princesses like you and Roala are still here, scare me.” (Velt)

“How rude. As long as the land people do not interfere with us, we will never unreasonably involve ourselves with them.” (Eljiela)

Although she said that, it’s still true that the wars between the three races can change completely with one of their whims.

If you think about it like that, it might’ve actually been a good thing that the existence of this sky world stayed as a legend.

“It is your turn now.” (Eljiela)

“Hah?” (Velt)

“It is your turn now to tell me about you, Velt-sama. What kind of person was your mother? Ah, rather, should I be asking how both your parents were? Unlike the sky race, land people have fathers along with their mothers, right?” (Eljiela)

Oh, right..... fathers don’t exist in this world where women give birth to women by themselves.

I guess it’s understandable for her to be curious.

At any rate, my parents, huh.....

“My parents..... loved me more than themselves..... and more than anyone in this world.....” (Velt)

That’s right. They loved me so much that I felt sorry for being a son like this. I’m sure about that. Well, that’s exactly why I regretted it.

My old man and mum passed away before I could tell them anything.

Then, Eljiela whispered softly while looking at my face from the side.

“Hm? What is it.....” (Velt)

“Velt-sama. I have not become a parent yet. And, I do not know what a land person’s father is. So, although this is just my speculation, I.....” (Eljiela)

“What?” (Velt)

“Velt-sama..... I believe you will surely become a good parent.” (Eljiela)

..... That really is just your speculation, or rather, it’s off the mark.

The child would obviously be unhappy to have an idiot like me be their parent.

“Not happening. Like, if I was a kid with someone like me as a parent, I would definitely stray from the right path.” (Velt)

“No, I do not think so.” (Eljiela)

“Haa? What basis do you have behind that?” (Velt)

“Velt-sama, it is because..... you understand the love of a parent the most.”
(Eljiela)

“.....” (Velt)

“I believe that will make you be able to convey your love to your own child this time.” (Eljiela)

Hearing that made my chest throb.

Me as a parent? That’s something I’ve never really thought about before.

If I actually married Forna, that might be possible, but the mother would be too strong in that case.

It would be the same if I married Ura.

Well, leaving beside whether or not I have the qualifications to become a father, I was in that kind of situation, so I never thought about it.

“..... I wonder..... about that.” (Velt)

“Ara, I believe so.” (Eljiela)

It felt strange. I’ve never talked about something like that before until now.

Even if the topic had come up, I would’ve dodged the question.

Despite that, when I’m talking to this woman, I feel like my real thoughts don’t stop spilling out.

Furthermore, it doesn’t make me annoyed, which is even more mysterious.

However, while this peaceful, pleasant time was passing..... a sudden change occurred in the world.

“Ugaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaa!!!” (?)

A monster’s yell suddenly resounded throughout the sky.

“Wha-.....!” (Velt)

“What in the world is happening!” (Eljiela)

The second we stood up, the sound of a huge explosion and a mushroom cloud sprung forth in the sky.

“Geh..... you’re, you’re kidding.....” (Velt)

“No way..... what..... what has happened!” (Eljiela)

We couldn't understand the situation.
Then, the robotic voice echoed in our heads as always.

———Emergency. Chirotan, who had been captured and restrained in prison with powerful restraints, has escaped by himself. Again, Chirotan has escaped. All nearby knights, be on guard and pursue him. In addition, the atmosphere was greatly disordered by the explosion, so Chirotan's whereabouts are unknown. Please be careful to refrain from taking independent action, and search in groups.

Thus, we were made to know the real ability of one of the Seven Great Demon Kings, when he's seriously furious.
And, we were also made to know that the Seven Great Demon Kings title was not as sweet as the sky world made it out to be.

Chapter 106: Congratulations

The clouds were dyed in deep red, engulfed by the flames of the explosion. Intense rage shook the sky world.

“Su, such mighty power.” (Eljiela)

“You’re kidding me. I thought it was over already, but like, who’s going to be happy if you show your real ability now!” (Velt)

A gigantic pillar of light pierced through the clouds, all the way to the sky. As if going up an elevator, someone slowly rose in that pillar of light. Eljiela’s and my heart was pounding as we saw the overwhelming monster coming up.

“He’s here!” (Velt)

“No! I cannot contact my sisters! The atmosphere was disordered by that explosion right now..... kuh!” (Eljiela)

The most terrifying thing about this is that we chose this place because it’s deserted and quiet.

No one would notice our voices or circumstances in this situation. No one would know.

So, no one would rush to us either.

Above all, we wouldn’t be found so easily in this world covered in thick clouds.

“Ahh? There are some shit stains over here, huh.” (?)

We doubted our eyes.

Chirotan’s deep black skin had completely come off, and his whole body was dyed in bright red as if it was covered in magma.

“Why the hell are you trying to make me so angrrrrrry!” (Chirotan)

Heavy pressure held down my whole body. I felt oppressed.

Underdog? Outrageous.

This guy is the『real deal』.

“He, he transformed. What’s going on?” (Velt)

“I did not think a land person had the power to change this much.” (Eljiela)

No, this isn't on the level of『change』like a magic armament.
This is undoubtedly『transformation』.

“Ah~, it's like not I wanted to take this form~, I never like using it.” (Chirotan)

Chirotan glared at us and spoke.

“When I take this form~, the countries and land I tried to take, all get wrecked! Even though I tried to peacefully take over the country like the pacifist I am, you, ugly old hags of all people, tried to violate me under the name of interrogation! Unforgivable! Small children would still be fine, but ugly old hags should just eat shit!” (Chirotan)

Tho, those angel bitches..... they ended up causing the worst possible situation because of their unnecessary actions.

“I don't want this country any more! I'll wreck everything and burn it in flames with my explosioooooon!” (Chirotan)

Crap!

We jumped away immediately, as our instincts told us we would die if we're even a moment too late.

“I'll kill the hell out of you! I'll kick you, punch you and tear you apart!”
(Chirotan)

Chirotan, whose body was covered in light, flew at us at the speed of a jet.
He's fast!

“Guh, Heaven Flower!” (Eljiela)

Eljiela immediately prepared for a counter attack.
She's going to face Chirotan with her golden form.

“Gold Wing!” (Eljiela)

A storm of feathers was let loose like arrows. Sharp feathers began piercing Chirotan in succession at the speed of light.
However, Chirotan didn't care about it.

“There's no point!” (Chirotan)

“Wha!” (Eljiela)

“In doing that!” (Chirotan)

I don’t know how strong Eljiela’s defences are.
However, I instantaneously saw an image of Eljiela turning into a lump of meat as Chirotan punches her.

“Fuwa fuwa recovery!” (Velt)

“Kyah!” (Eljiela)

Disregarding Eljiela’s intention, I made her avoid it with levitation.

“Nuu! Youuuuuuu!” (Chirotan)

Ah, crap. He got even more irritated from missing his punch and pointed his rage at me.

“Fuwa fuwa panic!” (Velt)

I immediately tried to jolt Chirotan in all directions.
However, Chirotan resisted it.

“Wha, what!” (Velt)

“Gununununu, I don’t know what you tried to do..... but don’t go pulling cheap-ass tricks on meeeee!” (Chirotan)

My magic was forcefully knocked away.
Shit..... this isn’t good..... I’ll definitely die if I get touched by something like that!

“Fuwa fuwa baton!” (Velt)

I violently throw my batons and operate them in the air.
I’ll make a chance by using the high-speed, irregularly moving batons as a feint.

“Piss ooooooff!” (Chirotan)

Despite that, Chirotan ignored it all and headed straight towards me.
Nothing works against this guy!

“Shit! At least cry from this!” (Velt)

“Ah? Aguh!” (Chirotan)

I drive my batons right into his brow and his philtrum from Chirotan’s

blindspot.

As expected, hitting vitals would make any creature stop moving for a moment.

“Now! Eljiela!” (Velt)

“Yes!” (Eljiela)

I can't hit him with a fatal attack. However, this woman can do it if I make a chance!

“The strongest power of the battle maidens who soar through the skies! Slice the sky, slice the heavens, slice the world!” (Eljiela)

The angel held a sword of light in her hand. Kill him! She compressed all her light into her sword and struck him with all the power she had.
However.....

“Nuryaaaaaaaaa!” (Chirotan)

“..... No, no way.....!” (Eljiela)

He didn't get bisected.

Chirotan stopped Eljiela's sword with his arms in a crossed, defensive posture. Although he scattered some blue blood, Chirotan smiled fearlessly.

“Is this all you've got..... ah?” (Chirotan)

“Impossible, this technique can cut in this world!” (Eljiela)

“You're..... just up high in a cramped world! Don't look down on the Seven Great Demon Kiiiiiiiiings!” (Chirotan)

“!” (Eljiela)

He forcefully shook off Eljiela, making her fly high in the sky.

“C, crap!” (Velt)

“Dieeeeeeeeeee!” (Chirotan)

“Fuwa fuwa recovery!” (Velt)

Chirotan flies up to deal the finishing blow. However, I recovered Eljiela a moment faster, into my arms.....

“Kuku, I thought you'd do that!” (Chirotan)

However, knowing what I would do, Chirotan suddenly changed directions towards us two.....

"Diiiiiiiiiineeeeeeeeee!" (Chirotan)

No! Eljiela is unconscious. Both my arms are occupied.

Fuwa fuwa techniques don't work against Chirotan.

And..... I won't make it in time to dodge completely!

“Ah.....!!!!” (Velt)

I seem to have dodged a little since I didn't take a direct hit.

Instead, the bones from my left arm to my spine are probably broken.

There was this much power from just getting grazed.

“Shit!” (Chirotan)

We were knocked off, but that was actually a blessing in disguise.

Our bodies were sent flying and plunged into the sea of clouds.

“Waaaaaaaaaaaaait! I’ll deal the finishing bloow! I’ll kill you first, and then

destroy this sky world!" (Chirotan)

After that, I lost myself in escaping.

I'm really glad that he's a monster that lost his composure.

I'm glad that he's a moron who tells me his whereabouts through his voice.

I was able to let Chirotan go past me as I hid in a thicker sea of clouds while

carrying Eljiela

“Haa, haa, haa..... shit, this seriously hurts.....” (Velt)

The bones of my bluish black left arm is probably cracked all over.

Although my right arm was fine, it doesn't really change anything.

“Haa, haa, haa, Ve, Velt-sama.....” (Eljiela)

“Yo, princess, you awake now?” (Velt)

Eljiela opened her eyes, but her body is extremely weakened.

She exuded fatigue and sweat.

“Kuhahahaha, it’s not even funny to be almost dead in heaven.” (Velt)

“Velt-sama..... is he.....” (Eljiela)

He's flying about nearby. We won't be found yet, but it's still dangerous."

(Velt)

We have to hide for now.

There was that much of an uproar so Farga and the other might've noticed.
Well, it doesn't seem like it as of now though.

“Rather than that, are you okay?” (Velt)

“Yes..... somehow.....!” (Eljiela)

“Oi, don't push yourself. You've been working non-stop today.” (Velt)

That's right. It's partly my fault that she's so tired.
She resurrected me from my asphyxiation state.
Furthermore, she fought in a war not long ago.
And then, she fought the hidden boss.
A normal woman would've collapsed way earlier.

“Uu, guh.....” (Eljiela)

“O, oi, you sure you're fine? Does it hurt anywhere?” (Velt)

“N, no, not that.....” (Eljiela)

Crap. She might've taken even more damage than I thought she did.
I can't see any external wounds, but surely something must've.....

“Fu, fufu, fufufufu..... how could this be.” (Eljiela)

Eljiela laughed with a complicated face.

“What happened?” (Velt)

“Velt-sama..... something unthinkable..... has happened in this situation.”
(Eljiela)

“Ahh?” (Velt)

Is it an injury? No, she looks off.
What happened to Eljiela?
What's going on?

“Velt-sama..... I..... um, I am extremely sorry about this, but..... I have
entered my division period.....” (Eljiela)

—————?

“So, my child..... will be born soon.....” (Eljiela)

It wasn't..... an injury, but a pregnancy.....

“Uh..... congrat..... ulations?” (Velt)

I was troubled by how I should react.

Chapter 107: For this day

It's an emergency.

"Are you going to give birth?" (Velt)

"Yes." (Eljiela)

"Congratulations. I am very happy for you." (Velt)

"However, being happy in this situation is troubling." (Eljiela)

I wanted to escape from reality.

I mean, wouldn't anyone?

My companion is about to give birth in this life or death situation after all.

"Oi, you serious? Your belly isn't bulging at all though!" (Velt)

"Eh? Do the bellies of land people bulge when they give birth? Why?" (Eljiela)

"Because like, children stay there until they're born!" (Velt)

"Is, is that how it is? Our race emits the light of our extrasensory divine perception which turns into a child." (Eljiela)

"I don't really care about that, but you're going to give birth, right?" (Velt)

"Ye, yes..... wha, what should I do....." (Eljiela)

There's no point asking that to a guy like me.

All I have is my knowledge of when Hanabi was born five years ago.

"Don't worry, I will give birth right here." (Eljiela)

"O, oi! Don't give birth here! It's dangerous! Can't you hold it in for a bit longer?" (Velt)

"..... Unfortunately..... if I expend any more of my divine power without giving birth now, this child will surely die. That being said, we cannot return to the town with Chirotan flying nearby. So, to save this child, I will divide right here!" (Eljiela)

Wait, think about the situation we're in right now! Is what I was about to say when I realised something.

"Oi, what do you mean it'll die if you expend any more power?" (Velt)

“.....” (Eljiela)

Eljiela made a complicated face as I said that.

“I have used a drastic amount of divine power today.” (Eljiela)

That’s right.

She had to resurrect me and fight in that war before.

“Normally there would be no problem, but unfortunately, today is..... so, to give birth to this child, I have to compensate for my used up divine power with an alternative force.” (Eljiela)

“..... Alternative..... force?” (Velt)

An unpleasant premonition passed through my mind.

It came to me because Eljiela is making a determined face that I’ve seen before.

“It will be my life force.” (Eljiela)

Ahh, I remember now.

——Velt, papa is going to defeat this guy. So in the meantime, run to the castle.

It’s the same face my old man made when he prepared himself for death and tried to at least let me survive.

“Velt-sama. This is my once-in-a-lifetime request. If something happens to me, please bring this child to my sisters.” (Eljiela)

“E, Eljiela!” (Velt)

“I will give birth to this child no matter what!” (Eljiela)

Why? Why do『you guys』sacrifice your own lives so easily for your children! Have you never thought about how the child feels!?

“Damn it.....” (Velt)

No, I know why they sacrifice their lives.

There’s no logic behind it, it’s just because of their feelings.

———Velt, I love you the most in the world.

It’s because they love their children the most in the world! Even more than their own lives!

And yet, what about me?

Am I even living a life that's worthy of being protected by my old man and mum?

"Damn it, oi, Eljiela's kid! It's not divine power, but the principles behind it are the same, so take my mana too!" (Velt)

I had reflexively stretched out my hand.

"Velt-sama, what are you doing! It is dangerous! I will save this child, even if it costs me my life! So, Velt-sama, if something happens to me, please take this child to-!" (Eljiela)

"A parent shouldn't just risk their lives and ignore the kid's will! You're completely wrong if you think anyone would be happy about that!" (Velt)

"Ve..... Velt..... sama....." (Eljiela)

Ahh, what the hell am I doing?

Why do I have to risk my life for the sake of some woman I just met today? Even though I'm never interested at times like these.

No, it's not like that. I didn't end up doing this for Eljiela's sake.

"Hey, Eljiela. Do you understand the feelings of a child that a parent protected with their life?" (Velt)

I just didn't want the child to be burdened with this.

"If their parents sacrificed their lives to save them, the child won't be thankful to the parents, they'll feel apologetic. If only they weren't there..... if only they were stronger..... if only they were powerful enough to protect their dad and mum, is what they would think!" (Velt)

Even now, I still remember that day.

———Velt..... run..... ma..... ma will..... prote.....

"My mum....." (Velt)

———Can't you hear me telling you to run away already! At least listen to your parents occasionally, you stupid son!

"And my old man were like that! They risked their lives to protect a worthless, shitty brat! But you know, Eljiela! You shouldn't do the same thing! Don't make

a brat be burdened with that! Don't make them..... all alone. Someone that hasn't even died once before..... shouldn't make a child bear even more painful feelings." (Velt)

That was the day I regretted not saying what I wanted to, and not being honest with myself.

My life was saved all for this day.

So, old man, mum, lend me your power!

"Uu, uuuu, kuh, uuuu, no..... I really cannot..... involve you anymore....."
(Eljiela)

"Bring it on! (Velt)

I'll save her! No matter what! Even if it costs me my life!
I've continued feeling that regret so I can save her!

"Haa, haa..... Velt-sama....." (Eljiela)

"Shit! Shit! Shit! Don't give up! Where's your willpower!" (Velt)

The light's weakening.....
Eljiela's breath is gradually fading.....
Shit! Shit shit shit shit shit!

"Oi..... you listening? I don't know who the hell you are..... but if you can cause a meaningless miracle like giving Asakura Ryuuma, a worthless piece of shit, a second life..... why don't you save this life right now! Cause that kind of miracle! I! Velt Jeeha! Am actually doing the right thing for once in my life after all!" (Velt)

If..... a god really exists..... if this is the closest place to heaven.....

"Lend me your poweeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeer!" (Velt)

I begged for the first time in my life.....

——Eh..... eu..... eu.....

Then, I heard a new life.

"Hogyaa!" (Baby)

A miracle had occurred before my eyes.

“Ah..... ahh, ah! A baby..... my, baby.....” (Eljiela)

“Hogyaa, hogyaa, hogyaa!” (Baby)

“Ahh, thank you! Thank you for being born! My baby! My dear baby!” (Eljiela)

Eljiela hugs her baby while shedding tears. Those were no longer the tears of a woman but of a mother.

That made me think back to when Hanabi was born. Back then, Ura, sensei, the missus and I were crying like this.....

I thought I would risk my life if it was for Hanabi.

“Velt-sama..... thank you, thank you very much.” (Eljiela)

“Hogyaa, hogyaa.” (Baby)

“Goodness, crying at a time like this..... now, at least greet the person who saved your life.” (Eljiela)

Eljiela faces her child towards me.

I gently place a finger on her small, small hand.

Then, the baby gripped my finger.

“Hafu~..... kyau, kyafu.....” (Baby)

It stopped crying..... and smiled.....

“Oh, my, this child properly understands that you saved her life.” (Eljiela)

The child stopped crying and smiled.

I’m the opposite.

I almost started crying.

“Haha..... kuhahahaha..... is it because of my mana running through her? No, there’s probably no logic behind it..” (Velt)

The fact that this child has special feelings towards me, might not be because she was born through my mana.

But well, I don’t care about any logic.

I don’t need to think about the logic behind each thing anymore.

“Eljiela. I still haven’t saved you.” (Velt)

“Velt-sama?” (Eljiela)

“I’ll only have saved you once I’ve got you through this situation.” (Velt)

That's right, it's not over yet.
I still haven't saved her.

"What was that light right now! Are you somewhere around here!? Come ouuuuuuuut! If you don't come out, I'll blow this whole place awaaaaaaay!"
(Chirotan)

He's here.

"Velt-sama, what are you doing!" (Eljiela)
"Don't worry! I'll protect you no matter what!" (Velt)

I'll save her. I'll protect her.

"Please, please wait! It is too rash, Velt-sama!" (Eljiela)

Not really.
I'm the son of the great parents who protected their son's life from a demi-human, even while knowing that it's rash and reckless.
So, it's my turn this time.

"You don't need to blow this place up since I'm here now." (Velt)
"Nu? Kukukukuku, you were over there, huh." (Chirotan)
"Yo, it's been a while." (Velt)

I show myself above the sea of clouds and confront Chirotan once again.
It's strange. I thought I was still scared and trembling, but I'm quite calm now.
My fear is gone.
And as for Chirotan, he laughed while holding his stomach as he saw me nonchalantly come out.

"Guhahahahahahahahaha, you were human, huh! Why is a scummy human like you supporting the sky race! Do you understand what it means to challenge one of the Seven Great Demon Kings? You're just a shitty brat with no resolve!"
(Chirotan)

I didn't..... have any resolve..... which is why I ran from war.
I avoided fighting if there was no clear reason to fight either.
But this is different. This moment right now, is different!

"I resolved myself..... just now!" (Velt)

The moment that child gripped my finger, I had already made up my mind.

“A newborn baby that doesn’t understand anything..... showed a pure-hearted smile to someone like me! It’s a man’s job to protect that! If I can protect her life..... if I can live in a way that I can be proud of to my old man and mum that died protecting me, even if it’s against one of the Seven Great Demon Kings or the Four Heavenly Beast Demi-humans..... I’ll even fight against the world! I’ll risk my life! It’s not related to whether I’m interested or whether it’s about my past life! I’m here right now, out of my own will!” (Velt)

That’s why I’m here!

“..... Keh..... I thought you were a piece of shit that could only run away..... but you’re actually a man.” (Chirotan)

“You’ll understand if you get a child too. The parent has no choice but to grow up if they have a kid.” (Velt)

“So, will you be satisfied with dying?” (Chirotan)

Of course, I won’t be satisfied if I die. I’ll definitely survive.
There are people that love me after all.

“I thought my life had no worth. But you know, I wonder what these feelings..... what this overflowing power is.....” (Velt)

“Ah?” (Chirotan)

“It’s not out of self-interest and it’s not related to my past life. It’s because I feel proud of myself for the first time in my life of being an asshole. That’s right, Asakura Ryuuma was reincarnated for Kamino Mina, and Velt Jeeha was born for this moment.” (Velt)

I understand now. I understand how my old man and mum opposed the demi-human even while knowing they couldn’t win.

I understand now. I understand why Samejima was so strong when he was cornered.

It was because they had people to protect.

“Now, come at me! I’ll do everything I can!” (Velt)

“Kukukuku..... there were some parts I didn’t understand, but I’ve realized something. You’re a weak human, but..... you’re a man.” (Chirotan)

For the first time in my life, I fought against an enemy without being tied

down by my past life.

Chapter 108: Happy birthday

We proceeded deeper into the sea of clouds.

It's because I didn't want to put the newborn child in danger, which Chirotan surprisingly accepted.

I confronted Chirotan one on one in these thick clouds.

"Kukukuku, now that's a good face. It's the face of a man trying to protect his woman. The subordinates of my great self were all deceived by the charms of those ugly old hags, and I didn't think anyone who did, had spirit." (Chirotan)

"I am honoured to be praised by a great demon king. But you know, the face isn't the only thing that makes up a woman. Remember that." (Velt)

"Exactly! The weakness of a woman is their greatest charm!" (Chirotan)

"Nah, strong women aren't half-bad either." (Velt)

"Throw away strong women, no one needs them!" (Chirotan)

"I'm not going to throw them away. Littering women will make me the enemy of humanity, and all men would curse me to death." (Velt)

It's strange.

Until a while ago, I could only bluff and repeat these provoking acts to make my opponent show a weak spot.

But right now, I'm abnormally calm and yet my heart is seething hot.

My fighting spirit is boiling.

"Let me ask you one last thing. Are you from humanity's great allied forces? Or are you a Hunter?" (Chirotan)

"Neither. I'm just a delinquent..... that wants to break free from being the stupidest creature in the world." (Velt)

"Kuku, gahahahahahahahaha! Are you fine with that being your introduction before dying?" (Chirotan)

"I'm not going to die! I haven't even heard what my child's name is yet." (Velt)

"Gahahahaha, is that so....." (Chirotan)

The conversation came to an end.

Silence flowed between us as we faced each other above the clouds.

And then,

“Then, dieeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeee!” (Chirotan)

Chirotan flew at me with explosive speed.

He increased his power and speed with explosions.

Furthermore, this guy isn't the type to make small attacks. Let alone the brain, he's the type whose cells are made up of muscles too, and they were all strengthened by his accumulated mana.

“Alright, I guess it's time to show papa's power.” (Velt)

I'll get a fatal wound from just being touched by him. My broken left arm proves that, as it can't even move.

I rush at him with a baton in my right arm and another baton floating in the air. As of now, all I can do is probably just run around using my fuwa fuwa technique, but strangely, my heart is telling me to face him.

“You monkeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeey!” (Chirotan)

“Tsuraaaaaaaaaa!” (Velt)

Chirotan threw a right straight. I struck using my maximum power with my current muscles.

I even exceeded the limits of an adrenaline rush, which caused blood to gush out of my clenched teeth.

My veins are about to explode.

“Nu, kukukuku.” (Chirotan)

“Uraaaaaaaaaaaaaah!” (Velt)

However, the demon king easily blew my feelings away.

“That was weaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaak!” (Chirotan)

I tried to stop the blow with my baton, but I felt an impact that seemed like it would break my body into pieces.

Unable to endure that impact, I was sent flying far back and tumbled above the clouds.

“Guh, kahahahaha, as expected of a demon king..... that was outrageously

heavy.....” (Velt)

I’m weak, but I can still tell. This guy is a real monster, who worked his way up fierce battles like Samejima and Esamu.

“Fuh, you’re too weak and too light, you shit stain! You talk about being a man, but do you think you can do anything against my great self with that weak power!? You better not be thinking your feelings will turn into strength! That’s just weak!” (Chirotan)

Tch, my arm’s numb.
He’s so dreadful, and yet..... why am I standing up so easily?

“Nah, my body just..... moves by itself, from the instinct inside of me!” (Velt)
Why do I keep facing him?

“Ah? You shitty brat..... nu!” (Chirotan)

I move as fast as I can with levitation.
I make him think I’m going for a head-on collision, and then change directions just before we hit.
Normally, I’m pretty sure you’re supposed to predict your opponent’s moves from the slightest movements of their muscles, but no one can predict my movements.
Muscles movement and reflexes don’t matter since I can move however I want to.
Naturally, Chirotan froze for a moment because of my unpredictable movements.

So, I.....

“Hogoh!” (Chirotan)

I stuck the tip of the floating baton into his Adam’s apple.
He froze again, making an opportunity.

“Tsuaaaaaaaaaa!” (Velt)

Another strike on the top of his head with a baton!
Now that I’ve come this far, it doesn’t matter if I kill him!
I’ll mess up his brain and defeat him.

“Uraaaaaah!” (Velt)

Floating up a bit higher, I hit Chirotan’s head with a low kick! A soccer kick!
Even if the toes of my leg break, I’ll keep hitting him!
Even if it kills him!

“There’s no point……” (Chirotan)

“!” (Velt)

“That……… can’t kill meeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeee!” (Chirotan)

My leg gets repelled as it comes in contact with his head.
He’s accumulating his mana to the limit!

“I’ll teach you, human! This is what it means to kiiiiill!” (Chirotan)

What’s he going to use it for? It’s obvious. He’s going to make another big explosion like the one that produced that mushroom cloud!

“Tch, I won’t let youuuuu!” (Velt)

I won’t let him do it! However, what should I do? My fuwa fuwa techniques don’t work on him.
My strikes don’t cause fatal wounds either.
How should I prevent the explosion that’s about to happen?

“Dieee!” (Chirotan)

It was just light.

“…… Ha?” (Chirotan)

Chirotan froze with his arms and legs outstretched to release everything.

“……! Die! Die! Dieeee!” (Chirotan)

A pillar of light was made from his mana…… is what I thought would happen, but the world stayed silent.
The explosion didn’t happen at all.

“…… Wh, why! Why is there no explosioooooooooon!” (Chirotan)

I didn’t think this would happen either.
No, rather, I didn’t think I could make this happen.

“You! You brat! What did you, what did you do to meee!”

(Chirotan)

Chirotan shouts loud enough to make my ears hurt, but I understand how he feels.

I'm surprised too, after all.

"If your explosion is made from releasing all your accumulated mana..... I should just throw that mana somewhere else..... is what I thought." (Velt)

"Ah?" (Chirotan)

Ahh, my leg's trembling like crazy from how nervous I am.

No, it's not from nervousness. It's from excitement.

My body can't hide its surprise at what I realised right now.

"Up." (Velt)

"Ha?" (Chirotan)

The second I said that, a big explosion occurred thousands of metres above this high sea of clouds.

Originally, that explosion was supposed to occur here.

"Wh, why..... why!" (Chirotan)

"It's simple. I sent all the mana you released, far in the sky with my levitation." (Velt)

"..... Wha..... hah?" (Chirotan)

Naturally, he made a dumbfounded face. Well, I was just absorbed in it, so I don't have proof that the phenomenon that just happened matched my thoughts.

"Although I dropped out of magic school, I know this. Creatures store mana in their body and release it in battle. That released mana can have flames, lightning, and whatever added to it, but..... it seems I used levitation to manipulate the released『mana』that was『in the air』." (Velt)

"Im, impossible! There's no way that's possible! There's no way levitation, the most basic magic of all magic, can do that! In the first place, that magic doesn't work on living things, so you can't control mana! And there's no way you can just control my mana from a place where you're not even touching me!"

(Chirotan)

“That’s right. I thought so too. But I found it strange. When I was a brat, I thought levitation couldn’t float anything you haven’t touched, and that it wouldn’t work against living things. However, I can float things I haven’t touched and float liquids and nature. Well, I never found it strange until now, but I finally realised everything.” (Velt)

It’s not that I became able to float things I haven’t touched, I am actually touching them.

“As long as I’m indirectly touching something, I can float it.” (Velt)

“Ahh? Are you trying to say you touched me when you hit me before? But that’s not the same for my mana!” (Chirotan)

“No. I..... touched your mana through the air.” (Velt)

“..... Wha.....” (Chirotan)

“To be precise, just like how I can float living things by floating the clothes they’re wearing, I can float things that are touching the air.” (Velt)

I didn’t float his mana.

I floated the air.

“Y, you, no way.....” (Chirotan)

“That’s right. I..... seem to be able to control the gas in the space I exist in.” (Velt)

Chirotan, don’t worry. I’m explaining it to myself too, because I don’t really understand what was happening.

However, I’m troubled since that’s the only thing I can think of.

Rather than saying roundabout, incomprehensible things, saying the conclusion is faster.

I can control the air.

So, I can control anything touching air, even if it’s mana.

“There’s no way that’s possibleeeeeeeee!” (Chirotan)

And, if I’m able to control anything touching air.....

“Fuwa fuwa panic!” (Velt)

“Gu, guuuuu!” (Chirotan)

I don't need to cast levitation on clothes anymore.
Even if they're naked, I can just control the air, and even if they're in the ocean, I can still control the seawater, and in essence, forcefully cast levitation on living things.

“Doryaaaa!” (Chirotan)
“Kuhahaha, you still have so much power even after releasing that much mana. You broke through my binds with just your muscles.” (Velt)
“You! You shitty brat! Shitty brat! Shitty braaaat!” (Chirotan)

Chirotan keeps releasing more and more mana from anger, which spreads throughout his body. However, flaring up like that just makes a weak spot for me to aim at.

“Nu, oh, ohh..... my, my mana, is separating from me, and it's all flying out!” (Chirotan)
“Kuhahahaha, I'll take all of it if you keep discharging it like that, alright?” (Velt)

By touching the air, I use levitation to forcefully take away the mana energy Chirotan's releasing.
Even though he was overflowing with enough mana to shake the atmosphere, Chirotan now became quiet as if running out of gas.

“Some, something like this is.....” (Chirotan)
“You can do things like this if you just try it out.” (Velt)
“!” (Chirotan)

And, I'll go even further.
Without dispersing the enormous mana I cut away from Chirotan, I pressed it together with air so it kept its shape, and clad the baton in my right hand with it.

“Wha-!” (Chirotan)
“It's not anything high level like magic armament and it's primitive too, but the effect is the same. By wrapping my body in mana, I'm strengthening my body. Well, in this case, it's my baton, though.” (Velt)

If I can control mana through the air, I can contain it too.
My baton is clad in an unbelievable amount of energy.

“I’ll split your head open!” (Velt)

“A! Gaa, a! M, my head, shit!” (Chirotan)

I felt the greatest impact and resistance I’ve ever felt.

Chirotan is showing the whites of his eyes, and the shape of his head is slightly deformed.

An ordinary person would’ve died from that one strike.

“No..... ugaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaa!” (Chirotan)

He immediately regained consciousness and jumped at me to counterattack. Tough.

There’s nothing scarier than a wounded demon king.

And yet, am I..... a sadist? I’m getting excited.

“By changing the flow of the air, I’ll rotate it at a high speed and make it wrap around my leg.” (Velt)

“Wait, that, that’s turbulence!” (Chirotan)

“Fuwa fuwa middle kick!” (Velt)

I drive a middle kick clad in artificially made turbulence into Chirotan’s side. Rather than the destructive force, the impact force was amplified, sending Chirotan’s tough body flying.

“Ga, ahhhhhhh, ga, agagaaaaaah, my, my organs..... go, gohoh! What part, of this, is fuwa fuwa!? It destroyed my body completely!” (Chirotan)

Until now, I had dodged my overwhelmingly lacking strength by using batons and my fuwa fuwa techniques.

But.....

“Fuwa fuwa low kick!” (Velt)

“Uoh!” (Chirotan)

“Take that!” (Velt)

“Gua, ow, owww, go, ugaaa!” (Chirotan)

The method I just acquired was proven to be powerful, even against a demon king, the strongest beings among demons.

“Tch, you shitty braaaat!” (Chirotan)

Probably because he thought close combat is dangerous, Chirotan took distance.

A demon king retreated from me? This is such an unbelievable sight.

But you know, distance doesn't matter to me.

And besides.....

"Don't make me laugh! You better not be thinking that you can defeat me with that, that cheating, stupid magic! You can control my mana? You can control the air? Then, I'll destroy everything with so much power you can't even control it!" (Chirotan)

"Kuhahahahaha..... that's impossible." (Velt)

"Do, don't get cocky! I'll prove it to you! Take my, Chirotan Popopo's, fierce, transcendental, hyper, strongest technique!" (Chirotan)

I'm telling you..... that's impossible.

"..... Wha-? My, my mana is....." (Chirotan)

"How much firepower do you think you have left after making that many explosions? I can generally understand the quantity and weight of the things I float. I knew how much mana you had left." (Velt)

"..... No, no way..... no way..... no way!" (Chirotan)

"Sorry, I'm sure the pride of a demon king is important..... but in front of his child, a father has to be a superhero." (Velt)

"My mana is gooooooooooooooooooooooooooone!" (Chirotan)

"So long, demon king!" (Velt)

"You, you..... what do you mean, hero!? You're, a deviiiiiiiiiiiil!" (Chirotan)

He doesn't have the power to resist anymore.

"Fuwa fuwa panic!" (Velt)

I violently jolt Chirotan, who's so exhausted he can't even break through my binds.

The demon king crumbles down and falls onto the clouds.

I grasped my fist tightly as I look down on the unconscious demon king lying down in front of me.

I feel like I was able to grab『something』new.

And.....

“Ohh, the evening sun looks pretty.” (Velt)

The thick clouds that became disordered by Chirotan’s explosions finally cleared, and a beautiful, orange sun was setting in the other side of the sea.

“That reminds me, I hadn’t said this yet.....” (Velt)

It’s finally over. I suddenly muttered something while thinking about that.

“Happy birthday, new angel.” (Velt)

I push my fist up to the sky and make a guts pose.

Did you see me?

Old man..... mum.....

Chapter 109: Cosmos

Old man, mum, did that reassure you?

This is the closest place to heaven, but did I reach you? Were you watching me? I don't know if I grew up as you wanted me to, but I'm still alive.

"Guh, ga..... ue, disgusting....." (Chirotan)

"Hm? You're up, huh." (Velt)

Chirotan woke up while lying down on a cloud.

However, although he did regain consciousness, he probably doesn't have any more power to fight.

His bright red skin restored its black colour.

"Aren't, aren't you going..... to deal the finishing blow?" (Chirotan)

"Ah?" (Velt)

"Don't..... underestimate me..... if you don't kill me, now..... I'll destroy the sky world, no matter how many times it takes." (Chirotan)

"Kuhahahahaha, you sure are an obstinate demon king." (Velt)

The finishing blow, huh. Well, it probably would be better to deal it here, even though I've never killed before in my life.

"That's quite a cliché phrase for a demon king. Well, it certainly would trouble me if a problem occurred because I overlooked you." (Velt)

Defeating this guy and protecting a new life is my tribute to my old man and mum's souls.

But from here on out, I can decide what to do.

Even if people say I've changed..... kuku, just kidding.....

"It's dangerous to bring the child here, you know." (Velt)

As I tried to move, an angel holding a small life swooped down from the other side of the clear sky.

It's Eljiela and her child.

"Velt-sama..... thank you very much. Really, I cannot say that enough."

(Eljiela)

“Are you fine?” (Velt)

“Yes. I am able to fly now.” (Eljiela)

“I see.” (Velt)

She looks worn out. I guess it's only reasonable. She gave birth to a child and became exhausted to the point of almost dying after all. There's no way she could be fine.

“So, what's up? You know, if we were still fighting..... like, there was a chance something could've happened if the demon king's injuries were shallow, alright? And yet you still brought a kid here.” (Velt)

“No. I believed. In you..... who I only met today..... who saved this child. So, it is fine already. There is no need for anyone to shed further blood.” (Eljiela)

I wonder what logic she has behind that.
If I was a soldier, I would've preached her about the reality and about the risks, but I don't have much to say since I'm not.
In the end, no one knows what to do about overlooking Chirotan.

“Demon king Chirotan. We meet again.” (Eljiela)

“..... Tch..... damn ugly.....” (Chirotan)

Dangerous~.....
Eljiela takes a seat next to Chirotan.
Oi, this baby, it's so calm it's sleeping.
However, despite my concern, Eljiela gently started talking.

“Can we both..... make peace with each other, now?” (Eljiela)
..... This princess, she's still saying these kind things at this point in time.

“Yeah right, dumbass! Are the heads of the sky race completely empty or something? In this exciting warring period, blood washes blood, and there's no other way of settling things. Kill me! Just kill me! Just kill me right now, rather than make me live in disgraaaaaaace!” (Chirotan)

Even Chirotan became irritated.
However, Eljiela didn't falter.

“We took up our swords to protect our country. We did our best to make sure

you would never harm this world again. But, I saw it. I saw the warped smiles of the beautiful sky maidens who were driven by their sexual desire..... and, I saw that war..... is something that drives both enemies and allies mad.” (Eljiela)

Although they are of a different race, the women who were raised without knowing men, learnt what men were.

They learnt that they were women.

And, they learnt the exaltation you gain from war.

Eljiela learnt that it changed the others.

“That was so tough and painful that I wanted to end this war immediately..... even if I became a devil..... that was what I thought. However..... I realised something after becoming a mother.” (Eljiela)

“Ah?” (Chirotan)

“The part of love that makes you want to protect what is important to you is creating this sorrowful world.” (Eljiela)

“..... Haa?” (Chirotan)

“I will do anything for this child too. Nothing will ever be equal in my mind and I will always prioritise this child, so if anyone were to hurt this child, I would not even mind making the world my enemy. Since I thought that..... I thought you may be the same too..... so I do not want to fight any more than this.” (Eljiela)

Eljiela hugged her daughter tightly with great care.

That pure and innocent life that hasn't been tainted by anything, was sleeping with a peaceful face.

I understand her feelings about doing anything for that child too.

“So..... demon king Chirotan-sama, please..... please, could you end this war here as the king?” (Eljiela)

“End..... you say?” (Chirotan)

“Yes. I, princess Eljiela of the Sky Kingdom Holaiend, would like to make a peace pact. Your people who were taken as prisoners will be promptly released too.” (Eljiela)

Oi..... isn't this too naive?

“I do not want..... to hold this baby in hands that were soiled with blood.”
(Eljiela)

It's not like I don't understand where she's coming from, but like, this is a demon king you're talking to.
And although I probably shouldn't say this, he's not really an intellectual demon king.
Considering the future, killing him here is probably.....

“..... Name.....” (Chirotan)
“Pardon?” (Eljiela)
“What's..... that kid's name?” (Chirotan)

Eljiela was surprised by Chirotan's unexpected question for a moment, but she immediately answered with a smile.

“Cosmos..... with the wish of this day not just being the end of the war..... but for today to be the day a new world of harmony was made.” (Eljiela)

Cosmos..... that's the name of the child who made me resolved.
And in a way..... it could be the name of the child who changed this world.

“Damn it..... sleeping so carefreely..... she's so cute, damn it! What kind of angel is she!” (Chirotan)

Everything that had piled up in Chirotan probably disappeared when he saw Cosmos fast asleep, as he lied down and looked up at the sky.
Then, I feel like he smiled just a little.

“Let us return to the town, Velt-sama. We can treat demon king Chirotan-sama there too.” (Eljiela)

“..... It's not my problem if something happens.” (Velt)

Seriously. If anything else happens, it's not my responsibility, alright?
I floated Chirotan with levitation as I said that and flew with Eljiela.

“Hey, shitty brat.” (Chirotan)
“What do you want, demon king.” (Velt)
“This is a crummy conclusion to our flashy battle.....” (Chirotan)
“Yeah, a mother's love and a child's cuteness is the strongest thing ever.” (Velt)
“Keh.....” (Chirotan)

Mid-flight, Chirotan faced me to grumble and complain in a powerless voice. And, I just answered normally towards this king of another species. Well, I'm used to these kinds of VIPs though.

"Hey, shitty brat....." (Chirotan)

"Yeah okay, what do you want?" (Velt)

"It's not just us." (Chirotan)

"Hah?" (Velt)

"I'm telling you that it's not just us. We just found it by chance, but the world will eventually realise this sky world's existence." (Chirotan)

"Yeah, maybe. Well, everyone seems to be way more interested in the war on the Divine Being Continent rather than their dreams of reaching the sky world." (Velt)

Chirotan and I talked in a small voice so Eljiela couldn't hear us. This pact might be fine for Chirotan. However, it's too naive to think this will resolve anything from now on.

"Shitty brat..... did you know..... that there's a monster hiding in this world?" (Chirotan)

"Monster?" (Velt)

"Demons, demi-humans and humanity are all possessed by that monster. Even after hundreds of thousands of sacrifices, it's still not enough. It covers the world in pitch black darkness and taints the land with bright red blood. That monster has existed since long ago in the past. Do you know what it is?" (Chirotan)

"..... No....." (Velt)

"That monster is a piece of shit called『hostility』,『hatred』and『justice』." (Chirotan)

"Ho~, that's a pretty good way of putting it coming from a demon king that even has muscles for cells." (Velt)

He might be right.....
Hostility, hatred and justice are breaking this world.
And it's not just this world.
It might've been the same in Asakura Ryuuma's world too.

"I only know how to destroy things. With just my hostility and hatred, I've

always sent people flying if they were annoying. I took everything I wanted.”
(Chirotan)

“You’re saying you were seized by hostility and hatred?” (Velt)

“Yeah, that’s right…… what about you?” (Chirotan)

What about me? I half-heartedly participated in a war, but ultimately, all I did was protect who I wanted to protect and knock down the guy I wanted to knock down.

Although I received a formal medal, I didn’t want to gain anything more.

“War was the one thing I kept running away from. If I don’t get involved with war, I wouldn’t have to do anything more than just hate the people I hate. I haven’t reached your extreme thoughts of destroying whole countries.” (Velt)

That’s right. I don’t feel like saving the world or humanity, and I don’t want to gain honour either. So, I don’t feel like participating in war as long as I don’t have any special reason behind it.

“I’m fine from just defeating my enemy and protecting my own world, like my family, friends and women. Well, recently those friends and my woman have been taking the initiative to participate in the war, so it’s troubling.” (Velt)

“Just your own world? Well, you’re a small bastard.” (Chirotan)

“It’s none of your business. Who cares, those small things are my everything. But, if my world is threatened, I’ll fight against the whole world if I have to. I made that resolution today.” (Velt)

It’s not like I have hostility or hatred, and even if I try to think about it, I still wouldn’t know what justice is.

So, I’m fine like this. I kept thinking I was fine like this.

“Guhahahahahahahahaha, you make me vomit!” (Chirotan)

“You’re vomiting blood, you know?” (Velt)

Chirotan laughed while spitting out blood and glaring at me in displeasure.

“You don’t understand anything. One of these days, if you keep thinking it doesn’t matter to you, you’ll lose everything. Everything! Afterwards, you’ll regret it, curse this world, bare your hostility and hatred, and then rampage with a mad sense of justice!” (Chirotan)

The demon king seemed like he was lecturing me for being naive, and I couldn't respond.

“Guhahahahahaha, you should learn the reality! Learn the depth of war that has no bottom! Harmony? Peace? Heart? Learn that those things readily break! Guhahahahahahahahh!” (Chirotan)

It happened in an instant.

“Wha!” (Velt)

Chirotan mustered all his remaining power to break out of my magic binds. He did it the moment I felt hesitation from the words he said.

“Y, you asshole! You don't know when to give up!” (Velt)

“Velt-sama!” (Eljiela)

I moved without a moment's delay to make sure Eljiela and the child are safe, rather than to capture Chirotan.

However, Chirotan took an unexpected action.

“Dispelling grudges at this point in time is impossible! I won't do as you want me to!” (Chirotan)

Chirotan mustered all his remaining power to fly far below the sea of clouds, rather than to us.

Did he run away?

No, he's trying to settle things his own way because he can't stand living in disgrace!

“Guhahahahahahahahahahahahahahahahahahaha! Eat shiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiit!” (Chirotan)

A large explosion occurred between the clouds and the sea.

The light and vibration of that explosion reached the sky world.

However, the sky world was still safe.

Of course it is. Chirotan didn't cause an explosion to end it as a tie.

“You, you idiot..... why are you so extreme! Committing suicide because losing left a bad aftertaste!? Why do you have to die because you lost!?” (Velt)

However, Chirotan didn't answer my shouting.

Let alone that, I can't even see his figure anymore.

Did Chirotan die? There's no way to check that.

Finding him in these fumes from the explosion is impossible.

Eljiela and I felt disconsolate as we gazed at those fumes.

"Eh, eu, ho, hogyaaaaaa! Hogyaaa!" (Cosmos)

Cosmos, who was sleeping peacefully, woke up and started crying.
We were just as frustrated.

"Why can we not understand each other?" (Eljiela)

"It can't be helped, some people in this world are just like that." (Velt)

"But, but..... his eyes when he looked at Cosmos..... were very gentle."
(Eljiela)

Yeah, I think so too, but this is the result.
This is『war』. Even though it can't just be settled with that one word, that was the only word I could think of.

"People will definitely be able to understand each other someday if they connect with love..... he should have love, too....." (Eljiela)

Concerning this result, Eljiela and I might've been naive.
However, it can't just be settled with the one word, 『naive』.

"Eljiela. The world definitely isn't so sweet that it can be saved through kindness. But you know..... there are pieces of shit who reconsider themselves from being saved by kindness too." (Velt)

"Velt..... sama....." (Eljiela)

"Just like how the stupidest creature wants to become a much better human."
(Velt)

I thought that much was certain.
Then, Eljiela muttered with eyes that seemed like they were looking far away, even while she gazed at the fumes from the explosion.

"I really do not know anything about this world." (Eljiela)

And, those eyes seemed like they had decided something.

"I would like to learn more about this world. I would like to see more of it.

And, I would like to..... teach this child about this wide world.” (Eljiela)

Eljiela muttered that while soothing Cosmos.

Chapter 110: Friend of heaven and earth

It was a complicated fight.

I won. It made me feel great at the start, but my mood suddenly dropped after that explosion.

Even Eljiela, who was lovingly looking at Cosmos sleeping, sometimes looked far in the distance as if she was brooding over something.

We didn't talk, and once the disordered situation started calming down, we flew to return to the country.

There was so much commotion, the town is probably worrying.

I wonder how Farga and Ura will react if I told them I won against one of the Seven Great Demon Kings?

I wonder if Musashi will say, "how could I!," and regret not being by my side if I told her I fought against one of the Seven Great Demon Kings?

While imagining the faces of my comrades I wanted to see, I headed back.

"I'll even fight against the world! I'll risk my life! It's not related to whether I'm interested or whether it's about my past life! I'm here right now, out of my own will!" (Angel)

"Now, come at me! I'll do everything I can!" (Angel)

"Happy birthday, new angel." (Angel)

..... Angels making smug faces said super embarrassing phrases and welcomed us back.

Then, they looked at us with smirks and said this all together.

""""""Congratulations for your birth, princess Eljiela!!"""""" (Angel)

""""""Thank you very much, Velt-sama!"""""" (Angel)

..... Why?

Farga patted my shoulder from the back as I was making a dumbfounded face.

"Stupid brother....." (Farga)

"Farga! What's going on....." (Velt)

"We saw everything." (Farga)

“Hah?” (Velt)

Farga pointed at the huge lake after saying that.

“Did you forget that had a clairvoyance ability to project visuals on the surface.....” (Farga)

“Ah.....” (Velt)

“That was a fair and square one-to-one fight. I was going to assist you just in case, but there was no need for that.” (Farga)

I remember now. That lake has the ability to project visuals.
Wait, huh? If he saw everything, then.....

“Everyone was watching from when you were working together with that damn angel, all the way till when you defeated Chirotan.” (Farga)

“Wha-!” (Velt)

“Because of that, those damn angels got so excited they started celebrating.”
(Farga)

..... Gyaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaa!
That, that, that, that’s so embarrassiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiing!
Wait so like, what? They watched all of it!?

“Geez~, Cosmos-sama, you are so cute!” (Angel)
“Aw~, I want to enter my division period too~.” (Angel)
“But really~, it was wonderful! A man from the land world helped the sky race who gives birth alone.” (Angel)
“I know right~. Ahh, I want to be with a gentleman too.” (Angel)

These guys.....

“Like, if you were watching, you should’ve helped me! We were in a crisis, alright!” (Velt)
“Yeah, that’s why I did prepare..... but stupid brother..... because you uselessly awakened, I stopped worrying.” (Farga)
“I didn’t awaken! It was a fluke!” (Velt)

Crap. Thinking back on my fervent speech made me so embarrassed, that I started restlessly hitting my head against the clouds over and over again. However, while I was wholeheartedly trying to escape from reality like that,

Farga poked my head with a serious look.

“Oi, stupid brother.” (Farga)

“Ah? Wha..... hm? What do you want? You’re making such a serious face.”

(Velt)

His face made a serious atmosphere that I couldn’t even hear the surrounding racket.

Why?

As I wondered that, Farga whispered into my ear.

“Stupid brother..... you can’t beat one of the Seven Great Demons Kings with a fluke.” (Farga)

“.....” (Velt)

“Stupid brother. Regardless of whether you wished for it or not, you beat someone who holds one of the world’s three big titles. Be aware of what that means to the world.” (Farga)

..... Yeah..... although my name probably won’t spread throughout the world this time, I did something of that level.

I defeated one of the Seven Great Demon Kings who has the power and influence to change the flow of the world.

I don’t know what that will do, but I definitely did something that would affect the world.

That’s right, regardless of whether I wish for it or not, the world was.....

“Looooooooooooooooooooooooooooord! Looooooooooooooooooooooooooooord! Looooooooooooooooooooooooooooord!” (Musashi)

And then, all my thoughts were blown away.

“Uooooon, loooooooooooooooooooooord! Loooooord! I am so glad! I am so glad you are safe! I, I..... I immediately rushed to you when I learnt of your dilemma, but my incompetent self did not realise I could not fly in the sky, so I jumped off the clouds, fell head first and fainted, without being able to come to you..... this is the greatest failure in my life!” (Musashi)

“Oh, ohh..... wait, doesn’t that mean you almost died.....” (Velt)

“Uuuuuu, it seems I was saved by Cleran-dono, but when I came to, I was able to burn the sight of you bravely defeating one of the Seven Great Demon Kings,

into my eyes. While I had attained my greatest wish from seeing your brilliant achievement..... I could not forgive myself for not being able to do anythiiiiiiiiing! On top of that.....” (Musashi)

“Wait wait wait wait! Why the hell are you trying to commit seppuku!? Why do people in this world like you and Chirotan have such extreme thoughts!” (Velt)

Musashi jumped onto my chest with her snot and tears at full throttle and then curled up like a cat.

Ahh, cute. As I stroke her head, her tail and ears starting flapping.

Oh, ohh..... this is addicting.....

“Nice work, otouto-kun. It was a disaster on our side too~. Musashi-chan was like, 『lord, I will come right away! 』, jumped, and then fell to the bottom of the clouds.” (Cleran)

“Yeah~, she lived by a hair’s breadth.” (Doraemon)

“Cleran, Dora.” (Velt)

While I was caressing Musashi, Cleran and Dora came over.

Well, these two were probably worried, as they’re showing reassured expressions.

“Wait, huh? Where’s my princess that always gets envious at times like these?” (Velt)

Huh? Ura normally gets angry and says I’m having an affair, but she isn’t coming out.

What happened to her?

“Fufu~n, otouto-kun, look over there.” (Cleran)

“Ah?” (Velt)

Cleran points to the direction of the lake, where Ura’s sitting in the shadow of a tree with her arms around her knees in a gloomy atmosphere.

“What’s up with her?” (Velt)

“Come on~, you..... became a papa, so she got shocked~.” (Cleran)

.....?

“I’m not really a papa, like..... I just said that because I was getting into it when I was fighting Chirotan. In the first place, Cosmos is Eljiela’s kid, not

mine.” (Velt)

“Otouto-kun, you’re dumb~. No~~~~~ one think that, you know?” (Cleran)

“Hah?” (Velt)

“Your life force and mana make up half of Cosmos-chan~.” (Clearn)

I mea~~~~n, even if you tell me that.....

“Ah~, Ura~, how are you~?” (Velt)

“.....” (Ura)

“Ah~, sorry for worrying you.” (Velt)

“..... gusu.....” (Ura)

She’s totally depressed!

“Uu, uuuu.....” (Ura)

“Come o~n, don’t cry~.” (Velt)

“Byut..... even though we lived together for five years, I restrained myself from crossing the line out of worry for Forna.” (Ura)

“Ah, so that was you restraining yourself, huh.” (Velt)

“And yet, and yet, it wasn’t even with Forna..... you made a child..... with a woman you just met today.” (Ura)

Uwao. Absolute brute. Absolute fiend. I would definitely want to send that kind of guy flying.

“Velt-sama~!” (Eljiela)

“Kyau, kyau!” (Cosmos)

Oi, you’re the one person that shouldn’t come here!

What are you coming here for while carrying a smiling baby!

“Velt-sama, please come this way. My elder sister said she would like to thank you in front of everyone.” (Eljiela)

“Kya~u, kya~u!” (Cosmos)

“Ah, hey, Cosmos! Stop playing pranks on Velt-sama.” (Eljiela)

Cosmos stretched out her hand to pull on my hair and pinch my nose in a lively, good mood.....

But man, it’s probably because the sky race’s way of giving birth is different, since she already has some hair, even though she was just born.

Her hair is the same golden colour as Eljiela's, and she's been stretching her hand out to me with a grin.

"Uu, uwaaaaaaaaaaaaaan!" (Ura)

After seeing that, Ura cried even more.

"U, uuu." (Ura)

"Ura....." (Velt)

"Furthermore, furthermore..... she's too cute it's not fair! Eljiela, let me carry her too!" (Ura)

Ahh, I get that.

..... I mean, it's to the point where even a demon king recognised her cuteness.

People say newborn babies are just monkeys? Outrageous.

Hanabi was the same when she was born too.

Her cuteness was so powerful that no magic nor sword technique could win against it.

"Here you go, Ura-san." (Eljiela)

"Kyao. Kyao." (Cosmos)

"Au, ah, uuuuu, cute." (Ura)

As expected of Ura. She took care of Hanabi with me when Hanabi was a baby, so she's used to handling them.

Cosmos became completely relaxed and laughed happily.

"Velt....." (Ura)

"..... We, well..... you know. If there's a chance, sure." (Velt)

"I haven't said anything yet!" (Ura)

"I can tell even if you don't say anything." (Velt)

"That's not true. You're a bully so you can't tell." (Ura)

"Then say it, and we'll see." (Velt)

"I want one too! Please, share a bed with me!" (Ura)

"That's where you're supposed to ask me to embrace you." (Velt)

I knew it.

I chopped Ura's head, telling her to cut it out

A child, huh~, well, I still don't really get if it's fine to look at Cosmos as my own child.

However, either way, I probably won't ever meet her again.

I mean, right? This is the sky world. It's a world that we shouldn't be able to go to.

And as long as nothing too crazy happens, the sky race doesn't plan on meddling with the land.

Although this place exists, that doesn't mean we should dig it up. We should just keep this dreamlike place as a dreamlike place in our hearts, and say our goodbyes, right.....?

Probably.....

"Oh, you guys seem to be having fun." (Roala)

"Ouou, let me hug Cosmos too~. What the hell though, Eljiela divided faster than me. I want to do it soon too~." (Lenza)

Roala and Lenza went out of their way to come to us instead. Did they come to pick me up because I was late? However, they seem to be in a good mood.

And then, Roala bombastically shouted, even though she isn't on a stage or a high rampart.

"Velt Jeeha-sama!" (Roala)

"Ye, yes!" (Velt)

Ah, that was lame. I reflexively stood at attention. Roala was going on and on about penises before, but her dignity in this formal situation made me stand up straight.

"We can not thank you enough for this occasion. We would have taken unimaginable damage for making light of a demon king's power. However, this world was saved due to your great efforts. I thank you from the bottom of my heart." (Roala)

"No, well, okay. It kinda just turned out that way though." (Velt)

"However, our world should be able to keep going on thanks to that." (Roala)

U~wa~, I'm not really good at this. It was like this in the empire when I was getting awarded with a medal.

It just doesn't suit me.

The angels are all looking at me with stars in their eyes, and just, I want them to stop.

“Just earlier, we received the decision of an emergency meeting through telepathy, after we told our mothers and the other princesses about what happened this time.” (Roala)

“Hm? What? When did you do that?” (Velt)

“From now on..... Velt Jeeha-sama, we would like to accept you as the『Friend of Heaven and Earth』.” (Roala)

What? Everyone became amazed and started raising cheers, but like, what? The friend of heaven and earth? It doesn't sound like an award, but.....

“The ‘friend of heaven and earth’, is a legendary title that is given to someone of a different race who the whole sky world can sincerely trust. Please receive that title.” (Roala)

“That is wonderful, Velt-sama! Until now, that title has only ever been given to an explorer from the land world who saved the sky world from a plague, around five hundred years ago. Ever since then, not a single person has been given that title.” (Eljiela)

I mean, that's because no land people have ever come to this world before that, right?

You say it's legendary, but it doesn't really click to me.....

Like, what's the point of receiving that title anyway?

———Whisper whisper whisper

———Glance glance glance

———Chuckle chuckle chuckle

———Grin grin grin

———Smirk smirk smirk

..... What are these..... these tepid, teasing looks that I got when I was on a date with Forna in the empire!

Ah, I have a bad feeling.....

“Well then, as proof that you are the friend of heaven and earth, we will have

one person from our sky world accompany you, Velt-sama.” (Roala)

———Ah!

I instantaneously knew what this meant she said it.

I turned around to see Cleran and Dora laughing with hands in a praying pose, and Farga silently holding his head.

As for Ura..... she became even more depressed and hugged Cosmos.

“Eljiela. I would like you to fulfill that role. From now on, follow Velt-sama and go to the land world with him.” (Roala)

“..... Yes, it is an honour!” (Eljiela)

I knew it!

Ahh, of course it had to be something like that!

“Hey, about that title, I don’t need———” (Velt)

“Now, we are like family with Velt-sama, and we should accept him as the friend of heaven and earth. Hm? Wait a minute. On second thought, Cosmos was only just born, and yet Eljiela is going to follow Velt-sama to the land world. Separating a newborn child and her mother is too.....” (Roala)

“No, as I was saying, I don’t need..... like, what’s up with your monotone voice, anyway!” (Velt)

“Alright, I guess there is nothing we can do about this, so we will allow Cosmos to accompany Eljiela!” (Roala)

“What the hell is this! What’s up with that forced one-person show! You were planning this from the start, weren’t you!” (Velt)

They got me..... the sky maidens made guts poses and sent cheers.

“Hyyu hyuu! Roala-sama, nice one!” (Angel)

“She has such a generous heart!” (Angel)

“Velt-sama! Please take care of the princess and Cosmos-sama, you’re a dad now!” (Angel)

Ahh, I feel like my opinion was completely erased.

“Velt-sama.” (Eljiela)

“..... Yeah~.....” (Velt)

“I am inexperienced, but please treat me well.” (Eljiela)

She really just said that right now.....

Oi, she's blushing like a woman before her wedding.....

Like, Farga's looking at this like it's stupid, but he's not giving me any help!

This basically means Eljiela and Cosmos are going to join us from now on, you know!

"Uu, Velt you idiot! Not only Forna and I, after the princess of the empire, now it's the princess of the sky!" (Ura)

I know right~, Ura-san.

"Lord! Please entrust your daughter to me! Even if it costs me my life..... ehehehe, Cosmos-chan..... cute nya~..... is she going to call me her sister?" (Musashi)

Damn it, you're so cute Musashi!

"Uu~, that girl looks delicious but no, stop, you can't eat her." (Cleran)

Don't eat her, Cleran.

"Leave it to me, bro! I can transform into that rattling toy thing for her!" (Doraemon)

Ohh, you do that, Dora.

"..... For now, I'll write a letter to my damn dad..... and tell him that my stupid brother has around three concubines, I guess." (Farga)

I'm serious, please don't, my dear elder brother.

"Kyafuu, kyafu. Paaa! Dabu! Dabu!" (Cosmos)

And so, I hugged Cosmos.

Ahh..... damn it, you're cute..... that's foul play.....

Chapter 111: Setting off and something unexpected

One day after confirming Forna's unchanging feelings, I made a child with another woman.

And now, several days of resting and preparing has passed, so we're setting off with a mother and a child from the sky race.

"Paa, bunpa! Bunpa!" (Cosmos)

"Yes yes, I'm already hugging you." (Velt)

"Au~, kyaou!" (Cosmos)

"Ah~, stop hitting me." (Velt)

Today's the day we're setting off. We had all gathered in the Sky Kingdom Holaiend's side entrance.

While many people of the sky race had crowded around to see us off, I was soothing a child.

"Uhya~, she's so small~, I'm in love~!" (Dorauemon)

"Hee~, you're amazing, otouto-kun. I didn't think you were used to handling babies~." (Cleran)

"Lord, lord! Please, please let me carry Cosmos-dono!" (Musashi)

I tried to hand Cosmos over to Musashi, but Cosmos suddenly started getting agitated.

"Ugyu~." (Cosmos)

"Auwa~, cu, cute~, tiny~." (Musashi)

"Eu, u, eu." (Cosmos)

"Wait, ah~! Why did you start crying! I am definitely not suspicious!" (Musashi)

"Hogyaa! Hogyaa! Hogyaa!" (Cosmos)

A~ah, and now she's crying.

"Lo, lord~ lord~, lord~, auwa, wawawa, hau, wha, wha, what should I do~! What should I do~!" (Musashi)

"Ah~, okay okay, just hand her to me. Come on, come on, don't cry~." (Velt)

“Hogya, ho, eu, e, eu. Auuu! Au! Kyau!” (Cosmos)

Musashi gave Cosmos to me on the verge of tears, and I slowly lifted Cosmos up, spun her around and tried to stop her from crying. Then, Cosmos stopped crying and started giggling.

“Oh, ohhhh! Splendid! I did not know lord had acquired that kind of technique!” (Musashi)

“Hm~m. Cosmos-chan might just feel more at peace because she knows that the power flowing through her is otouto-kun’s power.” (Cleran)

“Ah~, that’s nice~, if it’s for her, I’m fine with being a cradle for the rest of my life!” (Doraemon)

Now, probably because she got tired from crying and laughing, Cosmos started nodding off. This is really tiring, and I feel that nostalgic feeling I had with Hanabi.

But like, what should we be doing from now on?

“Oi, stupid brother. What are you going to do?” (Farga)

“About what? My wife?” (Velt)

“I don’t give a crap about that as long as my stupid sister is the legal wife. I’m asking if you’re going to seriously let that shitty brat accompany you.” (Farga)

That’s a good point. It’s dangerous after all. No like, seriously though. There’s no way we can bring her along while she’s still THE BABY, much less take her to the Divine Being Continent, and it’s not like we can definitely protect her either.

“““Ehhhhhh!””” (Musashi, Cleran, Doraemon)

And yet, Musashi, Cleran and Dora objected in earnest.

“But lord! Dangerous, not dangerous, cute and cute!” (Musashi)

“What the hell are you trying to say?” (Velt)

“Boo boo, it’s fine! Let’s take Cosmos with us! I mean, just look! Humanity’s strongest Hunter, the princess of a demon kingdom, a genius demi-human swordsman, a monster master, a legendary dragon, and otouto-kun who defeated one of the Seven Great Demon Kings! And also a princess of the sky race. With these extravagant bodyguards, I would say she’s in the safest place in the world!” (Cleran)

“Despite that, haven’t we had a pretty tiring journey so far?” (Velt)

“I, I want to play with Cosmos-chan more! Ura-neesan is feeling down, Musashi-neesan is a dumb-dumb, and Cleran-neesan is scary!” (Doraemon)

“What’s up with all your weird reasons?” (Velt)

In the first place, why the hell did these guys and the sky race readily accept Eljiela and Cosmos as a set?

Leaving aside whether Cosmos is my own child, whether or not I bring her along on our journey is another question.

Am I the strange one here? Why am I, a former delinquent, caring about a child’s safety the most?

“You’re being a bad loser, papa!” (Angel)

“Being together with family is the best, dad!” (Angel)

“Our race does not know what fathers are. So, please show her, father!” (Angel)

The sky race booed me too.

These guys.....

“Velt-sama. No, I will call you brother-in-law from now on!” (Roala)

“Take care of our younger sister and niece.” (Lenza)

Even Roala and Lenza are making it seem trivial.

Spare me from this, please. It’s not my fault if something happens, alright?

“Guess it can’t be helped. We’ll do something about your damn sister and daughter.” (Farga)

Oi, Farga, don’t just go promising stuff without thinking through it.

And yet, Farga changed the subject without even caring about this one.

“Oi, so what are you going to do about Chirotan’s subordinates? There were a few thousand, right?” (Farga)

That’s a good point. Since Chirotan died or went missing, we don’t know what to do about his subordinates.

Although it was under Chirotan’s orders, they did attack the Sky Kingdom, after all.

Besides, they even know information about the Sky Kingdom that no one else does.

Releasing them could lead to revenge or other greedy people appearing. However, Roala indifferently answered Farga's question.

"For now, we will move them all to another major city. There, we can have a conference with all the princesses to decide what we will do now." (Roala)

"A major city, huh." (Farga)

"Yeah, it's not something we can decide for ourselves. Well, that's a problem we will deal with though, so you should just take care of Eljiela and Cosmos, without minding us." (Roala)

"I see..... alright. We'll stay silent about defeating Chirotan too." (Farga)

"Sorry for troubling you." (Roala)

They seem like they're deciding a bunch of stuff by themselves, but anyway, I think Roala is somewhat similar to Farga. Even though they usually put on a cool face, they have a strong emotional attachment to their family and their country. Well, it might be because they're both royalty though. Basically, they're both reliable.

"Everyone, thank you for waiting." (Eljiela)

Then, Eljiela finally came with everything prepared. Her super tight wetsuit she was wearing when we first met, changed a little. Other than that, she's also wearing a frilly, long, white skirt. As for what part of the wetsuit was changed.....

"Ogyaa ogyaa ogyaa!" (Cosmos)

"Ara ara, Cosmos, are you hungry? Just wait..... here!" (Eljiela)

"Amu! Amu amu amu." (Cosmos)

The wetsuit used to cover her whole body, reaching her ankles and wrists. However, now it's become sleeveless. Since the wetsuit is stretchy, she made it sleeveless so that her breast can pop out by pulling the cloth from her shoulder to her cleavage.

"Fufu. Does it taste good?" (Eljiela)

"Abuuu. Abuuuu." (Cosmos)

That's right! It was customised so that she could breastfeed Cosmos!

"Wait! Don't just pop it out in front of me like that! Like, you better not do

that in the land world, alright!” (Velt)

“Eh, is, is something wrong, Velt-sama?” (Eljiela)

“Ah~, this woman’s hopeless.” (Velt)

Ah~, that surprised me.

I mean, I’ve seen them up close before, but seeing her well-shaped, huge breasts all of a sudden is literally going to make me faint.

“Um, I am very sorry. I will take care from now on.” (Eljiela)

“Ah~, you better. If there were any perverted guys around you, they would’ve totally jumped at you, alright?” (Velt)

“Perverted? But Velt-sama, you are not like that.” (Eljiela)

“Look okay~, it was pretty dangerous for me too.” (Velt)

“Is that how it is? I thought everyone would have seen their mothers breasts when they were children.” (Eljiela)

“That’s just when they were kids! I don’t even remember when I got breastfed by my mum.” (Velt)

“Oh, my is that so. Um, so in other words, does that mean you do want to touch breasts and drink from them?” (Eljiela)

“What part of our conversation did you even understand!” (Velt)

Eljiela started thinking about something earnestly.

What’s going on?

Then,

“Um, Velt-sama. If you are fine with me..... this breast is free! Since I am yours • • • •um, please go ahead. You can do as you like.” (Eljiela)

Everyone other than the sky race fell over.

Seeing Farga fall down from surprise is a valuable sight.

Well, it just means this woman said something outrageous enough for him to do that.

What are you resolutely popping out your other breast for!

“Y, you, angel bitch!” (Ura)

Ah, Ura finally couldn’t take it anymore, so she chopped my head.

“Tsuo, why, why me!” (Velt)

“Shut up! Eljiela is carrying Cosmos right now, so you should take her pain

instead! How dare you, how dare you, how dare you!” (Ura)

Even though she was depressed and gloomy before, she’s breathing heavily from her nose right now.

“It’s lively. Surely my younger sister will be fine.” (Roala)

“I wonder.” (Farga)

“Fuh, Farga-san, you will probably be troubled a lot, but please take care of them.” (Roala)

“Alright..... well, I wanted my stupid sister to give birth to my stupid brother’s first child, so I have mixed feelings about this.” (Farga)

“Your younger sister? Ahh, through intercourse, right. Yeah, with their penis.” (Roala)

“Don’t you dare come down to the land.” (Farga)

I wanted to peacefully say our farewells, but it ended up being lively. Well, rather than saying our farewells, this is more like a place for Eljiela and Cosmos to say they’ll see them later.

“Roala-oneesama. Lenza-oneesama. I will be going now.” (Eljiela)

“Yeah, make sure you don’t get careless.” (Roala)

“Come back sometime.” (Lenza)

Thus, the time had come at last. The sisters said their goodbyes. This part of them isn’t that different to land people, huh. And then, Roala formally asked us to take care of her younger sister, and we nodded.

“Alright, I’m going!” (Doraueemon)

We jump upon huge Dora’s back.
Eljiela and Cosmos had joined us.

“Well then, everyone, I will be going now!” (Eljiela)

Eljiela said that once again, and the people of the Sky Kingdom raised a grand cheer.

Two people joined us, and although we thought we had to work harder, we also felt like our journey would get more interesting.

“Alright! Let’s return to the land! After that, we’ll prepare to enter the Divine

Being Continent!” (Velt)

“““““Yeah!””””” (Everyone)

There’s fine weather both above and below the clouds, so it’s a good day to set off.

Eljiela and the others used their power to protect Cosmos and me from freezing to death this time, so we pierced through the multiple layers of cloud and we descended to the sky, where we can see the land we haven’t seen in several days.

“That was pretty fun~, well, it was a disaster for otouto-kun though.” (Cleran)

“It really was a disaster. He just keeps making women.” (Ura)

“Lord, I will stay by your side this time for sure, and cut up all threats!”

(Musashi)

“But I’d rather avoid stuff like that from now on. We’ve been continuously fighting people of the shitty Seven Great Demon Kings and the fucking Four Heavenly Beast Demi-humans.” (Farga)

“Fufufu, everyone. I will do my best to help so that I do not cause any trouble. Please take care of Cosmos and me.” (Eljiela)

“Kyakkya!” (Cosmos)

We returned to journeying while talking in the sky.

And then, seeing the continent in front of us, Dora gradually dropped the altitude.

“Um~, can we land somewhere close by? I can’t fly forever.” (Doraemon)

That’s true.

And then, it’s a bit late, but I realised something

“Come to think of it, I forgot since we were above the clouds for a few days, but where are we right now?” (Velt)

All of them tilted their heads at my simple question.

However, it’s not like we need to panic since we’re probably on the Humanity Continent anyways.

Going off track from our destination is troublesome, but I can’t just be asking for too much.

“Hmm. For now, why don’t we land somewhere and ask someone nearby?”
(Ura)

“We might need to take a shitty detour, but that’s probably the safest choice.”
(Farga)

We descended, heading to a coastline with no people around.
The beach is several kilometres long, but there didn’t seem to be anyone there,
so we decided to just land for now.

“Dora, turn into your small form.” (Velt)

“Alright.” (Doraemon)

“Oh my, so this is the land world! This is the ground! Wonderful!” (Eljiela)

“Ahh, now that you mention it, this is your first time coming to the land, huh.”
(Velt)

“Oh, right, Eljiela-dono. Would it not be better to care about your wings?”
(Musashi)

“Yeah~, even Ura-chan and Musashi-chan get attention in some places, so
Eljiela-chan’s wings would definitely stand out in the Humanity Continent.”
(Cleran)

Now, we’ve landed on the beach, but where is this place?

“Farga, do you know where this is?” (Velt)

“No.” (Farga)

Thought so~. But like, there’s really no one here.
While we were looking around restlessly, we found a sign.
There’s something written on the sign.

“Ah? Umm..... 『Mystek Beach』?” (Velt)

I’ve never heard of this name before.
I look at Farga, but he’s shaking his head.
Then.....

“What! This was the Mystek beach!?” (Musashi)

Musashi unexpectedly reacted.

“Musashi-chan, do you know where this is?” (Cleran)

“Umu. This is my first time coming here as well, but the Mystek beach is a beach located to the south of the Demi-human Continent. Well, this beach is not that famous, but the big,『Jaykay City』nearby is very famous.” (Musashi)

Ah~, I see, no wonder we didn’t know.

“Hee~, the Demi-human Continent, huh. There’s no way we would’ve known that.” (Velt)

“Yeah. I didn’t fucking know either.” (Farga)

“Oh~, no wonder I didn’t know either.” (Cleran)

“Hou, so that’s where we are.” (Ura)

“I didn’t know at all either.” (Doraueemon)

“The demi-human continent?” (Eljiela)

“Kyau?” (Cosmos)

Well, I guess there would’ve been no way we could’ve known.

“Yeah~.” (Velt)

“Ahaha.” (Cleran)

We simply laughed.....

.....?

“.....?” (Everyone)

.....!!!!!!!

“Ehhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhh! The De, De, De, De, Demi-human Continent!!!” (Everyone)

It seems like in these past few days, we had been floated away to somewhere outrageous.

Chapter 112: Gyogyogyo

Hearing that this is the Demi-human Continent gives me mixed feelings since I can't help but think back to when my old man and mum were killed.

Of course, meeting Musashi made me stop trying to avoid demi-humans since I knew that there are good guys and irritating guys among demi-humans, humans and demons.

However, I still didn't want to come to this continent.

While standing still on this coastline, I looked at the direction of the place I should return to, and the direction of the place I should go to.

"Anyway, even if we're going to the Humanity Continent or the Divine Being Continent, we have no choice but to go on a ship, right?" (Cleran)

"Yeah. Dora probably couldn't fly over the sea for multiple days or change into a ship." (Velt)

"This is fucking troublesome. I don't know where the undersea tunnels are in the Demi-human Continent." (Farga)

"Um, I do not quite understand, but we should prepare appropriately for a long journey." (Eljiela)

Eljiela's right. I thought we could just buy food and tools for our journey on land, so I didn't stock up on anything in the sky world.

However, although it was unfortunate, as long as we've come to the Demi-human Continent, we have to get the necessities here, to go to another continent.

I was hoping to get diapers for Cosmos too.

In other words, we can't avoid contact with demi-humans.

"This is pretty~ scary. Like, I can't believe how you two stayed in the Humanity Continent, Ura, Musashi." (Velt)

"What are you saying? I was only fine because you were there..... don't you think I just said something cute?" (Ura)

"Me too. I definitely would have never been able to endure it alone." (Musashi)

I guess so. Thinking about it like that, even in this situation, I was probably a lot luckier than they were.

My comrades are reliable, and we have Musashi, a demi-human with us too.

“But what should we do? A ship or an undersea tunnel is essential to go to either the Humanity Continent or the Divine Being Continent, right? Musashi-chan, do you have any good ideas?” (Cleran)

“U~mu, no, and I have no acquaintances in this area either.” (Musashi)

A ship or a tunnel, huh.

If we go by ship, we have to buy one.

If we go by tunnel, we have to search for one.

“Out of those two, I would say we go by ship. Finding a tunnel by ourselves is fucking impossible. However, as long as it’s not too luxurious, we can get a ship with money.” (Farga)

Well, I guess Farga’s right.

Rather than searching for some tunnel that could be anywhere in this continent, buying a ship from somewhere nearby would be way faster. Although this place is a coastline, there are no people, ships or anchorage on the beach. There’s just a thickly grown, dense forest in front of us, and I honestly can’t even tell if this is the Demi-human Continent.

“Anyway, let’s just search for someone. If we find someone that has a ship, Musashi, you negotiate with them.” (Velt)

“Yes! Leave it to me, lord! As a last resort, I can present my own handmade, gigantic, luxury cruise ship to you, lord!” (Musashi)

“Don’t give me your handmade one. I’ll be too scared to ride it since you’ll probably make too many mistakes.” (Velt)

We started walking, thinking that it would be better to move somewhere else for now.

First, let’s head to a village or a town near us.

However,

“Shit..... thirty..... forty of them.” (Farga)

“I didn’t notice until they came close to us.” (Cleran)

“Lord! Please fall back with Cosmos-dono.” (Musashi)

“Hmph, after everything I’ve been through recently, I won’t be surprised no matter who comes.” (Ura)

“I feel a powerful wave.” (Eljiela)

The second we started walking, Farga, Cleran, Musashi, Ura and Eljiela noticed something and stopped moving.

Dora, Cosmos and I are the only ones that don’t know what’s going on.

“Abu?” (Cosmos)

I felt like saying, “abu?” too.

Then.....

“Hoho~, you realised, huh. It seems like you are quite skilled.” (?)

I heard someone’s voice.

However, I couldn’t see anyone in the surroundings.

So then, where is this voice coming from?

Suddenly, the sand on the beach rose up in front of me.

The sand rose up as if surrounding us, and multiple things flew out of it.

They were monsters clad in red, spiky armour. Their arms and heads were just like that of a..... crab!

“You are, the sand crabman race!” (Musashi)

I read a demi-human encyclopedia when I was a kid, but I didn’t even know about this one.

The mysterious crabs I’ve never seen nor heard of flew out of the sand.

“Who are these guys!” (Velt)

“Gyaa, they’re scary!” (Doraemon)

“Eu, abu, ho, hogyaa!” (Cosmos)

Cosmos cried, but it’s understandable because even I’m scared.

“Keh, they’ve come out already.” (Farga)

“Are we having crab hot pot tonight?” (Cleran)

“No, there’s no way we can eat those!” (Ura)

“What business do you have with us!” (Musashi)

“Now now, Cosmos. It is okay, maama and paapa are here for you.” (Eljiela)

However, the fact that we're the only surprised ones means that everyone else had sensed their presence.

Lucky..... I can't do stuff like that.

Hm? That reminds me, didn't Farga say there were around thirty or forty before? What about the others?

"This is our security area. We had been on watch to defend against smuggling ships but to think you would appear from the sky....." (?)

The numbers don't match. As I thought that, I heard a voice from behind me, where there were around twenty demi-humans covered in scales and gills. There was a great variety of demi-humans, some had shark traits, octopus traits, turtle traits and so on.

All of them were wearing extremely human-like, shorts and sleeveless shirts. If I had to lump them all together.....

"The half-fishman race!" (Musashi)

That's right. The half-fishman race.
Beings that have human and fish traits.

"Fishman? Are they aquatic people?" (Eljiela)

"Something like that, yeah..... Eljiela..... don't let go of Cosmos. We will definitely protect you." (Ura)

"Hogyaa hogyaa hogyaa!" (Cosmos)

It's understandable for Eljiela to be surprised.
This is my first time seeing half-fishmen too.

Although I shouldn't judge people by their appearances, I won't deny that I found their appearances to be weird.

However, it's just their appearances that are strange, and their eyes are actually serious.

"We are the guards that defend this area of the ocean. What is with your combination of humans, demons and even demi-humans! What did you come here for!" (Half-fishman)

A half-fishman that has a shark fin and a slit mouth, who seems to be the leader of these guards, asked us a question.
Now, how should I respond? Musashi, the most effective person to answer

them, shouted.

“I apologise for surprising you! However, it was really a coincidence that we came here! I promise that we will definitely not cause any trouble for you! I am a Miyamoto Kendo swordsman, Musashi Gabbana!” (Musashi)

Hearing that name, the half-fishmen started getting noisy.

“O, oi, that woman..... was a Miyamoto Kendo swordsman!” (Half-fishman)
“And she said Gabbana, which means she’s part of Sword Beast, Varnand Gabbana’s family!” (Half-fishman)

Ohh, that surprised me. Musashi’s shining like crazy in my eyes right now. Seems like Miyamoto was quite a VIP in this Demi-human Continent.

“Excuse my impoliteness! I had no idea you were part of Miyamoto Kendo.” (Half-fishman)

“No, you have not done anything wrong. I do not mind it.” (Musashi)

On top of that, they all saluted.

Oi oi, Musashi..... you’re always panicking and letting me stroke your head, but you were actually an amazing person, huh.

However, they didn’t just react to that.

“Nu! Oi, look at that guy with the scary eyes!” (Half-fishman)

Are they talking about me?

“He’s the man that defeated the boss of Love and Money a few days ago, in the fight between humanity’s great allied forces and the cyclopes!” (Half-fishman)

“What! Then he’s that guy who called himself the number one baddest guy or something!?” (Half-fishman)

“He’s the guy that’s rumoured to be the Golden Comet’s lover!” (Half-fishman)

Crap, I didn’t think I was well-known.

It doesn’t feel bad, but I didn’t want this embarrassing part to be known. I guess this is all Kagami’s fault too.

“Oh my, Velt-sama, you are very famous. Please let me greet that lover someday.” (Eljiela)

“Kyauu! Mau, abu!” (Cosmos)

“I mean, I can’t say much, but I think Forna will faint if you two meet her without any explanation.” (Ura)

While Eljiela and Ura were having a carefree conversation at the back, the half-fishmen looked at us a little more resolutely.

“I do not doubt a swordsman of the Gabbana name. However, traitors among us have been supporting humanity’s great allied forces and Love and Money recently, causing much damage to us demi-humans. Excuse my rudeness, but what evidence do you have that you coincidentally arrived here without any purpose?” (Half-fishman)

Evidence? Do we have something like that? As I wondered that, Musashi, who was being unexpectedly reliable, shouted again.

“I have no physical evidence! However, I am accompanying these people out of my own will! And also, please understand that it is under the chief of the Shinsengumi, one of the Four Heavenly Beast Demi-humans, Esamu-sama’s orders!” (Musashi)

“““““E, Esamu-sama!!!!””””” (Half-fishmen)

“I have no evidence, but I do not mind if you confirm with the Shinsengumi’s main office. You may even restrain us until you gain confirmation!” (Musashi)

The half-fishmen were noticeably agitated.
As expected of one of the Four Heavenly Beast Demi-humans, that matchless, hyper geezer has amazing influence.
They were wary of us at the start, but they gradually made panicking faces, and now they’re making apologetic faces.

“My, my apologies for that. I didn’t know it was the great hero of the demi-human race, Esamu-sama’s orders.” (Half-fishman)

“No, you are just carrying out your duty. I do not mind it. My circumstances are special, so I apologise for causing confusion.” (Musashi)

Seems like they’ve finished talking.
We were able to solve it without messing up the quiet coast and the gentle beach.

“Musashi, great job. You’re a good girl.” (Velt)

“Hauwaaa! Lo, lord~~~~!” (Musashi)

Cosmos is here too, so I’m glad nothing troublesome happened. Musashi’s sharp face became slack as I stroked her head to thank her, which was cute and funny.

“But that surprised me~. I didn’t think people would be guarding the sea and the beach.” (Cleran)

“Yeah. Is there something you need to protect around here?” (Farga)

Cleran and Farga who were next to us, let their guard down and casually asked the half-fishmen.

Then, the half-fishmen answered honestly.

“Yes. This area has beautiful coral reefs and pearls that cannot be found in the Humanity Continent or the Demon Continent, so smuggling ships occasionally come from other continents.” (Half-fishman)

“I see, so it’s the greedy Hunters and Love and Money, huh. They’re so busy, even though their boss was caught.” (Farga)

Yeah, I thought they would stop functioning without Kagami, but the half-fishmen made surprised faces instead.

“Oh, have you not seen the morning newspaper yet?” (Half-fishman)

“Newspaper?” (Farga)

What is he talking about?

“The war at the Archline Empire had come to an end. The Maakai Demon Kingdom and the Archline Empire made a truce, and the Maakai Demon Kingdom exchanged their human prisoners for prince Ragaia.” (Half-fishman)

“What?” (Farga)

“Also, since that was the main news, not everyone would have read this part, but..... the boss of Love and Money, Mackey Mouse, was moved to the Empire’s great prison under one of the Ten Heroes of Light, princess Arsha’s authority. However, the vice president of Love and Money, Maney Mouse, escaped during the transfer. Since then, Maney Mouse has been missing.” (Half-fishman)

That was the world-famous news of what happened in the few days we were in heaven.

Regarding the cyclopes..... that's a political power, so I shouldn't be saying anything about it.

Even the thing about Kagami was something Ayase thought about. I don't have the right to say whatever I want to.

Instead, the problem is Maney Mouse. In the end, she never showed her true self in that war.

Despite the fact that she was captured, I only cared about Kagami, so I never saw her true face.

That's why I didn't worry about her.

Without even knowing that this 'Maney-chan' person would cause trouble again.

TL Note: Apparently 'gyogyogyo' (the title) is something you say when you're surprised, but it also has something to do with fish, which is probably why it was used for this chapter.

Chapter 113: Nevermind, I still got surprised

In these past few days, something pretty shocking had happened without us knowing about it.

Maney Mouse, the vice-president of the Humanity Continent's huge, leading organization, Love and Money, escaped.

However, that was actually a trivial incident in a way.

"What the hell." (Farga)

"No wonder humanity's great allied forces made a cease-fire agreement with the cyclopes." (Ura)

"I guess it means that they don't have the room to spare any more fighting power." (Cleran)

We were informed of a major incident by the half-fishmen.

They handed us a newspaper that was made on the day after the Archline Empire and the Maakai Demon Kingdom called for a truce, which talked about the result of the great battle in the Divine Being Continent.

"Jiigoku Demon Kingdom's victory. Out of the six Ten Heroes of Light humanity's great allied forces had sent, 『Magic Sage Daun』 and 『Sacred Beast Knight Dylan』 were killed in action. Along with the many casualties, humanity's great allied forces lost more than half of their territory in the Divine Being Continent." (Velt)

I read the words on the newspaper indifferently, just saying exactly what was written in it without any emotion.

"I see. Humanity's great allied forces lost, huh. The Jiigoku Demon Kingdom is one of the top two among the Seven Great Demon Kingdoms, but I didn't think they would beat them that much." (Ura)

"..... Ura..... did you know that it would turn out like this?" (Velt)

"Velt..... no, the Jiigoku Demon Kingdom's power is mostly unknown, even in the Demon Continent. Even in the Demon Continent, the Jiigoku Demon Kingdom is famous for their super gigantic country, but because it's too big,

their internal defences would be full of holes if they dispatched a large army, so they had to stay in their country to manage it. That's why no demon knows the Jiigoku Demon Kingdom's power when they're serious." (Ura)

It's not like I'm trying to blame Ura. The war is unrelated to me, after all. However, even though I thought it was unrelated, the moment I heard they lost, I felt like it wasn't just somebody else's problem. I don't know why that is, but either way, there was some small mercy.

"I'm glad Forna didn't participate in that war." (Velt)
"Yeah, I fucking agree." (Farga)

Farga, Ura and I were all glad that Forna wasn't there.

"The Jiigoku Demon Kingdom is the oni demon race's country, right~? Although I have been working as a Hunter until now, even I haven't met an oni before. Rather, I don't even want to meet one." (Cleran)

"Us demi-humans have heard of them too. I heard their ferocious nature and toughness makes them extremely strong, and their demon king is especially powerful. He fought equally to Esamu-sama, and all of their fights have been handed down as legends. Also, it seems that they have never properly settled their fights." (Musashi)

"Ha~, there are just way too many scary people~. I shouldn't have even thought about adventuring outside." (Dorauemon)

"The world is very wide. I cannot believe how conceited I was to think that the sky world was everything. Isn't it scary, Cosmos?" (Eljiela)

"Ababababuu!" (Cosmos)

It was such a great matter that we couldn't just settle it with a few words. Only Farga, Cleran and I are humans here.

From everyone else's perspective, they wouldn't really care if some humans lost.

However, probably because we're human, our thoughts lean towards humans, so the atmosphere became somewhat gloomy.

"Anyhow, every country is currently on alert right now because of that. That is the reason why our security was strict too." (Half-fishman)

The bipedal, shark half-fishman said that to us.

“Especially since humanity’s great allied forces’ guard has weakened from losing, something could happen under Maney Mouse’s orders.” (Half-fishman)

In Asakura Ryuuma’s world, it would kinda be like if the JSDF or the police organisation crumbled apart.

No scoundrels would overlook a situation where the force that protects the country’s public order is in pieces.

They would see humanity’s crushing defeat as a chance instead, and maybe even start something.

Well, I don’t know if Maney is sly enough to do that, but at the very least, I could only see her as an idiot when I met that weird, costumed woman.

“Lord, with all due respect, please don’t think that just being wary of Love and Money’s president or vice-president will make you safe.” (Musashi)

“Musashi? Oh, right..... you also have some past with them.” (Velt)

I remember now. Musashi’s home, family and the elves her parents were serving were all snatched away by Love and Money.

“Not even my father, who inherited my grandfather’s natural talent and swordsmanship, could match the Love and Money staff who took Hunters along with them to attack my homeland.....” (Musashi)

Slight tears were forming in Musashi’s eyes as she grasped her fists tightly in frustration.

It must’ve been a trauma for her, so I was about to stroke her head to tell her she doesn’t need to talk about it, but Musashi shook her head.

Instead, she grabbed my extended hand.

“Lord. I was exceedingly powerless back then. However, it is different now. I will definitely protect you. So, lord..... please don’t push yourself too hard. If I were to lose even you, I..... would lose my reason for living.” (Musashi)

Although she was clutching my hand powerfully, I could feel her trembling. She had become slightly emotional from hearing Love and Money again. However, as far as I’ve heard from her past, it isn’t wrong for her to do that. So, I properly held her hand back and nodded.

“Abyu! Abuu! Abuu!” (Cosmos)

“Ara, what is it, Cosmos?” (Eljiela)

“Aba! Abuu! Aburu!” (Cosmos)

Cosmos started making excited noises all of a sudden.
She’s pointing at something.

In the direction she’s pointing to, I can see an extremely unnatural lump on a plain past the forest.

“Oh, ohh…… I can see it.” (Velt)

“So, so that is the……” (Musashi)

I could tell that it was a city even from afar.
And, I realised that I had been underestimating the demi-humans’ civilisation.
Demi-humans have the blood of beasts, but no intelligence like humans or mana like demons.

I thought that at best, they would have wooden or straw, stone age houses.

“That is the city of youths in the Demi-human Continent, the Jaykay city.”
(Half-fishman)

However, what I saw before me blew away that whole assumption.
And above all, it was so unexpected that I doubted my eyes.

“Wha, what the heck is thaaat!” (Velt)

“What is that shitty looking thing?” (Farga)

“Do you not like it? I don’t hate it, though.” (Ura)

“This is my first time seeing it as well.” (Musashi)

“Yeah, I think it’s nice too!” (Cleran)

“Hee, it’s kinda unusual.” (Doraemon)

“Oh my, that is very cute.” (Eljiela)

“Kyaakya!” (Cosmos)

Well then, considering everyone other than Farga and I liked it, what exactly is unusual about this you ask?

It’s the huge, extremely colourful wall surrounding the city.

There’s blue, there’s pink, there’s yellow, and a mix up of other colours that look like a rainbow.

Furthermore, there’s an arch next to the wall, and a huge heart is on the top of it for some reason.

“Commander, was it really fine to bring these guys here?” (Half-fishman)

“We can’t just not believe someone of the Gabbana name. Besides, it’s a rule to let people through to 『Black Princess』-sama, regardless of who they are. Shinsengumi soldiers will probably be in the city too, so it should be fine.” (Half-fishman)

While we had been taken aback, Musashi reacted to something that the half-fishmen said behind us.

“Wha, what! Are we allowed to have an audience with Black Princess-sama?” (Musashi)

Black Princess? What, another princess?
She’s probably someone amazing considering how surprised Musashi is, but after the princess of the empire and the princess of the sky, normal princesses won’t surprise me, alright?

“Oi, damn demi-human. Who is that Black Princess you’re talking about?” (Farga)

“U, umu, I have not met her either, however, she is the lady who developed this land and made this Jaykay City. She is a princess of the dark elf kingdom that was said to have been destroyed.” (Musashi)

“What? Dark elf, you say?” (Farga)

Wao, here it is, it’s THE fantasy again.
However, I didn’t think I would meet a dark elf before an elf.

“Wait a minute. The dark elf race was detested for being the cursed race among the demi-humans. Love and Money didn’t even get involved with their country, it was just destroyed through the domestic conflict between demi-humans, right?” (Farga)

“Umu, you are correct, Farga-dono. Indeed, the dark elf country was destroyed through conflict in the Demi-human Continent, and their race has gone almost completely extinct.” (Musashi)

“Oi, then, why the hell is that Black Princess alive and even respected?” (Farga)

“U~mu, I will explain that while we walk..... commander, could I ask you something?” (Musashi)

It sounds like there are some circumstances around this country and the princess, but Musashi asked the half-fishman a question after closing her mouth

for a moment.

“Commander, I have only heard it through rumours, but do you really have to change clothes to enter the Jaykay city?” (Musashi)

..... Hah? Change clothes?

“Yes, you do.” (Half-fishman)

Wait a minute, what clothes?

“Oi, Musashi, what do you mean by that?” (Velt)

“Do we have to change our clothes? Into what?” (Cleran)

Like, why do we have to change our clothes instead of going through some inspection before entering a town?

Musashi answers flusteredly as Cleran and I ask her.

“I don’t know the details, but it is apparently Black Princess-sama’s preference. You no longer have to wear them after your thirties, but young people in their teens and twenties are forced to wear it.” (Musashi)

“Preference?” (Velt)

“Umu. According to the rule that Black Princess-sama decided on, if you want to enter the Jaykay city..... you have to wear a『Bleizer』,『Gakuuran』or a『Seilor outfit』, and if you are a girl, a『Miniskirt』too.” (Musashi) (TL Note: Blazer, gakuran, sailor outfit)

“Wha, what? I’ve never heard of them before.” (Ura)

Ura’s reaction is the normal one.

“..... Hah?” (Velt)

My reaction is the strange one in this world.

I couldn’t sort out my mind at all, but just one thing was clear.

Even though I was sure I wouldn’t be surprised, something else surprised me. I was so surprised to the point that the news of humanity’s great allied forces losing, slipped out of my head.

Chapter 114: Obeying the city

The city was half the height of the empire, and it seemed like it was made under the assumption that it wouldn't be attacked.

Furthermore, the townscape I can see through the gate is very messy.

In the Elfarshia Kingdom and the Archline Empire, the lines, materials, heights etc of buildings were all unified, which made nice, symmetrical streets.

However, this『Jaykay City』is different. The lines, materials, heights, widths, and even colours of buildings are different.

The number『139』is written on the buildings that are, for some reason, circular instead of rectangular, a bronze dog statue is just standing at a random spot, and demi-humans are meeting up there.....

“But man, I didn't think I would have to change into these clothes.” (Velt)

Black trousers and a black tunic with gold-painted buttons from top-to-bottom. I've never put on the hook or the first button, and keeping the second button open is obligatory.

Although some people kept all the buttons open, I was the type to button most of them up.

At any rate, this is nostalgic. It's been more than five, ten years since I wore this. I felt confusion at the clothing from my past life, but I couldn't stop smiling.

“A gakuran, huh.” (Velt)

A black gakuran.

Clothes provided to middle schoolers and high schoolers. They're the clothes you wear more than your casual clothes every year.

“Hou. Most people are bewildered by these clothes, but it looks like you were able to wear it without hesitation.” (Half-fishman)

We're in the dressing room next to the gate because there's a rule that says we have to change into the uniform here before entering.

It makes no sense and it's stupid. And yet, it troubled me since I actually felt a little better instead.

“Damn it. This is so troublesome.” (Farga)

Farga came out carrying his spear in a long bag while mumbling complaints. He had a beige coloured, buttonless uniform that has a hook pulling in both sides instead.

The hook is painted red, and it kinda..... suits him way too much.

“Oi, stupid brother, you took it in pretty easily, but do you know what the hell this is?” (Farga)

“Hm~, well, let’s see. I guess I could tell you since I’ve already told Forna about it.” (Velt)

But man, I didn’t think I would see Farga in a uniform.

If he rode a train like that, all the passengers would make a huge fuss.

“This, this is all I could wear!” (Doraemon)

Dora came out next. Like, I don’t think Dora even has to wear a uniform, but he probably didn’t like being left out, so he put a hat on.

Ohh, good on him.

“Ta-dah~. Does it look good on me? Does it look good on me? Apparently, it’s the girl version of the clothes that Farga’s wearing. Does it look good on me?” (Cleran)

Cleran came out next, showing off her uniform by spreading both her hands. She’s wearing the girl version of Farga’s clothes. It’s beige coloured, and there’s a red ribbon at the base of her neck.

And, there’s also the obligatory miniskirt. I mean, it’s not mini from my perspective, since it only goes just above the knees. Not even a teacher’s pet would care about that length.

“Ohhh! Your, your skirt is way too short! It suits you though.” (Doraemon)

“Thank you. Hey~, Farga, how is it? How is it? Otouto-kun, you too, how does your big sis look?” (Cleran)

“Ah~..... you look like you would come out in an adult video.” (Velt)

“This is a damn farce.” (Farga)

Was Cleran in her teens? Or was she in her twenties? Either way, Cleran and Farga, who are over eighteen, shouldn’t have to wear the uniform.

What is that Black Princess thinking?

It's her preference? I mean, it is pretty funny though.

“Kyakyakya, abuu!” (Cosmos)

“Fufu, this is wonderful. Clothes from the land world are very lovely.” (Eljiela)

No, wait a minute.....

“That kind of uniform only exists in a manga! Like, that's not even a miniskirt!” (Velt)

I reflexively retorted to Eljiela who came out, feeling embarrassed. Eljiela's tunic and long skirt were completely white, except for the large, red ribbon at her chest.

It just looks like the uniform that only princesses and rich girls from fantasies wear.

“Is, is that how it is? No way..... but, the others felt tight around my chest, so this was the only size that fit me..... they also said this was the only skirt long enough for me.....” (Eljiela)

“..... Hm~m, Eljiela-chan, you're really going to say that~, hee~, in front of me, when my chest already stopped growing~.” (Cleran)

“Kya, kyaa, Cleran-san!” (Eljiela)

“What is up with these breasts! These tasty looking breasts! I'm going to eat them up!” (Cleran)

“No, noo, kyaa, please stop it, Cleran-san! My breasts are only for Cosmos and Velt-sama.....” (Eljiela)

At any rate, it's strange.

Even though that uniform just looks like cosplay, it suits her.

Furthermore, her huge breasts give off a sacred feeling, rather than looking sexy.

She looks like a tidy pupil that goes to school early every morning to pray at the school church.

The fact that she's carrying a baby too, makes her look like a holy mother, rather than looking like someone who became pregnant as a student.

“Well, imitations are just imitations. They aren't real.” (Velt)

It's cosplay.

Farga and Cleran have already passed a high schooler's age, and Eljiela's clothes don't actually exist in real life.

That's why other than my gakuran, the others don't feel that nostalgic.....

"Ve, Velt~, thi, this skirt, is short..... it feels breezy, or rather, people can see my un, underwear when the wind blows or if I go up any stairs....." (Ura)

"That's iiiiiiiiiiiit!" (Velt)

I reflexively shouted as I saw the real deal finally appear.

"U, uwa, wha, what is it, Velt, why are you so excited?" (Ura)

"Na, nah, it was just out of reflex." (Velt)

Ura came out. A navy blue blazer with an emblem at the chest, and a navy blue, checkered micro-mini skirt. It's so short that Ura's restlessly pulling on the hem and holding down the backside while blushing.

It really is short. Thinking back on how people wore this every day, it's actually pretty scary.

"Wa~o, Ura-chan, that's so cute!" (Cleran)

"Hyaaaa, it looks good! That seriously looks good! Ura-neesan, you're too dazzling!" (Doraemon)

"Oh my, wonderful. Ura-san, it suits you a lot." (Eljiela)

Beautiful..... I guess so.

"You really, think that? Velt..... how is it?" (Ura)

"Ye, yeah, it looks good on you. Like, you suit it the most." (Velt)

"Then, I guess it's fine..... but can't I do something about this skirt? Being seen by anyone other than you, is a bit....." (Ura)

"Nah, it's..... supposed to be like that. Besides, you can't actually see anything, so don't worry about it." (Velt)

"I see..... okay." (Ura)

Leaving aside her red eyes and her demon horn, her silky, beautiful silver hair combined with her uniform makes her look kinda like an international student. Furthermore, her embarrassment of the mini skirt is somewhat exciting. Although, rather than beautiful, she's more..... cu.....

"Well then, let us go!" (Musashi)

A student in a kendo club wearing a super-orthodox, white sailor uniform..... Musashi, came out.

Nevermind, I think Musashi suits it the most. There really are students like her. A mini skirt on Musashi is surprising, and it's quite cute.

"Everyone, thank you very much. You will now have to go through the entrance procedure, but I will no longer be guiding you. I have already asked other people to guide you the rest of the way." (Half-fishman)

"Oh, okay. Thanks for helping us out." (Velt)

"Don't mention it. Besides, Black Princess-sama will be the one who decides what will happen to you." (Half-fishman)

Leaving those words behind, the half-fishman saw us off without passing through the gate.

Now that I think about it, I never asked for his name, but who was he? I guess I can just ask him some other time.

We waved at the half-fishmen that were heading back to their positions.

"He said some other people would guide us, but I wonder who's going to come. I hope they don't just attack us all of a sudden." (Cleran)

"It should be okay. They believed us, so as long as we don't cause any problems....." (Musashi)

Then, as we were talking, three short demi-human girls appeared in front of us.

All three of them were wearing the same sailor uniform as Musashi, and were carrying bamboo sword bags.

"Are you the intruders that Black Princess-sama will interview!?" (?)

She sounded like an energetic, cheeky girl.

She had long, emerald hair that was tied up behind her, with tiger ears and a tiger tail..... huh?

"Jubei, don't be so unfriendly to someone you meet for the first time." (?)

This girl had braided black hair with cat ears and a cat tail..... huh?

"We're going to show you around and watch over you..... wait, huh?" (?)

This girl had light brown hair in a ponytail, with fox ears and a fox tail..... huh?

““““Huh?”””” (Velt, Farga, Ura, Musashi)

Farga, Ura, Musashi and I stiffened up in front of the three short demi-humans swordswomen.

And then,

“Be, Benkei! Ushiwaka! Jubei!” (Musashi)

“Si, sis!” (Jubei)

“Musashi-sama!” (Ushiwaka)

“Elder sister!” (Benkei)

The four of them reflexively embrace each other.

It’s understandable for Cleran and the others to be confused.

Like, even we’re surprised.

I didn’t think Musashi’s younger sister and her friends would reunite with us like this.

Chapter 115: Pseudo JK

We parted with Musashi's sister and her friends, warriors of the Shinsengumi, on the journey to Shiromu.

Even though we only quarrelled with Love and Money recently, it feels like it happened a long time ago.

"Sis! Siiis! Sis! I was worried to death~! I wanted to meet you to death~!"
(Jubei)

"Musashi-sama, I was so worried! All I heard was that you were dismissed!"
(Ushiwaka)

"Our hearts were about to burst open when we heard you were leaving with humans!" (Benkei)

The three short girls clung to Musashi as hard as they could. With that uniform on, they just look like middle schoolers.

"I'm sorry for leaving without telling you guys anything. However, I was always thinking about you three." (Musashi)

Musashi each gave a head pat and a hug to them. The dignified, mature face she had was something we seldom saw.

"Hee~, Musashi-chan's younger sister is so~ cu~te~." (Cleran)
"Oh my, I did not know that Musashi-san had a younger sister." (Eljiela)
"Hm~m, a lot of things must've happened before she met us~." (Doraemon)
"Abuu." (Cosmos)

I gave them a simple explanation of what happened with the kidnapping, the slave trading and about Shiromu while abridging some details here and there. Now that I think about it, Musashi couldn't even say goodbye to them, so I guess it's not weird for them to be worried.

"Gih! You damn human! If only, if only you weren't there!" (Jubei)
"Yeah! If you didn't come to Shiromu back then, it wouldn't have turned out like this!" (Ushiwaka)

“Elder sister wouldn’t have had to be dismissed from the Shinsengumi!”
(Benkei)

The three suddenly glare at me with fierce eyes after that moving reunion.
I mean, it does make sense since I was the reason why it happened.

“Come on, stop it. That is rude to my lord.” (Musashi)
“Sis! Why did you let this guy be your lord!? He’s the one that took away your honour!” (Jubei)

“Jubei, please understand that lord is different to the humans we know.
Although he is violent, wild, has a mean mouth and personality..... he has his good parts..... oro?” (Musashi)

“What do you mean, he doesn’t have any good parts!” (Jubei)
“Ah, um, anyway! I can no longer live without lo, lord!” (Musashi)

Oi, Musashi! At least follow up with what you were saying.

“You, you can’t live without him.....! Oi, human! No way, did, did you, did you have sex with sis!?” (Jubei)

“I haven’t, you stupid girl! Like, at least be a little discreet, you idiot!” (Velt)
“What was that!? You really are the worst! Die die die! Die a thousand times! Die a lot! Sis was tricked! That, or she’s being threatened! This guy was cruel to her to death!” (Jubei)

“Ahh? Why would I be cruel to Musashi! I pamper her! Musashi~, come over here.” (Velt)

I beckon Musashi over and stroke her chin, tickling her.

“Lo, lord! N, no, that’s, nn, funyaa~~~~.” (Musashi)

Musashi crumbled down weakly with a flushed face.
Ohh, that’s amazing.

“See? I pamper her so much.” (Velt)
“Siiiiiiiiiiiis! My, my sis isn’t like this! Die! How dare you, how dare you change my sis!” (Jubei)
“Ah? You wanna fight? Oi, I’m strong, you know that?” (Velt)
“Shut up, die die die!” (Jubei)

That pissed me off a little. Should I make her cry?

As I thought that, Farga grabbed our necks and flung us away.

“Guoh.” (Velt)

“Ow~, human, what was that, diee!” (Jubei)

I look up in confusion and see Farga with his arms crossed in a daunting pose, looking down on us with a freezing glare.

“Shut the fuck up.” (Farga)

““ O, okay, sorry.”” (Velt & Jubei)

Jubei and I reflexively nodded in a seiza position against his intensity.

“Ahhahahhahaha, good one. Anyway, I’m surprised that the warriors of the rumoured Shinsengumi are going to guide us, and that one of them is Musashi-chan’s younger sister.” (Cleran)

“Ah, ye, yes. This is an important commercial city for the Demi-human Continent, but Black Princess-sama only wanted young people to guard the inside of the city.” (Ushiwaka)

“Yeah, which is why we’re guarding it.” (Benkei)

There’s no point killing time here for now.

“Um, so, we will guide you inside.” (Ushiwaka)

“Yeah, we’re going to guide you to Black Princess-sama.” (Benkei)

Jubei and I are still glaring at each other while sticking out our tongues, but at least we’ve entered the Jaykay City.

There, I saw something.

I saw such an abnormal, yet somewhat nostalgic scenery that made me stop caring about Jubei.

“So, so this is the Jaykay City!” (Velt)

“It’s so fucking messy.” (Farga)

A crowd of people were crossing paths inside.

Everyone had varying types of uniform, and some people even had ones that were customised for themselves.

And above all,

“Ehh, actuals?” (Demi-human)

“Yeah. The other day~, I went to a mixer with the Shinsengumi because my friend invited me~, but all of them were herbivores and seriously incompetent~.” (Demi-human)

“I seriously succeeded at a club yesterday. Or should I say, sex-ceeded?” (Demi-human)

“Ueei! That’s so lewd~, kyahahaha!” (Demi-human)

Some demi-humans were leaning against shop walls, sitting cross-legged or even squatting with miniskirts on.

“Look look~, aren’t these nails like, super~ adorbs?” (Demi-human)

“Ah, that’s totes cray-cray! Like, where’d you get them done?” (Demi-human)

“At『Ichi San Kyu』’s second floor and I got this compact with it.” (Demi-human)

Some demi-humans are showing off their flashy nails.

“He~i, hei hei hei! Defence defence, are you free right now? If you aren’t, then you’ll have to pierce my defences. If you are, then I’ll hold your hand!” (Demi-human)

“There’s going to be a party at that club over there, but do you wanna come? Since you’re really cute, I can pay for you.” (Demi-human)

And these demi-human guys look like playboys.

I’ll be frank. Rather than feeling like a different continent, this place felt like a different world.

“So, so this is the Jaykay City.” (Musashi)

“They don’t really seem like demi-humans. They look like completely different creatures.” (Cleran)

“Do, do they think that looks cute? Why do they need to be so unfashionable? Is there a meaning behind it?” (Ura)

“Is this another part of the land world’s culture?” (Eljiela)

“Rather than cute, they look cakey to me.” (Dorauemon)

Among the women wearing miniskirts, some dyed their hair strangely, made them into rolls, gave it volume, put on fake eyelashes, put on fake fingernails and some even went for a tanned-skin style. Like, there are even people who are wearing baggy socks!

Among the guys, some have their buttons all open, shirts sticking out,

earrings, and some of them even have mohawks.

And, the most amusing part of all of this, is that these people are all therianthropes that have animal ears

“This is the city that Black Princess-sama made. She awakened a culture called 『fashion』 that demi-humans didn't have until now, which gained support from many young demi-humans.” (Benkei)

“Demi-humans don't have good relations within their race, and the adults obviously quarrel with each other, but the current age of young people can understand each other through this culture.” (Ushiwaka)

I've heard that demi-humans cause wars even in their own continent. So, the Shinsengumi was made to maintain the public order in the continent. However, this is contributing to the mutual understanding of demi-humans and stopping wars in another way.

“Hey, you know, apparently Black Princess-sama is releasing her new product in front of the Hachiko statue today.” (Demi-human)

“Actuals!? Wow, Black Princess-sama is seriously so charismatic! She's seriously such a god!” (Demi-human)

“What's she releasing?” (Demi-human)

“It's this thing called 『puurikura』 that uses copy magic.” (Demi-human)

The demi-humans get excited about it together. But man, their races are really different.

Despite the great number of races, like the cat-man race and the mouse-man race, which are natural enemies, or the dog-man race and monkey-man race, which are like cats and dogs, all of them are happily talking with each other. They almost look like female high-school students in Shibuya.

“Purikura, huh. Sounds interesting. We should do it too.” (Velt)

I unintentionally smiled.

“Velt? Ah! That face! That's the face I hate so much, which you made when you saw my father, Musashi's grandfather, Mackey Mouse and princess Arsha!” (Ura)

“Lord, do you know something about it!?” (Musashi)

My comrades easily found out that I know something.
I nodded honestly.

“Yeah. I don’t know who she is, but they might unexpectedly be someone I know. Black Princess-sama..... I’m not sure if she’ll be an enemy or an ally, though.” (Velt)

With an uncontrollable grin, I followed the people running towards Black Princess-sama.

Chapter 116: Gyalf

A long line had been made in the wide, city plaza.

“Kyaa, that’s seriously so cute! I’m totes putting this on my dagger. Hey, Taa-kun, let’s both put it on something.” (Demi-human)

“Uu~, that’s embarrassing but fine! I’ll put my『puurikura』with my girlfriend on my sword.” (Demi-human)

“Guys, let’s all take one together!” (Demi-human)

“Oh my gosh, yeah we should!” (Demi-human)

“Hey, do you wanna swap?” (Demi-human)

“I heard you can buy this ‘puuribook’ thing, which you can put your puurikura in.” (Demi-human)

Puurikura. It’s totally purikura.

A purple robed demi-human magician is using copy magic to take photos and put them on a small piece of paper that can be stuck onto things.

All these people are here to try out the Black Princess’ new product. A lot of couple were taking pictures together, and it was a great success.

“Kuhahaha, I wonder if everyone was like this when purikura was first made in Japan.” (Velt)

“This is fucking worthless. What’s the point in getting a picture of your face with another person?” (Farga)

“I don’t really get it either.” (Dorauemon)

That’s what I thought too. Men especially, don’t really get this stuff. And yet.

“””””Sta~~~~re.””””” (Ura, Eljiela, Musashi and Cleran)

The women were all staring enviously, itching to take one.

“He, hey, Velt. Uh, you know. I don’t think it would be a bad idea to try it out together.” (Ura)

“Um, Velt-sama. If you are okay with it, would you like to, well, take one as a

family?” (Eljiela)

“Ha~~~~~, puurikura~, I also, ah, no no no.” (Musashi)

“Hey~, Farga~, hey~, can’t we at least do it once?” (Cleran)

“Aburu abuu abaru!” (Cosmos)

While glancing repeatedly, they were pulling on our clothes, trying to bring us into the line.

Do women really like that kind of stuff?

Guys probably like boasting about pictures they took with their girlfriends, but it’s not something that guys take the initiative in doing.

“I’m feeling good today, so I can take one with you if you want.” (Velt)

“Oh, ohh, Ve, Velt, really!? Then, u~m, u~m, wait here! These signs show references for posing! Out of these, uh..... okay! How about this『kisspuri』 one!” (Ura)

“No!” (Velt)

“Wh, why!? It says it’s the standard one for couples! See! See!” (Ura)

“I’m not doing that, dumbass! Let’s just take a normal one, not an embarrassing one!” (Velt)

“Uh, uh, the, then..... hm? Thi, this one! Velt! I’ll give up on the kiss, so let’s take this one instead! This one, where you have to hug me from the back!” (Ura)

“The aonaro hug? Really? No one in this world would know what the osunaro hug is.” (Velt)

I wanted to just take a normal one, but she’s literally crying, pleading me to take it with her.

I mean, she was depressed at the empire and pretty shocked at the matter with Eljiela, so maybe this much would be fine.....

“Alright, fine, let’s do it.” (Velt)

“Ve, Velt! Veeeeeeeelt!” (Ura)

It’s embarrassing, but if this much is enough to make her happy.....

“Abyuu!” (Cosmos)

“Ow!” (Velt)

“Abyuru! Abu! Bunpa! Paa! Bunpa! Paa!” (Cosmos)

“O, oi, don’t get so angry.” (Velt)

My cheeks were suddenly pinched by a pouting Cosmos.

“Cosmos is unhappy since we want to take one with you too, Velt-sama.”
(Eljiela)

“Bappun!” (Cosmos)

Cosmos nodded to Eljiela’s words.

“So, Velt-sama. After you take one with Ura-san..... please take one in this pose with us!” (Eljiela)

“Kyappu! Kyappu!” (Cosmos)

Eljiela and Cosmos excitedly pointed at a certain sign.

The pose on that sign was called the『family version』, where the baby’s in the middle, and the father and mother are kissing the baby’s cheeks from both sides.

“I’m not doing that oooooooooooooone!” (Velt)

What’s up with that happy, cozy photo?

I reflexively shouted, unexpectedly making Eljiela talk to Cosmos with a depressed face.

Then.....

“No, no way, Velt-sama..... I, see..... that was unfortunate, wasn’t it, Cosmos?” (Eljiela)

“Agyuru..... bu~..... hogyaa hogyaa hogyaa hogyaa hogyaa hogyaa hogyaa!”
(Cosmos)

That’s unfair.....

“Come on, can’t you just take one with them, otouto-kun?” (Cleran)

“We, well, I don’t mind as long as you do the asuunarou hug thing with me.”
(Ura)

“Bro, you can’t just make Cosmos-chan cry like that.” (Dorauemon)

“Lord, I believe you should meet their expectations.” (Musashi)

“This is fucking stupid. Just take it already.” (Farga)

“How dare you trick my sis when you already have a child! Die die! ” (Jubei)

“Sleazebag.” (Ushiwaka)

“Lowlife.” (Benkei)

Ahh, stop it, just stop it.

“Okay, I just have to take it, right!? Geez, stop going around, telling me what to do!” (Velt)

“Oh my, thank you, Velt-sama! This is wonderful, isn’t it, Cosmos? Your paapa is truly a kind person.” (Eljiela)

“Unpa! Unpa! Unpa!” (Cosmos)

Ah~, damn it.

I wonder what the people around us think of me.

“Hey, seriously, what’s happening over there? He’s taking pictures with his girlfriend, his wife and his child, like, what the hell?” (Demi-human)

“Wait, he’s a human! Why’s a human and a demon here? Are they slaves or something?” (Demi-human)

“Hyu~, that demon and the winged lady are both so hot.” (Demi-human)

“Who’s that human they’re serving?” (Demi-human)

“Like, I feel like I’ve seen him before.” (Demi-human)

We probably made too much of a racket, since the people around us were getting noisy.

I knew we would stand out.

“Come on, let’s just take them already.” (Velt)

“Oh, ohh, yeah. Ufu, ufufufufu.” (Ura)

“Aren’t you getting a little too happy?” (Velt)

“Fufufu. Let’s send one of our puurikura in a letter to Melma-san!” (Ura)

He’s probably going to laugh really hard if we send him our purikura.
Well, that’s still better than showing Forna though.
If Forna saw it, she would definitely send me flying.

“Welcome. Here, come to this dark room to take a puurikura.” (Robed demi-human)

The robed demi-human brought us to a rectangular box, so Ura and I got in first.

“Please take whichever pose you would like in front of this mirror. I will use

copy magic to take a picture of your pose at my signal.” (Demi-human magician)

It's purikura, but of course, they don't have any machines or anything to automatically say the signal.

We faced the large mirror in the dark room.

"Now, please take your poses." (Robed demi-human)

Alright, let's do it.

"I'm, I'm going to do it, okay?" (Velt)

"Su, sure. Do it." (Ura)

I put my hands around Ura from the back and hugged her..... she, she smells nice.

I thought her body would be firmer since hand-to-hand combat is her forte, but she's soft..... and her hair is silky.....

“Nn, Velt.....” (Ura)

She said that with an affectionate voice..... wait, Ura's blushing so hard. Crap, this is too embarrassing.

“Alright, on one, three, two, one! Okay, done.” (Robed demi-human)

There was a flash of magic light, and then it ended.

As we left the dark room, the robed demi-human handed us our purikura.

Ura showed the most joy she ever had when she received that purikura.

[illegible]

Oooooooooooooooooooooooooooooooooooooo!" (Ura)

I, isn't she embarrassed?

She's on her knees, raising the purikura up to the sky.

“This is great! Great! Great! Wha, what should I do with this, uh, for now, I’ll put one in my purse…… and then, where else~.” (Ura)

Stop it, don't go sticking them to stuff thoughtlessly.

You're a technically a demon princess, so you shouldn't be dancing for joy, it's disgraceful.

“We are up next, Velt-sama.” (Eljiela)

“Paa! Dadadada, au!” (Cosmos)

“Ah~, alright, I get it! This is the last one though, okay!” (Velt)

Now I’m going to take the parent and child pose. Seriously, what’s up with this? Am I going to be the first person in the world to take a parent and child pose straight after a lover pose?

However, I didn’t take that pose, because.....

“Wow, it’s really booming. I guess it just means that girls are girls, even if they’re demi-humans.” (?)

Everyone in the plaza got excited the moment they saw who said that.

“Wait, oh my god, oh my god, oh my god! Black Princess-sama is here!”
(Demi-human)

“Crap, holy! Awesome!” (Demi-human)

“Hyaa, I’m so lucky! I can’t believe I get to see Black Princess-sama!” (Demi-human)

“Uoo, Black Princess-sama, you’re beautiful today too.” (Demi-human)

“Ahh, you never fail to surprise us. As I thought, you really are an extraordinary genius!” (Demi-human)

People basked the princess in excessive praises as she walked towards them.

“Oh, ohh, so she is the one known as Black Princess-sama.” (Musashi)

“She, she certainly is amazing in a lot of different ways.” (Ura)

“Wa, wao, what kind of race is she from?” (Cleran)

She looked like an ultra-rare creature.

This is my first time seeing something like that in this world.

I mean, it’s definitely my first time seeing a dark elf, but that thing is completely different to a dark elf.

“Wai, wait a minute..... that’s going way too far.....” (Velt)

Long ears and brown skin are features special to dark elves, but to be frank, something outshone both those things.

Was it her bewitching slender body and large breasts? No, Eljiela would overwhelm her in a big breast battle.

Then, was it her miniskirt together with her tight, collar shirt?

No.....

“Uwa~, Black Princess-sama’s nails are flower patterned and super colourful!”
(Demi-human)

“Her hair is beige-coloured like milk tea this month. Every colour looks beautiful on her.” (Demi-human)

“Ahh~n, her hairstyle today is seriously so cool! Seriously such a god! Like, she’s just the best!” (Demi-human)

“We wouldn’t be able to pull off that legendary, ascending pegasus hairstyle!”
(Demi-human) (TL Note: <https://www.pixivision.net/en/a/1115>)

Like, almost everything about her is amazing!

“No, elves are supposed to be like, fairies of the forest, aren’t they!? I don’t know much about dark elves, but we’re in THE fantasy right now! She’s just a cakey, *ganguro gyaru! The otakus of the world will get pissed off if they saw that! You’re wrecking all of their dreams!” (Velt) (TL Note: Fashion style of using a lot of makeup, have panda-ish eyes, spray tanned, wear a lot of colours and have dyed hair. Don’t know if there is an actual word to describe this in English.)

She also has an accessory with a star mark and a ring.
Anyone would become speechless if they see something like that.

“This is why Black Princess-sama is different to other elves.” (Musashi)

Musashi was quite shocked by her unimaginable appearance, but she still opened her mouth, albeit timidly.

“Everyone unanimously says that she is not an elf, but a mutated creature. On top of that, Black Princess-sama herself claimed to be a『Gyaru Elf』, aka a『Gyalf』.” (Musashi)

Yeah, that’s definitely not an elf. That’s a gyalf.
I just stayed still, speechless and overcome with surprise for a while.

“Ah, geez, you guys are totes too noisy. This is so~ embarrassing.” (Black Princess)

The godly, charismatic gyalf waved her hand at everyone and said that, but like, how am I supposed to talk to her?

Chapter 117: Pause

So that's the famous, ascending pega-something hairstyle, huh. I've seen it in magazines and on TV, but I didn't think I would end up seeing the real thing in a fantasy world.

On top of that, the fact that a dark elf has that hairstyle is seriously a miraculous combination.

"Hiya!" (Black Princess)

""""""Hiya!"""""" (Demi-humans)

Black Princess suddenly greeted the young demi-humans who had gathered for the purikura.

Furthermore,

"Man, you guys are so hyped!" (Black Princess)

""""""That's true!"""""" (Demi-humans)

"Then, can you seriously enjoy yourselves today?" (Black Princess)

""""""Sure thing!"""""" (Demi-humans)

What the hell, that's a total rip-off! (TL Note: Of some Japanese gag)

"Oi, I know none of them knows the original joke, but you're overdoing it! Like, you're soaking them in Japan's culture way too much! Seriously, what the hell happened to you!" (Velt)

"What happened, Velt, why are you so upset!" (Ura)

"Lo, lord, ple, please calm down." (Musashi)

No, I won't calm down. There are too many things to retort to. I swear, she's definitely enjoying her reincarnated life even more than Kagami is.

Well, I don't know which of my classmates this Black Princess-sama is though. Like, she's so popular with everyone that my retort just disappeared in the other voices, and she hasn't noticed me at all.

"Black Princess-sama~, puurikura is the best!" (Demi-human)

“So into it! So hot~!” (Demi-human)

“Black Princess-sama, take one with me too!” (Demi-human)

“Hype!” (Demi-human)

What’s up with these guys anyway! Demi-humans shouldn’t be looking like this in a fantasy world!

Even in Asakura Ryuuma’s time, there weren’t any stereotypically lighthearted guys like this in Shibuya.

Although I have heard that most demi-humans are influenced easily, aren’t these guys taking it to the extreme?

“Uiii, how was yesterday’s mixer?” (Black Princess)

“It was seriously such a fail~. Black Princess-sama, please introduce me to a cool guy~.” (Demi-human)

“Ha~? I’m not interested in mixers though.” (Black Princess)

“Yeah, Black Princess-sama wouldn’t be satisfied with guys from mixers.” (Demi-human)

“Ye, yeah~. There, there’s seriously no guy that wouldn’t fall for me.” (Black Princess)

“Black Princess-sama~! Please come to our next concert!” (Demi-human)

“Ha~? I don’t wanna go to your crappy concert. You’re not getting any better ‘cause all you do is try to pick up girls.” (Black Princess)

They all call her princess, but they just look like friends.
Like, everyone in the city is casually talking to her, and considering she has something to say to each person, the Black Princess probably knows everyone pretty well.

“Amazing. Although she is from a ruined country, she is still royalty, and yet, how can she be so close with everyone?” (Musashi)

“I mean, the fucking demon that worked in the shitty restaurant in the Elfarshia Kingdom was a former princess. Well, I get that this damn princess is a strange creature though.” (Farga)

“Hm~m, is it because I’m human, that I can’t follow what they’re saying~? Or..... because I’m not young..... no, it can’t be, right?” (Cleran)

“There are all sorts of people in the land world.” (Eljiela)

“I’m not good with this stuff. It’s seriously too much for me!” (Dorauemon)

I honestly can't tell if the Black Princess is strange or amazing.
Rather, there are just too many things that I'm curious about.

"Hey, Musashi. Why does everyone love her so much, even though she's a dark elf? Yeah, she created a new culture that was liked by them, but there's something else to it, right?" (Velt)

I'm interested in that.
What happened to this woman who created such a thoughtless, lighthearted world?

She's a former dark elf princess whose country was destroyed, after all.

"I want to know too. In a way, we do have similar circumstances, but if I didn't have Velt, I would have been executed or have committed suicide a long time ago. And yet, why is the Black Princess loved so much and why does she seem so happy?" (Ura)

Ura's country was also destroyed, and her family was killed.
I don't even want to imagine what would've happened to her if I hadn't reunited with Samejima.

However, the Black Princess is different.

She doesn't look like she feels any sorrow at all.

However, she's not crazy like Kagami either.

It just looks like she's cool with anything as long as she can live every day happily and at ease.

"I do not know the details either, but Black Princess-sama's real name is Althea Majestic..... and she is under the protection of the invincible mercenary soldier,『Wonder Beast Yubamensch』, one of the Four Heavenly Beast Demi-humans, and the one who destroyed the dark elf country."
(Musashi)

""Bubuuuuuuu!"" (Velt, Ura, Cleran)

Yes, I burst out in surprise right now.
Only Dora, Eljiela and Cosmos weren't surprised, as they didn't know of his name.

"Yu, Yubamensch!? He's like, one of the super famous, Four Heavenly Beast Demi-humans isn't he!?" (Velt)

“That’s another unexpected fucking big shot in the shadows.” (Farga)

“I have heard of him too. He doesn’t belong to any country or army, and just whimsically fights in wars, leaving behind great feats that made history. Apparently, if a country was able to take in Yubamensch, the power balance in the Demi-human Continent would change completely.” (Ura)

“I know about him too. He supposedly swam to the Demon Continent to buy this alcohol that tasted really good. That day, even though one of the Seven Great Demon Kingdom’s armies was mobilised, Yubamensch almost completely destroyed them and got through.” (Cleran)

That’s quite a surprising name. Ever since the matter with Esamu, I really didn’t want to have anything to do with the Four Heavenly Beast Demi-humans.

“Um~, bro, I’ve heard it a few times before, but what is that something-something Beast Demi-human title?” (Doraueemon)

“Is it a famous title or alias in the land world?” (Eljiela)

“Aburyu?” (Cosmos)

Ahh, right, these guys don’t know about him.

While holding my sore head, I explained..... wait, why do I have to explain fantasy stuff to residents of a fantasy world?

“It’s the title that’s given to the four strongest people in the Demi-human Continent. It’s kinda like the Ten Heroes of Light title that Forna and Arsha have, or the Seven Great Demon Kings title that Chirotan had.” (Velt)

“Hyaa! There’s a demi-human version of that!?” (Doraueemon)

“I see. They certainly are amazing beings.” (Eljiela)

“Abyuu~.” (Cosmos)

That’s right. Furthermore, the big titles in the Demon Continent and the Humanity Continent are given to people based on their achievements, lineage and other stuff like that, but it’s different for demi-humans.

Your social status and achievements don’t matter, it’s just given to the four strongest people in the Demi-human Continent.

I don’t know who’s choosing them or what criterion they base it on, but it’s said that the demi-human title surpasses the other two titles.

“The Four Heavenly Beast Demi-humans. There are only three left since one

of them, the『Warlord Kaiser』was defeated by the hero five years ago, but even so, they're still such monsters that every human kid would know of them. 『Fighting God Esamu』,『Wonder Beast Yubamensch』and『Lewd Beast Empress Erosvitch』. Well, only Erosvitch is actually on the front lines in the Divine Being Continent among these three though.” (Velt)

“Oh, oh~, that kinda just~, gives me the shivers.” (Doraemon)

Yeah, it gives me shivers too.

However, that's exactly why I'm curious.

“And so, the question is, why did one of the Four Heavenly Beast Demi-humans, who participated in the war to destroy the dark elf country, take the Black Princess into his protection?” (Velt)

I want to know why the Black Princess can live happily, even after losing her country and family.

Why she was taken in by one of the Four Heavenly Beast Demi-humans instead of being killed.

Why she can smile like that, after being taken in by the person who robbed her of her country and family.

And above all, I want to know whether she really is my classmate.

Although I'm usually not interested in stuff like this, questions kept boiling up inside of me.

“Hm?” (?)

However, one of my questions was going to be answered immediately.

“Ah.....” (?)

The second our eyes met with the Black Princess, her expression suddenly hardened up.

And then,

[illegible]

She pointed at us and raised a loud voice.

The young demi-humans of the Jaykay City all looked at us, wondering what was going on.

And then, the Black Princess shouted with a trembling tone while pointing at us.

“Tho, those guys! They’re the ones that were projected in the sky the other day! The guys that beat up Kagami and captured him!!!!” (Althea)

Ah, so she really is one of my classmates.....

“Shit.....” (Farga)

“Tch, everyone’s looking at us!” (Ura)

“Lord, I will definitely protect you! So, please restrain from doing anything violent!” (Musashi)

“What’s going on? We might get eaten up by them.” (Cleran)

“Hyaaaaaaaaaaa, crap!” (Dorauemon)

“..... I will not let them lay a single finger on Cosmos.” (Eljiela)

“Abyuru~.” (Cosmos)

Farga and the others put themselves on guard just in case, but I slowly walked past them.

“Oi, stupid brother!” (Farga)

“Velt, come back! It’s dangerous!” (Ura)

“Lord!” (Musashi)

Don’t worry, it’s not dangerous..... I think.

“Ah~, hello, nice to meet you, it’s been a while. I’m Asakura Ryuuma.” (Velt)

“..... Hah?” (Althea)

Black Princess’ eyes turned into dots. She froze in her pointing posture and finally let out words after a few seconds.

“..... Seriously..... serious?” (Althea)

“I’m seriously serious.” (Velt)

“For real?” (Althea)

“Gigantically real.” (Velt)

“..... Y, y’know..... I’m actually Biyama.” (Althea)

“Yeah..... out of the people in our class, I figured it could only be you.” (Velt)

.....

pause.....

“Ah~, but man, you’re amazing. What was it again? Black Princess-sama, god, charisma, gyal, like, you’re ripping-off way too many things.” (Velt)
“Hah? You~..... you’re the one..... that’s getting carried away. You called yourself the number one baddest guy in the wheat fields of the world with a triumphant look. Like, that’s totes chuuni.” (Althea)
“Kuh, guh, a, about that..... ah~, kuhahahahahahaha.” (Velt)
“Aha, ahahahahahahaha.” (Althea)

.....
pause.....

““So~ embarrassing~~~~~.”” (Velt and Althea)
Realising that we both saw each other getting carried away, we squatted in embarrassment, and no voices could reach us for a while.

Chapter 118: Fizzy drink

Yubamensch's name is based on Übermensch (Superman in German), his name is actually a bit different, so I chose to just change the first half of it. (ユーバメンシュ = Yubamensch; ユーバーメンシュ = Übermensch) Also, the title is actually carbonic acid, but that just sounds awkward lol.

—————

After dissing each other's sensitive topics, Black Princess-sama, aka Biyama, and I decided to have a talk.

We walked on the main street, gathering great attention from the demi-humans.

“Hey, is that『Ichi San Kyuu』thing the one from Shibuya?” (Velt)

“Yep.” (Althea)

“What about the hachiko thing?” (Velt)

“The Hachikou statue.” (Althea)

“..... What about the gyaru items?” (Velt)

“I mean, those are must-have items for me, so I just ended up making them, y’know?” (Althea)

We continued walking without knowing what to talk about or what to retort to.

“You beat up Kagami, but did y’know it was him?” (Althea)

“Yeah. I didn’t feel guilty at all too.” (Velt)

“Hm~m, well, whatevs, that guy was a mega idiot.” (Althea)

“That reminds me, did you guys reunite? Did he say anything to you?” (Velt)

“Hah? Me? Yeah, we met, but I totes couldn’t keep up with him. Like, he said stuff about destroying the world, which was seriously cray-cray.” (Althea)

I see. Kagami was messed up, so this woman might actually be the normal one.

At the very least, I don’t think she’s going to do anything crazy to the world.

“Like, are you seriously Asakura though?” (Althea)

“Yeah.” (Velt)

“..... Hm~m..... it feels so weird, y’know, ‘cause us two problem children reunited as an elf and a champion.” (Althea)

“True. I mean, my chuuni-ness has been going up recently, and I seriously don’t want to be called a champion. It was for my achievement of beating up Kagami, after all.” (Velt)

“Whatevs. He dug his own grave.” (Althea)

“You’re actually pretty cool, huh.” (Velt)

“Nah, I just never liked him.” (Althea)

“I just don’t care about it anymore, to be honest.” (Velt)

Unlike Kagami, she’s not messed up.

However, she hasn’t changed as much as Ayase and Samejima had.

That being said, she’s not wavering like Miyamoto either.

While feeling that I really didn’t get her, I let Biyama lead us.

“Uu~, Velt, what are you talking about?” (Ura)

“I did not think lord would even be Black Princess-sama’s acquaintance. How many people does he know?” (Musashi)

“Otouto-kun really is well-known ~.” (Cleran)

“As expected of Velt-sama.” (Eljiela)

Leaving aside why that’s expected of me, Ura and the others in the back are looking at us uneasily.

I was thinking about this before, but shouldn’t I just tell them already? As I wondered that, Biyama stopped in front of a certain place.

““Kay, we’re here. This is my house.” (Althea)

Rather than a house, it looked more like a tavern.

Like, this is totally a restaurant, isn’t it? There are tables and chairs inside, and I can see people eating too.

It’s quite big, but with that counter and everything else, it looked like a normal restaurant, rather than a princess’ house.

Well, there is a disco ball on the ceiling, so I guess that counts for something.

“““““Welcome home, princess.””””” (Maids)

No, it’s a bit different to a normal restaurant.

Like, there are colourful maids bowing to her!

They don't look like gyarus though, they look like normal women.

And then, once they saw us, they.....

""""""Welcome home, master."""""" (Maids)

Biyama gave us a small explanation to us, who were dumbfounded.

"It's a maid restaurant during the day and a club at night. This is the first shop that I started. It's called,『Arcadia』." (Althea)

I couldn't even be bothered thinking about stuff after hearing about this stupid shop that was named after a utopia.

"O, oi, Velt, what is with this shop? Did she just make it for fun?" (Ura)

"Despite being maids, they don't fucking look like it at all." (Farga)

"I did not know that waitresses in the land world were amicable people."
(Eljiela)

I mean, that's probably how you real royals see them, but don't retort to the small stuff.

People like these incomplete things too.

"Take a seat, I'll treat you. Hey, get everyone coke, 'kay?" (Althea)

"Certainly, princess." (Maid)

Biyama sat down on a chair around a big, circular table and ordered.
Hm?

"Wait, you have coke!?" (Velt)

"Ha? Don't look down on gyarus. I made it 'cause I seriously wanted to drink it."
(Althea)

"You're, you're..... unexpectedly amazing." (Velt)

Sensei made ramen. Samejima made karate. Miyamoto made kendo. Kagami made contraceptives.

Everyone developed all sorts of things with their knowledge from their past life, but Biyama might've surpassed everyone with the number of things she has developed.

"Um, lord..... would it be okay for me to ask you now?" (Musashi)

"Musashi?" (Velt)

“Um..... what kind of connection do you have with Black Princess-sama?”
(Musashi)

I guess it would bother her.
However, before I could explain, Biyama bent herself forward.

“Hah? Lord? You mean like, the master kind of lord? Ha? What’s up with that!? And she’s part of the Shinsengumi too! You’re a human, seriously, what the heck are you doing? And like, I only just realised, but what’s up with your group?” (Althea)

Everyone puffed up with pride and answered her question.

“I, I, I am lord’s loyal right arm who has overcome the wall between races!”
(Musashi)

“Hi, his lover and his future bride!” (Ura)

“His stepbrother.” (Farga)

“His big sis!” (Cleran)

“His follower!” (Doraueemon)

“Velt-sama’s wife. And, she is his daughter.” (Eljiela)

“Abyu!” (Cosmos)

I hit my head against the table after hearing that retort-worthy introduction.

“..... Hah..... pu, ahahahahahahahahaha! Seriously, what’s up with that! No way! Like, what? Your elder brother, elder sister, follower, subordinate, bride, wife and child, ahahahahahahaha!” (Althea)

“Guh, you, you’re laughing too much! It just turned out like this, okay!?” (Velt)

“Man~, that was great. Ah~, I laughed so hard when Kagami told me he made an evil, secret society, but you’re just so blessed that it’s even funnier. I can’t believe you’re a riajuu in your second life.” (Althea)

“Sor, sorry about that, geez.” (Velt)

“Huh? Didn’t you have another woman though? She was like, a princess and one of the Ten something-something.....” (Althea)

Ahh, she’s talking about Forna, huh. I didn’t know she saw her too.

“She’s my stupid sister and my stupid brother’s legal wife.” (Farga)
“No, wait, Farga. That hasn’t been decided yet..... I still have a chance.....” (Ura)
“Fufu, paapa is so popular, isn’t he? Cosmos.” (Eljiela)

“Kyah kyah!” (Cosmos)

“Wao, Eljiela-chan, you’re so composed even though you came in last.” (Cleran)

Hearing that, Biyama burst into laughter again.

“Oh my god, that’s so funny! Like, is that girl seriously your child?” (Althea)

“No, well, it’ll take way too long explaining it.....” (Velt)

“What up! I’m your papa’s friend, nice to meet you~.” (Althea)

“Hogyaa hogyaa hogyaa hogyaa!” (Cosmos)

“Uo, she started crying! Asakura, do something!” (Althea)

“Don’t get close to Cosmos with your monstrous face!” (Velt)

Damn it, she’s messing with my pace. I thought we were going to have more of a serious talk, but our conversation is super lighthearted.

“Oh~, but you know, some of them are actually connected to you.” (Velt)

“Ha? What’s that supposed to mean?” (Althea)

“Musashi here is Miyamoto’s grandchild, and Ura is Samejima’s daughter.”

(Velt)

“..... Eh, no way, seriously~? Uh, by the way, who was Miyamoto and Samejima again? Were they in our class?” (Althea)

“Eh..... they were our classmates, you know?” (Velt)

“Like, I got my memories back ten years ago, so I don’t actually remember all of our classmates.” (Althea)

You, you little! She really asked that!

Even I..... even I remember them!

“They were our classmates, and Miyamoto was in the kendo club, and Samejima was in the karate club!” (Velt)

“Ah, ah~, really? Soz. I didn’t really talk to the guys in our class, and hard working people in clubs were in a different world to me. Well, I just barely remembered Kagami since he was a playboy though.” (Althea)

“You, you’re kidding~..... like, how were you able to remember me, then?”

(Velt)

Like, if that’s how she is, wouldn’t she have forgotten about me too?

Then, Biyama started talking about it with a wry smile.

“Ahh, that’s ‘cause like~, well, y’know, I..... back then, I was trying to make

you fall for me.” (Althea)

""""Bubuuuuuuuuuuuuuu!!"""" (Everyone)

Even Ura and the others who didn't understand what we were talking about, were surprised by this.

“Gah, agaga, Ve, Velt, you, you!” (Ura)

“Lo, lord..... I, I truly would not expect anything less.” (Musashi)

“Oi, stupid brother. Give up on this shitty woman.” (Farga)

Did you not hear her say 'back then'?

“..... I remember seeing your leopard panties when you picked up your eraser in front of me.” (Velt)

“Ahaha, isn’t that nostalgic? I mean, there’s no way I’m gonna use leopard printed ones as a demi-human though.” (Althea)

“Uwa, you’re serious about stuff like that? Even though you’re a bitch.” (Velt)

“Haa? What do you mean I’m a bitch! Even if you include my past life, I’m still a virg..... like, y’know, doing stuff like that before marriage is.....” (Althea)

“Stop saying stuff that doesn’t suit your character, dumbass!” (Velt)

“Ha~? I don’t wanna be told that by you, who goes around making out with natives of a fantasy world. Like, having a lover and a bride and a wife is totes cray-cray! You used to be such an innocent delinquent!” (Althea)

“A ganguro woman shouldn’t be getting carried away, acting like a princess just because you made a strange culture popular in a fantasy world, that was all plagiarized from your past life!” (Velt)

To be honest, I feel like this reunion has turned out quite differently to how the other ones were.

Until now, we always started our conversation from when we died, to the stories of our second lives, and then yearned for our past life together. That's how it usually goes, and yet.....

“Haa, haa, haa, haa, haa, haa, haa.” (Velt)

“Fuu, fuu, fuu, fuu, fuu, fuu, fuu.” (Althea)

We're having a worthless quarrel in public, like, what the hell are we doing? On top of that, the surrounding customers and the people outside are looking at us in wonder.

“Um~, princess, master, I have brought the drinks.....” (Maid)

The maid said that, and then presented glasses with ice cubes in a black liquid.

It feels so nostalgic hearing the fizz of carbon dioxide and the clank of ice cubes hitting each other.

“Wha, what is this black liquid? Is it coffee?” (Ura)

“Oi, stupid brother. What the hell is this?” (Farga)

“Cou, could this be, the famous cooke drink?” (Musashi)

“Wao, I haven’t drunk this before either.” (Cleran)

“Is this a beverage of the land world?” (Eljiela)

“Kyauru.” (Cosmos)

It probably looks strange to people who see it for the first time.

They try it out, and.....

“““““Gohoooooooooooo!””””” (Everyone)

Of course, they spat it all out in surprise.

“Wha, what is this, it was sweet, and yet it fizzed in my mouth!” (Ura)

“.....?” (Farga)

“Tha tha tha tha, that surprised me~.” (Musashi)

“Bu, but, I wonder why, it feels.....” (Cleran)

“That was surprising. Ah~, no, Cosmos, you can’t drink any.” (Eljiela)

“Akyakyakyakya!” (Cosmos)

I haven’t had coke since my past life, and like, my throat is dried-up from arguing with Biyama.

I drink the coke in one go while being held captive by nostalgia.

Biyama drained the cup at the same time as me.

“Ku~~~~~ abu.” (Velt)

“Ka~~~~~, gebo!” (Althea)

Of course, we burped too.

“Damn it, this tastes so good it pisses me off!” (Velt)

“It’s seriously amazing, isn’t it!” (Althea)

It was reproduced so well to the point that it's annoying.
The sweetness, fizziness and the super cold state. It's perfect.

"I, I need a refill!" (Velt)

"Me too!" (Althea)

For the time being, I ordered another cup.
My comrades all looked at me as if saying, 'you want another cup after already chugging a glassful?' but I drank another cup without care.

Chapter 119: Even so, they're still parent and child

I was fully satisfied with the sweetness and the nostalgic sensation of coke. In this world, things that I took for granted weren't there, and nobody knew about those things I took for granted.

So, finding coke in this world was deeply moving.

"Tastes good, right? Kagami actually visited this place a few years ago to make a trade with the coke and the gyaru items." (Althea)

Biyama started talking with distant eyes to me once I finished drinking.

"We like, realised who we were in the middle of our negotiation, so Kagami tried to make me join his group, y'know, but I refused that and the trade 'cause I didn't get what he was on about. I'm having plenty of fun already, and I'm not troubled with money either." (Althea)

Although he mostly dealt with slave trading auctions, Kagami spread his business widely across this world.

The gyaru items and the other stuff probably would've been popular in the Humanity Continent, so it makes sense.

"He was like, totes messed up in the head. He kept bringing up his student days, and it was so cringy." (Althea)

"..... What about you? What happened to you after remembering that you were Biyama?" (Velt)

"Hm~, nothing much, I guess. I didn't really think too hard about it." (Althea)

All of us reincarnators felt something change within us, and yet, she didn't feel anything?

"Y'know, I was never really passionate about anything, school was fun and I tried my best in events, but..... I was like, so what?" (Althea)

That was unthinkable for me. I couldn't believe it. However, Biyama kept talking with a wry smile.

"My life was already cray-cray before I got my memories back. When I was

younger, my parent confessed to me that they killed my parents, my family and destroyed my country. Apparently, they picked me up out of the rubble since they felt sorry for me. But as the weight of those crimes and their love towards me grew, they said they had to tell me or something~.” (Althea)

Parent? Is she talking about one of the Four Heavenly Beast Demi-humans that destroyed the country of the dark elves?

“I didn’t get anything about the dark elves and war. Like, I only saw my real parents’ faces when I was a baby, so I don’t remember them. Rather than that, when someone you’ve always loved just suddenly starts crying and apologising, like, how do I put it? Instead of feeling resentment or hatred, I was just wondering if I was the one that made them cry. I still remember thinking that and then crying with them.” (Althea)

Her words were too strange for Ura, Musashi and me. Because like, being raised with affection by the person that killed your family is just too much.

“Back then, I thought they were sad ‘cause I did something wrong, so even though my memories hadn’t returned, I did some crappy nail art for both of us. And then, that person..... just started crying even more, and I cried with them..... but like, I think we became a true family from that.” (Althea)

No way..... is that even possible?
However, tears had welled up in Biyama’s eyes as she talked about it.

“After that, that person retired from being a mercenary and ended up making a small restaurant with me in this city, that was a small country town at the time. But as more people gathered and as I made more new products, it became a big deal, y’know. Every day has been way too busy since then, and although I got my memories back, I really didn’t care. That’s why I was like, 『yo!』when I met Kagami, and like, 『haa?』when he said he’s going to wreck the world.” (Althea)

I’m surprised.
I thought she was a cakey woman that was really shallow.
However, hearing that made me realise that she had walked an unimaginably complicated life.

“How can you be so close with the person that killed your family..... you don’t remember because you were a baby back then, but still.....” (Ura)

Ura probably had mixed feelings about it too. She hung her head down with tightly gripped fists.

However, a part of me still couldn’t believe it.

Is that really po-.....

“I’m ho~~~~~me.” (?)

Then, a strangely deep voice resounded throughout the tavern.

“Ah, hey, maman~.” (Althea) (TL Note: Maman is another way of saying mama.)

“““““Welcome back, manager!””””” (Maids)

Maman? We naturally turned around to look at the person Biyama casually waved at.

And then.....

“Oh dear, I haven’t seen you kiddies before~. Are they your friends, Althea~?”
(?)

“Yep~.” (Althea)

“Hm? Oh~, they’re cute ones, aren’t they~. There are even humans and a demon too~.” (?)

We were on the verge of fainting, because that person,

“Uoh!” (Velt)

“Hii!” (Ura)

“!” (Farga)

“Sc, sca!” (Cleran)

“Uoooh!” (Dorauemon)

“Hii!” (Musashi)

“Hogyaaaaaaaaaaaaaaa!” (Cosmos)

Was a monster who made Cosmos shriek with just their appearance.

“Oh dear, don’t be so rude. You shouldn’t shriek at a beau~tiful person like me. Well, beauty is a crime after all.” (?)

No, like..... this person..... is wearing fishnet stockings and a black leotard, both of which should be extremely sexy, but their body is gigantic, or rather, fat, I guess?

They're a skinhead that has dark skin and a huge mouth.

I can also see two small ears on their head.

"This person is from the hippopotamus race, and is my maman that raised me." (Althea)

And..... I can't help but wonder.....

"He, hey, Biyama, this person..... is a male, right?" (Velt)

"Well, Maman is a person that has both a man's heart and a woman's heart in a male's body." (Althea)

"..... So, an okama?" (Velt)

I mean like, bright red lipstick is on their huge mouth, and like, the colourful nail art on their enormous, burly hands are way too off-putting!

However, Farga and the others weren't too surprised by the fact that Biyama's maman was an okama.

Rather, the problem.....

"..... Four Heavenly Beast Demi-human, Wonder Beast Yubamensch."
(Farga)

Was that this gigantic, mysterious okama was one of the Four Heavenly Beast Demi-humans who is on par with Esamu.

"I only knew of him by name, but I didn't think he was an okama! Like, why is it a gigantic okama after that unequalled old geezer, aren't there any normal champions out there!?" (Velt)

"Lo, lord! Ple, please calm down!" (Musashi)

"That's right, Velt. I know how you feel, but don't forget what happened with Esamu when you said cheeky stuff like that." (Ura)

"I, I can't eat that, can I." (Cleran)

"Gyaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaa, that, that's so scaryyyyyyyyyyyyy!" (Doraueemon)

"So this is a prodigy of the land world! Kuh, I will definitely protect Cosmos."
(Eljiela)

"This is our first time seeing him too....." (Jubei)

“Hi, his aura is incredible.” (Ushiwaka)

“Wow, this person is the one from the legends?” (Benkei)

For the demi-humans like Jubei, he’s such an amazing being that they would go on their knees to revere him.

But in my eyes, he’s just a monster that wiggles his massive body for some reason.

“Goodness~, stop calling me by such a dangerous name. Call me maman! Yu-chan is fine too.” (Yubamensch)

But man, rather than fear, facing him like this just makes me think that I definitely don’t want to fight him.

“Hm?” (Yubamensch)

Then, Yubamensch stared at both Farga and Ura. What happened?

“Fufu~n, what are your names? Full names, please.” (Yubamensch)

Crap, did she notice something?

I bet Farga and Ura’s full names are famous in the demi-human society too. Will it be okay if they name themselves here?

However, although they had their guard up, both of them confidently answered.

“Farga Elfarshia.” (Farga)

“Ura Vesparda.” (Ura)

Biyama was making an idiotic face since she didn’t know the importance of those names, but all the demi-humans around us, including Jubei’s group and the employees, were surprised by them.

Some of those maids even dropped their plates from hearing that.

And as for Yubamensch, he smiled sweetly the moment they said their names.

“I knew it~, you two are『Fan-chan』and『Shar-chan』’s children! Your eyes and the aura around you are exactly the same!” (Yubamensch)

“What!” (Farga)

“You know my father?” (Ura)

Farga and Ura leant forward and their shoulders shook in surprise.

“Um, Velt-sama, what are they talking about?” (Eljiela)

“Oh, right. You guys don’t know, do you? I think Fan-chan is the queen of the Elfarshia Kingdom and one of the Ten Heroes of Light,『Warlord Queen Fanred Elfarshia』, and Shar-chan is probably Ura’s father, one of the Seven Great Demon Kings, Sharkryu.” (Velt)

“They might be acquaintances since they’re all representatives of their race that are famous worldwide.” (Cleran)

“O, oi, human! Did those two really come from such amazing families?” (Jubei)

Anyone would be surprised by that, but not showing surprise gave the impression that this okama really is one of the Four Heavenly Beast Demi-humans.

“Maman, who are you talking about?” (Althea)

“Ufufu, I’m talking about your maman’s old war friends. Our races were different..... but by understanding the problems we were all carrying, we became enemies that respected each other.” (Yubamensch)

Then, we suddenly realised something.

“Fan-chan was like~, the type of person you definitely wouldn’t want as an enemy. She was an extreme sadist who always wrapped the battlefields up with fear, and as for Shar-chan, he was really stubborn, had a one-track mind and a strong sense of duty. We used to hate each other to death, but in the end, we were all people that ran past the joys and sorrows of those days together. I have been especially thinking that way ever since I retired.” (Yubamensch)

We realised how pure and sparkly Yubamensch’s eyes were when she talked about the queen and about Samejima.

“Fan-chan seems to still be doing her best, but when I heard Shar-chan died five years ago, I was so sad that I started crying.” (Yubamensch)

“Five years ago? Was that why you were drinking alcohol a lot back then?” (Althea)

“Mm-hmm.” (Yubamensch)

I felt like a part of my heart had been pierced through.

Our ways of thinking and the things we’ve seen are fundamentally different. He might only be able to say that because he’s experienced an age of the world

that we can't even imagine.

I shuddered from realising that this demi-human who's happily talking about people he tried to kill before, is outrageously huge.

"..... You knew my father, huh." (Ura)

"Yes. Gosh, I didn't think I would get to meet you, his memento, though. You never know what can happen in life, I guess." (Yubamensch)

Yubamensch said that and then patted Ura's head.

Those big, big hands seemed like they could wrap her up, and they looked so kind too.

"You did well staying alive. I'm glad I could meet you." (Yubamensch)

".....! I, I..... I was just, there..... and father and everyone protected me..... and without Velt, I would have....." (Ura)

"Velt?" (Yubamensch)

Yubamensch looked at me, and I almost jumped out of shock.

Crap..... he won't cut off my arms all of a sudden, right? You never know what one of the Four Heavenly Beast Demi-humans would do, after all.

"Ahh, that boy, right. He's the one that defeated that damn cocky brat from Love and Money and saved Fan-chan's daughter, Forna-chan." (Yubamensch)

"Ye, yeah....." (Velt)

"Fufu~n. You look a bit cheeky, but you're cute. What was it again in your terminology, Althea? A tsundere?" (Yubamensch)

"Who the hell is a tsundere!? Like, what do you mean 'your terminology', it's not like you made it up!" (Velt)

"Oh dear, no need to be so rude to my daughter." (Yubamensch)

Ah, I retorted out of habit..... crap, that was dangerous, I got my arms cut off by Esamu because of that, so I seriously need to hold back.

"Ah~, maman, don't worry about him. We've known each other for a while now." (Althea)

"Oh my. Could he be the person you liked?" (Yubamensch)

"Fufu~n, well~, maybe there was a time when I did~." (Althea)

"Goodness~, come on, be clear about it~! Is Velt-chan a playboy? Trying to make a move on Fan-chan's daughter, Shar-chan's daughter and even my

daughter, you're sure going at it, boy~!" (Yubamensch)

"He hasn't made a move on me, y'know?" (Althea)

"Obviously! If he tried to do that before marrying you, I would send him flying! If anyone wants to become my precious, precious Althea's husband, they have to pass my tests first!" (Yubamensch)

Seriously, just let me off already. I don't want anything to do with your daughter..... daughter.....

"Your..... daughter, huh....." (Velt)

Before I knew it, I had been looking at these two like they were a normal parent and child.

"What's wrong, dear?" (Yubamensch)

"Noth, nothing..... like..... I just thought you guys were really close." (Velt)

"Of course we are~. We're bound together by a thick, hard and hot thing. Oh gosh, don't misunderstand, I wasn't saying anything indecent, okay?" (Yubamensch)

"No, I didn't..... like....." (Velt)

It's so strange, and yet they look so natural together. My eyes couldn't help but be taken away by them, and my interest didn't stop welling up.

"Hey, how....." (Velt)

"Hm?" (Yubamensch)

How can you guys talk to each other like that? Why did you take Biyama under your protection when you destroyed the country of the dark elves? I almost ended up asking that.

"..... Nah, it's nothing....." (Velt)

However, I decided not to ask. They're the only ones who have to understand their own relationships. I don't have the right to ask about it or say it's strange, and to be honest, it's just rude. Regardless of their pasts, it's fine as long as they both think they're a true

family.

“Biyama.” (Velt)

“Hm? Like, stop calling me Biyama. No one gets it.” (Althea)

“..... That..... saved me a lot.” (Velt)

“..... Hah?” (Althea)

“I was in a blessed environment for too long, that I was perplexed. Until now, everyone that I had reunited with, including Samejima, Miyamoto, Kagami and Ayase, had all wavered because of their past selves and their current selves. But I feel like it’s not wrong to try to live happily like you.” (Velt)

“..... Asakura.....” (Althea)

“Our reunion was so unexpected, but this was the first time I felt so happy to reunite with someone like this. I’m glad I met you.” (Velt)

I truly feel that way.

“Asakura..... are you trying to seduce me?” (Althea)

“Kuhahahahahahahahahahaha, too bad. I have a cute, cute girlfriend and a daughter too.” (Velt)

Feeling somewhat happy, I smiled from the bottom of my heart.

“Ura.” (Velt)

“Ah, ahh.” (Ura)

“Let’s write a letter to sensei, missus and Hanabi later with the purikura too.” (Velt)

“! Ye, yeah! You’re right! Let’s write one!” (Ura)